4to 940.4 B84



REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

[Cd. 7894] of Session 1914-15.

Errata.

Page 2, line 4. Delete "K.C."

" 8, " 22. Read "rifle. At 400 metres,"

" 9, lines 9 and 8 from bottom. Read "went out of the town and everything went to ruin."

" 11, line 11 from bottom. For "Meuse" read "Sambre".

" 17, " 28. For "bound" read "burnt".

" 20, " 27. For "8.15" read "9".

" 29, " 15. For "shot" read "hanged".

" 29, " 12 from bottom. For "their" read "the witness's".

" 32, " 2. For "he" read "we".

" 32, " 25. For "houses" read "house".

6 from bottom. Read "field. From our trenches after we"

2 from bottom. For "of" read "and".

APPENDIX TO THE REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE ON ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

[Cd. 7895] of Session 1914-15.

Errata.

Page 6, line 11. Read "inhabitants". " 22, " 19. For "dismissed" read "disarmed". " 35, " 7. For "They have " read "My aunt had ". 40, " 9. For "his" read "a". 5. For "Beviver" read "Berryer". ., 89, ,, 89, " 48. For "compères" read "confrères". " 98, " 6 from bottom. Delete " of ". " 99, " 27. For "in" read "we". " 106, " 32. For "at" read "near". ,, 107, lines 1, 3, 6. For "squadron" read "squad". " 108, line 27. For "one" read "he". " 112, " 38. Insert quotation mark after "son". "112, " 39. Delete quotation mark after "leg". " 126, " 17. Read "I do not know . . ." "128, " 1. For "from" at the end of the line read "to". " 182, " 9. Read "He was immediately shot at ".

,, 35, ,,

,, 35, ,,

x 30019



Presented to the

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

by the

ONTARIO LEGISLATIVE LIBRARY

1980



COMMITTEE ON ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.



REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

Presented to Parliament by Command of His Majesty.



LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C., PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN AND SONS, Ltd., 2

28, Abingdon Street, S.V.

H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottler and Bookseller), Forth Street, Cardiff; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C.

1915.

[Cd. 7894.]

Price 6d.

GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

(with the under-mentioned exceptions) can be purchased in the manner indicated on the first page of this wrapper.

Booksellers, and the accredited agents of Free Public Libraries, are entitled to a discount of 25 per cent. from published prices.

Hydrographical Publications of the Admiralty are sold by-J. D. Potter, 145, Minories, London, E.C.

Patent Office Publications are sold at—
The Patent Office, 25, Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, London, W.C.
(N.B.—Classified Abridgments of Patent Specifications are sold also by Wyman and Sons, Ltd.)

Ordnance Survey and Geological Survey Publications can be purchased from—
The Director General of the Ordnance Survey, Southampton; or
The Superintendent, Ordnance Survey, Dublin; or
Agents in most of the chief towns in the United Kingdom.
(N.B.—Small Scale Maps are, as a rule, procurable at Railway Bookstalls in England and Wales.)

The Journal of the Board of Agriculture and Fisheries is published monthly by the Board, at 4, Whitehall Place, London, S.W. Price 4d., post free.

The London Gazette is published on Tuesday and Friday evenings by Wyman and Sons, Ltd. Price 1s.

The following is a list of some recent Parliamentary and Official Publications:—

VIOLATION OF THE RIGHTS OF NATIONS AND OF THE LAWS AND CUSTOMS OF WAR IN BELGIUM.

Reports of the Official Commission of the Belgian Government.

Preface, "Pro luce et pro jure," by Monsieur J. Van Den Heuvel, Minister of State. Refers generally to: -Outrages committed by the German Soldiery; Proclamations issued by the German Commanders; Denials of the Outrages in the Appeal made to civilized nations by German Professors; the uniform character of the Atrocities proving that they were the deliberate manifestations of a policy and not the isolated acts of irresponsible creatures; the Violation, by Germany and Austria, of the Neutrality of Belgium; Requisitions, by the Germans, of Belgian property; Unjustifiable Bombardments of towns; Airship Bombardments of undefended localities; Execution of Hostages; Fines levied on towns, &c.; &c.

Names of the Commission of Enquiry.

Report of the Commission:—(1) Sack of Aerschot; Suburbs of Aerschot; Rethy.

(2) Sack of Louvain; Suburbs of Louvain and of Malines. (3) Sack of Louvain; Sack of Visa: Suburbs of Louvain; Malines, and Vilvarda. (4) Sack of Aerschot: Evidence as to

(2) Sack of Louvain; Suburbs of Louvain and of Malines. (3) Sack of Louvain; Sack of Visé; Suburbs of Louvain, Malines, and Vilvorde. (4) Sack of Aerschot; Evidence as to Damage. (5) Sack of Aerschot and Louvain; Additional Evidence. (6) German Proclamations. (7) The use of Expanding Bullets by German Troops (illustrated); Maltreatment of Prisoners and Wounded; Maltreatment of Hospital Staff and Mis-use of the Red Cross; Maltreatment of the Civil Population; Women and Children placed in front of German Columns; Bombardment of open and undefended places. (8) Pillage and Executions in Belgian Luxemburg; Arrest of Hostages; Incendiarism; Executions; Rape. (9) Sack of Termonde (illustrated):—First Bombardment, Sack, and Pillage; Arrest of Civilians, Murders, and Executions; Re-occupation of Termonde by Belgian Troops; Second Bombardment; Final Destruction. (10) Report of the London Delegacy of the Commission of Enquiry (illustrated):—Civilians driven into the Firing Line; Imprisonment of Civilian Hostages; Massacres. (11) Incidents at Namur; Massacre at Tamines; Pillage and Massacre at Andenne; Sack of Dinant (illustrated); Massacres at Hastières and Surice. (12) General conclusions, with reply to German accusations. Appendix:—Instructions to Belgian Authorities issued on 4th August 1914, and advice to Civilians. Extracts from the Pastoral Letter of His Eminence Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, Primate of Belgium. Price 6d., post free 8½d.

PROTEST BY THE BELGIAN GOVERNMENT

against the German allegation that Belgium] had forfeited her Neutrality before the Outbreak of War. Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$.

BELGIAN REFUGEES.

Questions arising in connection with the Reception and Employment of the Belgian Refugees in this Country.

FIRST REPORT of the Departmental Committee appointed by the President of the Local

[Cd. 7750] of Session 1914-15. Price $6\frac{1}{2}d$., post free $8\frac{1}{2}d$.

MINUTES OF EVIDENCE taken before the Committee.

[Cd. 7779] of Session 1914-15. Price 1s. 10d., post free 2s. 2d.

COMMISSIONS AND COMMITTEES ON QUESTIONS ARISING OUT OF THE WAR.

List of certain Commissions and Committees set up to deal with Public Questions arising out of the War. [Cd. 7855] of Session 1914–15. Price ½d., post free 1d.



REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

g.h.

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

Presented to Parliament by Command of His Majesty.





LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C., PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN AND SONS, Ltd., 29, Breams Buildings, Fetter Lane, E.C., and 28, Abingdon Street, S.W., and 54, St. Mary Street, Cardiff; or H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottish Branch), 23, Forth Street, Edinburgh; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C.

1915.

Price 6d.

[Cd. 7894.]





D 626 9347

TABLE OF CONTENTS.

WARRANT OF APPOINTMENT		PAGE 2
Introductory Observations		3
PART I.—CONDUCT OF GERMAN TROOPS IN BELGIUM	2 -	. 7
Liège and District		7
VALLEYS OF THE MEUSE AND SAMBRE		. 10
THE AERSCHOT, MALINES, VILVORDE AND LOUVAIN QUADRANGLE -		. 13
Louvain	-	. 19
Termonde	Property of	- 23
ALOST		- 23
	CTS OF	
INHUMANITY IN INVADED TERRITORIES -	Lun n	- 28
1. TREATMENT OF THE CIVIL POPULATION	Maria I	- 29
(a) Killing of Non-Combatants	ni ni n	- 29 - 30
(c) THE USE OF CIVILIANS AS SCREENS	1-11-11-61	- 33
(d) THE LOOTING, BURNING, AND DESTRUCTION OF PROPERTY -	-	- 34
2. Offences against Combatants	-	- 35
(a) KILLING THE WOUNDED OR PRISONERS	-	- 35
(b) Firing on Hospitals	Interval	- 36
(c) Abuse of Red Cross and White Flag	3	- 37
CONCLUSIONS	St. Inne	- 37

WARRANT OF APPOINTMENT.

I hereby appoint—

THE RIGHT HON. VISCOUNT BRYCE, O.M.;

THE RIGHT HON. SIR FREDERICK POLLOCK, Bt., K.C.;

THE RIGHT HON. SIR EDWARD CLARKE, K.C.:

SIR ALFRED HOPKINSON, K.C.

Mr. H. A. L. FISHER, Vice-Chancellor of the University of Sheffield, and Mr. HAROLD COX;

to be a Committee to consider and advise on the evidence collected on behalf of His Majesty's Government as to outrages alleged to have been committed by German troops during the present War, cases of alleged maltreatment of civilians in the invaded territories, and breaches of the laws and established usages of war; and to prepare a report for His Majesty's Government showing the conclusion at which they arrive on the evidence now available.

And I appoint Viscount Bryce to be Chairman, and Mr. E. Grimwood Mears and Mr. W. J. H. Brodrick, barristers-at-law, to be Joint Secretaries to the Committee.

(Signed) H. H. Asquith.

15th December 1914.

SIR KENELM E. DIGBY, K.C., G.C.B., was appointed an additional member of the Committee on 22nd January 1915.



To the Right Honourable H. H. Asquith, &c., &c., First Lord of H.M. Treasury.

The Committee have the honour to present and transmit to you a report upon the evidence which has been submitted to them regarding outrages alleged to have been committed by the German troops in the present war.

By the terms of their appointment the Committee were directed "to consider and advise on the evidence collected on behalf of His Majesty's Government, as to outrages alleged to have been committed by German troops during the present war, cases of alleged maltreatment of civilians in the invaded territories, and breaches of the laws and established usages of war; and to prepare a report for His Majesty's Government showing the conclusion at which they arrive on the evidence now available."

It may be convenient that before proceeding to state how we have dealt with the materials, and what are the conclusions we have reached, we should set out the manner in which the evidence came into being, and its nature.

In the month of September 1914 a Minute was, at the instance of the Prime Minister, drawn up and signed by the Home Secretary and the Attorney-General. It stated the need that had arisen for investigating the accusations of inhumanity and outrage that had been brought against the German soldiers and indicated the precautions to be taken in collecting evidence that would be needed to ensure its accuracy. Pursuant to this Minute steps were taken under the direction of the Home Office to collect evidence, and a great many persons who could give it were seen and examined.

For some three or four months before the appointment of the Committee, the Home Office had been collecting a large body of evidence.* More than 1,200 depositions made by these witnesses have been submitted to and considered by the Committee. Nearly all of these were obtained under the supervision of Sir Charles Mathews, the Director of Public Prosecutions, and of Mr. E. Grimwood Mears, barrister of the Inner Temple, whilst in addition Professor J. H. Morgan has collected a number of statements mainly from British soldiers, which have also been submitted to the Committee.

The labour involved in securing, in a comparatively short time, so large a number of statements from witnesses scattered all over the United Kingdom, made it necessary to employ a good many examiners. The depositions were in all cases taken down in this country by gentlemen of legal knowledge and experience, though, of course, they had no authority to administer an oath. They were instructed not to "lead" the witnesses, or make any suggestions to them, and also to impress upon them the necessity for care and precision in giving their evidence.

They were also directed to treat the evidence critically, and as far as possible satisfy themselves, by putting questions which arose out of the evidence, that the witnesses were speaking the truth. They were, in fact, to cross-examine them, so far as the testimony given provided materials for cross-examination.

We have seen and conversed with many of these gentlemen, and have been greatly impressed by their ability and by what we have gathered as to the fairness of spirit which they brought to their task. We feel certain that the instructions given have been scrupulously observed.

In many cases those who took the evidence have added their comments upon the intelligence and demeanour of the witnesses, stating the impression which each witness made and indicating any cases in which the story told appeared to them open to doubt or suspicion. In coming to a conclusion upon the evidence the Committee have been greatly assisted by these expressions of opinion, and have uniformly rejected every deposition on which an opinion adverse to the witness has been recorded.

This seems to be a fitting place at which to put on record the invaluable help which we have received from our Secretaries, Mr. E. Grimwood Mears and Mr. W. J. H. Brodrick, whose careful diligence and minute knowledge of the evidence have

^{*} Taken from Belgian witnesses, some soldiers, but most of them civilians from those towns and villages through which the German army passed, and from British officers and soldiers.

been of the utmost service. Without their skill, judgment and untiring industry the labour of examining and appraising each part of so large a mass of testimony would have occupied us for six months instead of three.

The marginal references in this Report indicate the particular deposition or

depositions on which the statements made in the text are based.

The depositions printed in the Appendix themselves show that the stories were tested in detail, and in none of these have we been able to detect the trace of any desire to "make a case" against the German army. Care was taken to impress upon the witness that the giving of evidence was a grave and serious matter, and every deposition submitted to us was signed by the witness in the presence of the examiner.

A noteworthy feature of many of the depositions is that though taken at different places and on different dates and by different lawyers from different witnesses, they

often corroborate each other in a striking manner.

The evidence is all couched in the very words which the witnesses used, and where they spoke, as the Belgian witnesses did, in Flemish or French, pains were taken to have competent translators, and to make certain that the translation was exact.

Seldom did these Belgian witnesses show a desire to describe what they had seen or suffered. The lawyers who took the depositions were surprised to find how little vindictiveness, or indeed passion, they showed, and how generally free from emotional excitement their narratives were. Many hesitated to speak lest what they said, if it should ever be published, might involve their friends or relatives at home in danger, and it was found necessary to give an absolute promise that names should not be disclosed.

For this reason names have been omitted.

A large number of depositions, and extracts from depositions, will be found in

Appendix A., and to these your attention is directed.

In all cases these are given as nearly as possible (for abbreviation was sometimes inevitable) in the exact words of the witness, and wherever a statement has been made by a witness tending to exculpate the German troops, it has been given in full. Excisions have been made only where it has been felt necessary to conceal the identity of the deponent or to omit what are merely hearsay statements, or are palpably irrelevant. In every case the name and description of the witnesses are given in the original depositions and in copies which have been furnished to us by H.M. Government. The originals remain in the custody of the Home Department, where they will be available in case of need, for reference after the conclusion of the War.

The Committee have also had before them a number of diaries taken from the German dead.

It appears to be the custom in the German army for soldiers to be encouraged to keep diaries and to record in them the chief events of each day. A good many of these diaries were collected on the field when British troops were advancing over ground which had been held by the enemy, were sent to Head Quarters in France, and despatched thence to the War Office in England. They passed into the possession of the Prisoners of War Information Bureau, and were handed by it to our secretaries. They have been translated with great care. We have inspected them and are absolutely satisfied of their authenticity. They have thrown important light upon the methods followed in the conduct of the war. In one respect, indeed, they are the most weighty part of the evidence, because they proceed from a hostile source and are not open to any such criticism on the ground of bias as might be applied to Belgian testimony. From time to time references to these diaries will be found in the text of the Report. In Appendix B. they are set out at greater length both in the German original and in an English translation, together with a few photographs of the more important entries.

In Appendix C. are set out a number of German proclamations. Most of these are included in the Belgian report No. VI. which has been furnished to us. Actual specimens of original proclamations, issued by or at the bidding of the German military authorities, and posted in the Belgian and French towns mentioned, have been

produced to us, and copies thereof are to be found in this Appendix.

Appendix D. contains the rules of the Hague Convention dealing with the conduct of War on Land as adopted in 1907, Germany being one of the signatory powers.

In Appendix E. will be found a selection of statements collected in France by Professor Morgan.

These five appendices are contained in a separate volume.

In dealing with the evidence we have recognised the importance of testing it severely, and so far as the conditions permit we have followed the principles which are recognised in the Courts of England, the British Overseas Dominions, and the United States. We have also (as already noted) set aside the testimony of any witnesses who did not favourably impress the lawyers who took their depositions, and have rejected hearsay evidence except in cases where hearsay furnished an undesigned confirmation of facts with regard to which we already possessed direct testimony from some other source, or explained in a natural way facts imperfectly narrated or otherwise

perplexing.**

It is natural to ask whether much of the evidence given, especially by the Belgian witnesses, may not be due to excitement and overstrained emotions, and whether, apart from deliberate falsehood, persons who mean to speak the truth may not in a more or less hysterical condition have been imagining themselves to have seen the things which they say that they saw. Both the lawyers who took the depositions and we when we came to examine them fully recognized this possibility. The lawyers, as already observed, took pains to test each witness and either rejected, or appended a note of distrust to, the testimony of those who failed to impress them favourably. We have carried the sifting still further by also omitting from the depositions those in which we found something that seemed too exceptional to be accepted on the faith of one witness only, or too little supported by other evidence pointing to like facts. Many depositions have thus been omitted on which, though they are probably true, we think it safer not to place reliance.

Notwithstanding these precautions, we began the inquiry with doubts whether a positive result would be attained. But the further we went and the more evidence we examined so much the more was our scepticism reduced. There might be some exaggeration in one witness, possible delusion in another, inaccuracies in a third. When, however, we found that things which had at first seemed improbable were testified to by many witnesses coming from different places, having had no communication with one another, and knowing nothing of one another's statements, the points in which they all agreed became more and more evidently true. And when this concurrence of testimony, this convergence upon what were substantially the same broad facts, showed itself in hundreds of depositions, the truth of those broad facts stood out beyond question. The force of the evidence is cumulative. Its worth can be estimated only by perusing the testimony as a whole. If any further confirmation had been needed, we found it in the diaries in which German officers and private soldiers have recorded incidents just such as those to which the Belgian witnesses depose.

The experienced lawyers who took the depositions tell us that they passed from the same stage of doubt into the same stage of conviction. They also began their work in a sceptical spirit, expecting to find much of the evidence coloured by passion, or prompted by an excited fancy. But they were impressed by the general moderation and matter of fact level-headedness of the witnesses. We have interrogated them, particularly regarding some of the most startling and shocking incidents which appear in the evidence laid before us, and where they expressed a doubt we have excluded the evidence, admitting it as regards the cases in which they stated that the witnesses seemed to them to be speaking the truth, and that they themselves believed the incidents referred to have happened. It is for this reason that we have inserted among the depositions printed in the Appendix several cases

which we might otherwise have deemed scarcely credible.

The Committee has conducted its investigations and come to its conclusions independently of the reports issued by the French and Belgian Commissions, but it has no reason to doubt that those conclusions are in substantial accord with the conclusions that have been reached by these two Commissions.

ARRANGEMENT OF THE REPORT.

As respects the frame-work and arrangement of the report, it has been deemed desirable to present first of all what may be called a general historical account of the

^{*} For instance, the dead body of a man is found lying on the doorstep, or a woman is seen who has the appearance of having been outraged. So far the facts are proved by the direct evidence of the person by whom they have been seen. Information is sought for by him as to the circumstances under which the death or outrage took place. The bystanders who saw the circumstances, but who are not now accessible, relate what they saw, and this is reported by the witness to the examiner and is placed on record in the depositions. We have had no hesitation in taking such evidence into consideration.

events which happened, and the conditions which prevailed in the parts of Belgium which lay along the line of the German march, and thereafter to set forth the evidence which bears upon particular classes of offences against the usages of civilised warfare, evidence which shows to what extent the provisions of the Hague Convention have been disregarded.

This method, no doubt, involves a certain amount of over-lapping, for some of the offences belonging to the later part of the Report will have been already referred to in the earlier part which deals with the invasion of Belgium. But the importance of presenting a connected narrative of events seems to outweigh the disadvantage of

occasional repetition.

The Report will therefore be found to consist of two parts, viz.:—

(1) An analysis and summary of the evidence regarding the conduct of the German troops in Belgium towards the civilian population of that country

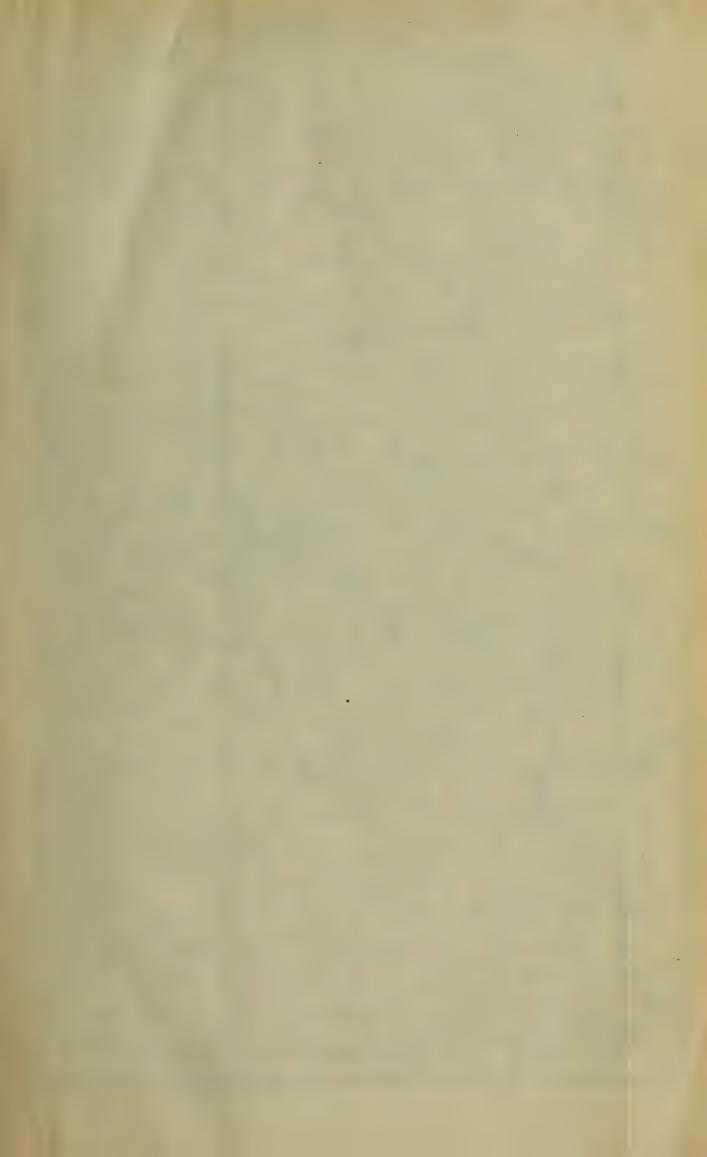
during the first few weeks of the invasion.

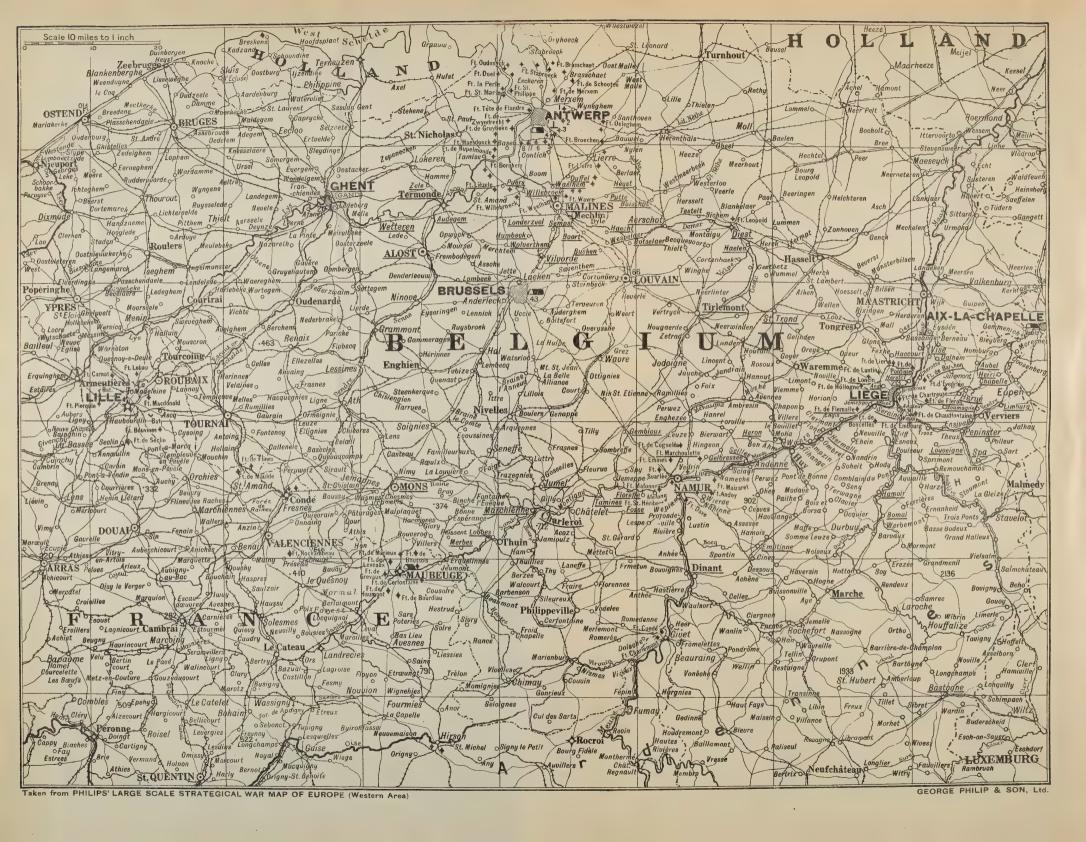
(2) An examination of the evidence relating to breaches of the rules and usages of war and acts of inhumanity committed by German soldiers or groups of soldiers, during the first four months of the war, whether in Belgium or in France.

This second part has again been sub-divided into two sections:—

a. Offences committed against non-combatant civilians during the conduct of the war generally.

b. Offences committed against combatants whether in Belgium or in France.





PART I.

THE CONDUCT OF THE GERMAN TROOPS IN BELGIUM.1

Although the neutrality of Belgium had been guaranteed by a treaty signed in 1839 to which France, Prussia and Great Britain were parties, and although, apart altogether from any duties imposed by treaty, no belligerent nation has any right to claim a passage for its army across the territory of a neutral state, the position which Belgium held between the German Empire and France had obliged her to consider the possibility that in the event of a war between these two Powers her neutrality might not be respected. In 1911 the Belgian Minister at Berlin had requested an assurance from Germany that she would observe the Treaty of 1839; and the Chancellor of the Empire had declared that Germany had no intention of violating Belgian neutrality. Again in 1913 the German Secretary of State at a meeting of a Budget Committee of the Reichstag had declared that "Belgian neutrality is provided for by international conventions and Germany is determined to respect those conventions." Finally, on July 31, 1914, when the danger of war between Germany and France seemed imminent, Herr von Below, the German Minister in Brussels, being interrogated by the Belgian Foreign Department, replied that he knew of the assurances given by the German Chancellor in 1911 and that he "was certain that the sentiments expressed at that time had not changed." Nevertheless on August 2 the same Minister presented a note to the Belgian Government demanding a passage through Belgium for the German army on pain of an instant declaration of war. Startled as they were by the suddenness with which this terrific war cloud had risen on the eastern horizon, the leaders of the nation rallied round the King in his resolution to refuse the demand and to prepare for resistance. They were aware of the danger which would confront the civilian population of the country if it were tempted to take part in the work of national defence. Orders were accordingly issued by the civil governors of provinces, and by the burgomasters of towns, that the civilian inhabitants were to take no part in hostilities and to offer no provocation to the invaders. That no excuse might be furnished for severities, the populations of many important towns were instructed to surrender all fire-arms into the hands of the local officials.²

This happened on August 2. On the evening of August 3 the German troops crossed the frontier. The storm burst so suddenly that neither party had time to adjust its mind to the situation. The Germans seem to have expected an easy passage. The Belgian population, never dreaming of an attack, were startled and stupefied.

LIÈGE AND DISTRICT.

On August 4th the roads converging upon Liège from north-east, east, and south were covered with German Death's Head Hussars and Uhlans pressing forward to seize the passage over the Meuse. From the very beginning of the operations the civilian population of the villages lying upon the line of the German advance were made to experience the extreme horrors of war. "On the 4th of "August," says one witness, "at Herve" (a village not far from the frontier), "I saw at about 2 o'clock in the afternoon, near the station, five Uhlans; these "were the first German troops I had seen. They were followed by a German officer and some soldiers in a motor car. The men in the car called out " to a couple of young fellows who were standing about 30 yards away. The young " men, being afraid, ran off and then the Germans fired and killed one of them named " The murder of this innocent fugitive civilian was a prelude to the burning and pillage of Herve and of other villages in the neighbourhood, to the indiscriminate shooting of civilians of both sexes, and to the organised military execution of batches of selected males. Thus at Herve some 50 men escaping from the burning houses were seized, taken outside the town and shot. At Melen, a hamlet west of Herve, 40 men were shot. In one household alone the father and mother

x 28739

a 2.3

¹ A general map of Belgium will be found facing this page.

² Copies of typical proclamations have been printed in L'Allemagne et la Belgique, Documents

³ The references are to the Appendices to be found in Vol. II. of the Report. Those to which a letter is prefixed, as in the present case, relate to the Appendix of Depositions (A) which is subdivided into sections, each of which is so distinguished.

(names given) were shot, the daughter died after being repeatedly outraged, and the son was wounded. Nor were children exempt. "About August 4," says one witness, "near Vottem, we were pursuing some Uhlans. I saw a man, woman, and a girl about nine, who had been killed. They were on the threshold of a house, one on the " top of the other, as if they had been shot down, one after the other, as they tried to

The burning of the villages in this neighbourhood and the wholesale slaughter of

" escape."

civilians, such as occurred at Herve, Micheroux, and Soumagne, appear to be connected with the exasperation caused by the resistance of Fort Fléron, whose guns barred the main road from Aix la Chapelle to Liège. Enraged by the losses which they had sustained, suspicious of the temper of the civilian population, and probably thinking that by exceptional severities at the outset they could cow the spirit of the Belgian nation, the German officers and men speedily accustomed themselves to the slaughter of civilians. How rapidly the process was effected is illustrated by an entry in the diary of Kurt Hoffman, a one year's man in the 1st Jägers, who on Appendix B. August 5th was in front of Fort Fléron. He illustrates his story by a sketch map. "The position," he says, "was dangerous. As suspicious civilians were hanging "about—houses 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 were cleared, the owners arrested (and shot the following " day). Suddenly village A was fired at. Out of it bursts our baggage train, and " the 4th Company of the 27th Regiment who had lost their way and been shelled by "our own artillery. From the point D.P. (shown in diary) I shoot a civilian with " rifle at 400 metres slap through the head, as we afterwards ascertained." Within a few hours, Hoffman, whilst in house 3, was himself under fire from his own comrades and narrowly escaped being killed. A German, ignorant that house 3 had been occupied, reported, as was the fact, that he had been fired upon from that house. He had been challenged by the field patrol and failed to give the countersign. Hoffman continues: "Ten minutes later people approach who are talking excitedly-apparently "Germans. I call out 'Halt, who's there?' Suddenly rapid fire is opened upon us, "which I can only escape by quickly jumping on one side--with bullets and " fragments of wall and pieces of glass flying round me. I call out 'Halt, here Field "Patrol.' Then it stops, and there appears Lieutenant Römer with three platoons. "A man has reported that he had been shot at out of our house; no wonder, if he does not give the countersign." The entry, though dated August the 5th, was evidently written on the 6th or later, because the writer refers to the suspicious civilians as having been shot on that day. Hoffman does not indicate of what offence these civilians were guilty, and there is no positive evidence to connect their slaughter with the report made by the German who had been fired on by his comrades. They were "suspicious" and that was enough. The systematic execution of civilians, which in some cases, as the diary just cited

> shows, was founded on a genuine mistake, was given a wide extension through the province of Liège. In Soumagne and Micheroux very many civilians were summarily shot. In a field belonging to a man named E . . . 56 or 57 were put to death. A German officer said: "You have shot at us." One of the villagers asked to be allowed to speak, and said: "If you think these people fired, kill me, but let them go." The answer was three volleys. The survivors were bayonetted. Their corpses were seen in the field that night by another witness. One at least had been mutilated.

were not the only victims in Soumagne. The eye-witness of the massacre saw on his way home 20 bodies, one that of a young girl of thirteen. Another witness saw 19

corpses in a meadow.

At Blegny Trembleur on the 6th some civilians were captured by German soldiers, a 7. who took steps to put them to death forthwith, but were restrained by the arrival of an officer. The prisoners subsequently were taken off to Battice and five were shot in a field. No reason was assigned for their murder.

In the meantime house-burners were at work. On the 6th Battice was destroyed part. From the 8th to the 10th over 300 houses were burnt at Herve, while mounted men shot into doors and windows to prevent the escape of the inhabitants.

At Heure le Romain on or about the 15th of August all the male inhabitants, including some bed-ridden old men were imprisoned in the church. The burgomaster's brother and the priest were bayonetted.

On or about the 14th and 15th the village of Visé was completely destroyed. Officers directed the incendiaries who worked methodically with benzine. Antiques and china were removed from the houses before their destruction by officers who guarded the plunder, revolver in hand. The house of a witness which contained valuables of this kind was protected for a time by a notice posted on the door by

a 3.

a 9.

a 5.

a 9.

a 2.

a 17.

a 16.

officers. This notice has been produced to the Committee. After the removal of the valuables this house also was burnt.

German soldiers had arrived on the 15th at Blegny Trembleur and seized a quantity of wine. On the 16th prisoners were taken; four including the priest and the burgomaster were shot. On the same day 200 (so called) hostages were seized at Flémalle and marched off. There they were told that unless Fort Flémalle surrendered by

noon they would be shot. It did surrender and they were released.

Entries in a German diary show that on the 19th the German soldiers gave them- Appendix B. selves up to debauchery in the streets of Liège, and on the night of the 20th (Thursday) a massacre took place in the streets, beginning near the Café Carpentier, at which there is said to have been a dinner attended by Russian and other students. A proclamation issued by General Kolewe on the following day gave the German version of the affair which was that his troops had been fired on by Russian students. The diary states that in the night the inhabitants of Liège became mutinous and that 50 persons were shot. The Belgian witnesses vehemently deny that there had been any provocation given, some stating that many German soldiers were drunk, others giving evidence which indicates that the affair was planned beforehand. It is stated that at 5 o'clock in the evening, long before the shooting, a citizen was warned by a friendly German soldier not to go out that night.

Though the cause of the massacre is in dispute, the results are known with certainty. The rue des Pitteurs and houses in the Place de l'Université and the Quai des Pêcheurs were systematically fired with benzine, and many inhabitants were burnt alive in their houses, their efforts to escape being prevented by rifle fire. Twenty people were shot, while trying to escape, before the eyes of one of the witnesses. The Liège Fire Brigade turned out but was not allowed to extinguish a 28 to a 31. the fire. Its carts, however, were usefully employed in removing heaps of civilian corpses to the Town Hall. The fire burnt on through the night and the murders continued on the following day, the 21st. Thirty-two civilians were killed on that day in the Place de l'Université alone, and a witness states that this was followed

by the rape in open day of 15 or 20 women on tables in the square itself.

No depositions are before us which deal with events in the city of Liège after this

Outrages, however, continued in various places in the province.

For example, on or about the 21st of August, at Pepinster, two witnesses were seized a 33, a 34. as hostages and were threatened, together with five others, that unless they could discover a civilian who was alleged to have shot a soldier in the leg, they would be shot themselves. They escaped their fate because one of the hostages convinced the officer that the alleged shooting, if it took place at all, took place in the Commune of Cornesse and not that of Pepinster, whereupon the Burgomaster of Cornesse who was old and very deaf was shot forthwith.

The outrages on the civilian population were not confined to the villages mentioned above, but appear to have been general throughout this district from the very out-

break of the war.

" 15th August 1914 at 11.50 in the forenoon, and then we went steadily along the " main road till we got into Belgium. Hardly were we there when we had a horrible " sight. Houses were burnt down, the inhabitants chased away and some of them "shot. Not one of the hundreds of houses were spared. Everything was plundered and burnt. Hardly had we passed through this large village before the next "village was burnt, and so it went on continuously. "On the 16th August 1914 the " large village of Barchon was burnt down. On the same day we crossed the bridge over the Meuse at 11.50 in the morning. We then arrived at the town of Wandre. " Here the houses were spared, but everything was examined. At last we were out " of the town and everything went in rung In one house a whole collection of to " weapons was found. The inhabitants without exception were brought out and " shot. This shooting was heart-breaking as they all knelt down and prayed, but "that was no ground for mercy. A few shots rang out and they fell back into the green grass and slept for ever." ["Die Einwohner wurden samt und sonders " herausgeholt und erschossen: aber dieses Erschiessen war direkt herzzerreisend wie " sie alle knieten und beteten, aber dies half kein Erbarmen. Ein paar Schüsse

" krachten und die fielen rücklings in das grüne Gras und verschliefen für immer."]

a 20.

a 21.

Van der Schoot.

a 24.

a 25.

a 28.

a 24, a 26, a 28.

An entry in one of the diaries says: "We crossed the Belgian frontier on Appendix B. Eitel

Anders.

VALLEYS OF MEUSE AND SAMBRE.

While the First Army, under the command of General Alexander von Kluck, was mastering the passages of the Meuse between Visé and Namur, and carrying out the scheme of devastation which has already been described, detachments of the Second German Army, under General von Bülow, were proceeding up the Meuse valley towards Namur. On Wednesday, August the 12th, the town of Huy, which stands half-way between Namur and Liège, was seized. On August 20 German guns opened fire on Namur itself. Three days later the city was evacuated by its defenders and the Germans proceeded along the valley of the Sambre through Tamines and Charleroi to Mons. Meanwhile a force under General von Hausen, had advanced upon Dinant by Laroche, Marche and Achène, and on August 15th made an unsuccessful assault upon that town. A few days later the attack was renewed and with success, and, Dinant captured, Von Hausen's army streamed into France by Bouvines and Rethel, firing and looting the villages and shooting the inhabitants as they passed through.

The evidence with regard to the Province of Namur is less voluminous than that relating to the north of Belgium. This is largely due to the fact that the testimony of soldiers is seldom available, as the towns and villages, once occupied by the Germans were seldom re-occupied by the opposing troops, and the number of refugees

who have reached England from the Namur district is comparatively small.

ANDENNE.

Andenne is a small town on the Meuse between Liège and Namur, lying opposite the village of Seilles (with which it is connected by a bridge over the river) and was one of the earlier places reached on the German advance up the Meuse. In order to understand the story of the massacre which occurred there on Thursday, August 20th, the following facts should be borne in mind: The German advance was hotly contested by Belgian and French troops. From daybreak onwards on the 19th August, the 8th Belgian Regiment of the Line were fighting with the German troops on the left bank of the Meuse on the heights of Seilles. At 8 a.m. on the 19th the Belgians found further resistance impossible in the district and retired under shelter of the forts of Namur. As they retired they blew up Andenne bridge. The first Germans arrived in Andenne at about 10 a.m., when 10 or 12 Uhlans rode into the town. They went to the bridge and found it was destroyed. They then retired, but returned about half an hour afterwards. Soon after that several thousand Germans entered the town and made arrangements to spend the night there. Thus, on the evening of the 19th August a large body of German troops were in possession of the town, which they had entered without any resistance on the part of the allied armies or of the civilian population.

About 4.30 on the next afternoon shots were fired from the left bank of the Meuse and replied to by the Germans in Andenne. The village of Andenne had been isolated from the district on the left bank of the Meuse by the destruction of the bridge, and there is nothing to suggest that the firing on the left came from the inhabitants of Andenne. Almost immediately, however, the slaughter of these inhabitants began, and continued for over two hours and intermittently during the night. Machine guns were brought into play. The German troops were said to be for the most part drunk, and they certainly murdered and ravaged unchecked. A reference to the German diaries in the Appendix will give some idea of the extent to which the army gave itself up to drink through the month of August.

When the fire slackened about 7 o'clock, many of the townspeople fled in the direction of the quarries; others remained in their houses. At this moment the whole of the district round the station was on fire and houses were flaming over a distance of 2 kilometres in the direction of the hamlet of Tramaka. The little farms which rise one above the other on the high ground of the right bank were also burning.

At 6 o'clock on the following morning, the 21st, the Germans began to drag the inhabitants from their houses. Men, women, and children were driven into the square where the sexes were separated. Three men were then shot, and a fourth was bayonetted. A German colonel was present whose intention in the first place appeared to be to shoot all the men. A young German girl who had been staying in the neighbourhood interceded with him, and after some parleying, some of the

b 2.

b 1.

h 2.

. 4: 1 . 1 , 1 prisoners were picked out, taken to the banks of the Meuse and there shot. The colonel accused the population of firing on the soldiers, but there is no reason to think that any of them had done so, and no inquiry appears to have been made.

About 400 people lost their lives in this massacre, some on the banks of the Meuse, where they were shot according to orders given, and some in the cellars of the houses where they had taken refuge. Eight men belonging to one family were murdered. Another man was placed close to a machine gun which was fired through him. His wife brought his body home on a wheel-barrow. The Germans broke into her house and ransacked it, and piled up all the eatables in a heap on the floor and relieved themselves upon it.

A hair-dresser was murdered in his kitchen where he was sitting with a child on each knee. A paralytic was murdered in his garden. After this came the general sack of the town. Many of the inhabitants who escaped the massacre were kept as prisoners and compelled to clear the houses of corpses and bury them in trenches. These prisoners were subsequently used as a shelter and protection for a pontoon bridge which the Germans had built across the river and were so used to prevent the

Belgian forts from firing upon it.

A few days later the Germans celebrated a Fête Nocturne in the square. Hot wine, looted in the town, was drunk, and the women were compelled to give three cheers for the Kaiser and to sing "Deutschland über Alles."

NAMUR DISTRICT.

The fight round Namur was accompanied by sporadic outrages. Near Marchovelette wounded men were murdered in a farm by German soldiers. The farm was set on fire. A German cavalry man rode away holding in front of him one of the farmer's

daughters crying and dishevelled.

At Temploux on the 23rd August a professor of modern languages at the College of Namur was shot at his front door by a German officer. Before he died he asked the officer the reason for this brutality, and the officer replied that he had lost his temper because some civilians had fired upon the Germans as they entered the village. This allegation was not proved. The Belgian army was still operating in the district, and it may well be that it was from them that the shots in question proceeded. After the murder the house was burnt.

On the 24th and 25th of August massacres were carried out at Surice in which many persons belonging to the professional classes as well as others were killed.

Namur was entered on the 24th August. The troops signalised their entry by firing on a crowd of 150 unarmed unresisting civilians, ten alone of whom escaped.

A witness of good standing who was in Namur describes how the town was set on fire systematically in six different places. As the inhabitants fled from the burning houses they were shot by the German troops. Not less than 140 houses

On the 25th the hospital at Namur was set on fire with inflammable pastilles, the

pretext being that soldiers in the hospital had fired upon the Germans.

At Denée on the 28th of August, a Belgian soldier who had been taken prisoner, saw three civilian fellow prisoners shot. One was a cripple and another an old man of eighty who was paralysed. It was alleged by two German soldiers that these men had shot at them with rifles. Neither of them had rifles, nor had they anything in their pockets. The witness actually saw the Germans search them and nothing was found.

CHARLEROI DISTRICT.

In Tamines, a large village on the Meuse between Namur and Charlerci, the advance guard of the German army appeared in the first fortnight in August, and in this as well as in other villages in the district, it is proved that a large number of civilians, among them aged people, women and children were deliberately killed by the soldiers. One witness describes how she saw a Belgian boy of fifteen shot on the village green at Tamines, and a day or two later on the same green a little girl and her two brothers (name given) who were looking at the German soldiers, were killed before her eyes for no apparent reason.

The principal massacre at Tamines took place about August the 23rd. A witness describes how he saw the public square littered with corpses and after a search found

those of his wife and child a little girl of seven.

b 7.

b 10.

b 11.

b₁8.

b 12.

b 13.

h 14.

b 15.

Another witness, who lived near Tamines, went there on August 27th, and says: b 20. "It is absolutely destroyed and a mass of ruins."

At Morlanwelz about this time, the British army, together with some French b 16. cavalry, were compelled to retire before the German troops. The latter took the burgomaster and his man-servant prisoner and shot them both in front of the Hôtel de Ville at Péronne (Belgium), where the bodies were left in the street for 48 hours. They burnt the Hotel de Ville and 62 houses. The usual accusation of firing by civilians was made. It is strenuously denied by the witness, who declares that three or four days before the arrival of the Germans, circulars had been distributed to every house and placards had been posted in the town ordering the deposit of all firearms at the Hôtel de Ville and that this order had been complied with.

At Monceau-sur-Sambre on the 21st August, a young man of eighteen was shot in his garden. His father and brother were seized in their house and shot in the courtyard of a neighbouring country house. The son was shot first. The father was compelled to stand close to the feet of his son's corpse and to fix his eyes upon him while he himself was shot. The corpse of the young man shot in the garden was carried into the house and put on a bed. The next morning the Germans asked where the corpse was. When they found it was in the house, they fetched straw, packed it round the bed on which the corpse was lying and set fire to it and burnt the house down. A great many houses were burnt in Monceau.

A vivid picture of the events at Montigny-sur-Sambre has been given by a witness of high standing who had exceptional opportunities of observation. In the early morning of Saturday, August 22nd, Uhlans reached Montigny. The French army was about 4 kilometres away, but on a hill near the village were a detachment of French about 150 to 200 strong lying in ambush. At about 1.30 the main body of the German army began to arrive. Marching with them were two groups of so-called hostages, (If these, 300) were surrounded with a rope held by the front, rear, about 400 in all. Of these, 300 were surrounded with a rope held by the front, rear, and outside men. The French troops in ambush opened fire, and immediately the Germans commenced to destroy the town. Incendiaries with a distinctive badge on their arm went down the main street throwing handfuls of inflammatory and explosive pastilles into the houses. These pastilles were carried by them in bags, and in this way about 130 houses were destroyed in the main street. By 10.30 p.m. some 200 more hostages had been collected. These were drawn from Montigny itself, and on that night about 50 men, women, and children were placed on the bridge over the Sambre and kept there all night. The bridge was similarly guarded for a day or two, apparently either from a fear that it was mined or in the belief that these men, women, and children would afford some protection to the Germans in the event of the French attempting to storm the bridge. At one period of the German occupation of Montigny, eight nuns of the Order of Ste. Marie were captives on the bridge. House burning was accompanied by murder, and on the Monday morning 27 civilians from one parish alone were seen lying dead in the hospital.

Other outrages committed at Jumet, Bouflioulx, Charleroi, Marchiennes-au-Pont, Couillet, and Maubeuge are described in the depositions given in the Appendix.

DINANT.

A clear statement of the outrages at Dinant, which many travellers will recall as a singularly picturesque town on the Meuse, is given by one witness, who says that the Germans began burning houses in the Rue St. Jacques on the 21st August, and that every house in the street was burnt. On the following day an engagement took place between the French and the Germans, and the witness spent the whole day in the cellar of a bank with his wife and children. On the morning of the 23rd, about 5 o'clock, firing ceased, and almost immediately afterwards a party of Germans came to the house. They rang the bell and began to batter at the door and The witness's wife went to the door and two or three Germans came in. The family were ordered out into the street. There they found another family, and the two families were driven with their hands above their heads along the Rue Grande. All the houses in the street were burning. The party was eventually put into a forge where there were a number of other prisoners, about a hundred in all, and were kept there from 11 a.m. till 2 p.m. They were then taken to the prison. There they were assembled in a courtyard and searched. No arms were found. They were then passed through into the prison itself and put into cells. The witness and his wife were separated from each other. During the next hour the witness heard

b (7.

b 19 to b 25.

b 29.

ь 30.

rifle shots continually, and noticed in the corner of a courtyard leading off the row of cells the body of a young man with a mantle thrown over it. He recognised the mantle as having belonged to his wife. The witness's daughter was allowed to go out to see what had happened to her mother, and the witness himself was allowed to go across the courtyard half an hour afterwards for the same purpose. He found his wife lying on the floor in a room. She had bullet wounds in four places, but was alive and told her husband to return to the children, and he did so. About 5 o'clock in the evening he saw the Germans bringing out all the young and middle-aged men from the cells, and ranging their prigonous to the number of 40 in three rows in the middle of the court their prisoners, to the number of 40, in three rows in the middle of the courtyard. About 20 Germans were drawn up opposite, but before anything was done there was a tremendous fusillade from some point near the prison and the civilians were hurried back to their cells. Half an hour later the same 40 men were brought back into the courtyard. Almost immediately there was a second fusillade like the first and they were driven back to the cells again. About 7 o'clock the witness and other prisoners were brought out of their cells and marched out of the prison. They went between two lines of troops to Roche Bayard about a kilometre away. An hour later the women and children were separated and the prisoners were brought back to Dinant, passing the prison on their way. Just outside the prison the witness saw three lines of bodies which he recognised as being those of neighbors. bours. They were nearly all dead, but he noticed movement in some of them. There were about 120 bodies. The prisoners were then taken up to the top of the hill outside Dinant and compelled to stay there till 8 o'clock in the morning. On the following day they were put into cattle trucks and taken thence to Coblenz. For three months they remained prisoners in Germany.

Unarmed civilians were killed in masses at other places near the prison. About 90 bodies were seen lying on the top of one another in a grass square opposite the convent. They included many relatives of a witness whose deposition will be found in the Appendix. This witness asked a German officer why her husband had been shot, and he told her that it was because two of her sons had been in the civil guard and had shot at the Germans. As a matter of fact one of her sons was at that time in Liège and the other in Brussels. It is stated that beside the 90 corpses referred to above, 60 corpses of civilians were recovered from a hole in the brewery yard and that 48 bodies of women and children were found in a garden. The town was

systematically set on fire by hand grenades.

Another witness saw a little girl of seven one of whose legs was broken and the

other injured by a bayonet.

We have no reason to believe that the civilian population of Dinant gave any provocation, or that any other defence can be put forward to justify the treatment

inflicted upon its citizens.

As regards this town and the advance of the German army from Dinant to Rethel on the Aisne, a graphic account is given in the diary of a Saxon officer. This diary Appendix B. confirms what is clear from the evidence as a whole both as regards these and other districts that civilians were constantly taken as prisoners, often dragged from their homes and shot under the direction of the authorities without any charge being made against them. An event of the kind is thus referred to in a diary entry: "Apparently 200 men were shot. There must have been some innocent men amongst them. In "future we shall have to hold an inquiry as to their guilt instead of shooting them." The shooting of inhabitants, women and children as well as men went on after the Germans had passed Dinant on their way into France. The houses and villages were pillaged and property wantonly destroyed.

THE AERSCHOT, MALINES, VILVORDE, AND LOUVAIN QUADRANGLE.2

About August 9 a powerful screen of cavalry masking the general advance of the first and second German armies was thrown forward into the provinces of Brabant and Limburg. The progress of the invaders was contested at several points, probably

² A special map of this district will be found facing page 15.

b 26.

b 27.

b 23.

A copy of this Diary was given by the French military authorities to the British Head Quarters staff in France and the latter have communicated it to the Committee. It will be found in Appendix B. after the German Diaries shown to us by the British War Office.

near Tirlemont on the Louvain road, and at Diest, Haelen and Schaffen on the Aerschot road by detachments of the main Belgian army which was drawn up upon the line of the Dyle. In their preliminary skirmishes the Belgians more than once gained advantages, but after the fall on August 15 of the last of the Liège forts, the great line of railway which runs through Liège towards Brussels and Antwerp in one direction and towards Namur and the French frontier in another, fell into the hands of the Germans. From this moment the advance of the main army was swift and irresistible. On August 19 Louvain and Aerschot were occupied by the Germans, the former without resistance, the latter after a struggle which resulted early in the day in the retirement of the Belgian army upon Antwerp. On August 20 the invaders made their entry into Brussels.

The quadrangle of territory bounded by the towns of Aerschot, Malines, Vilvorde, and Louvain, is a rich agricultural tract, studded with small villages and comprising two considerable cities, Louvain and Malines. This district on August 19 passed into the hands of the Germans, and, owing perhaps to its proximity to Antwerp, then the seat of the Belgian Government and headquarters of the Belgian army, it became from that date a scene of chronic outrage, with respect to which the Committee has received a great mass of evidence.

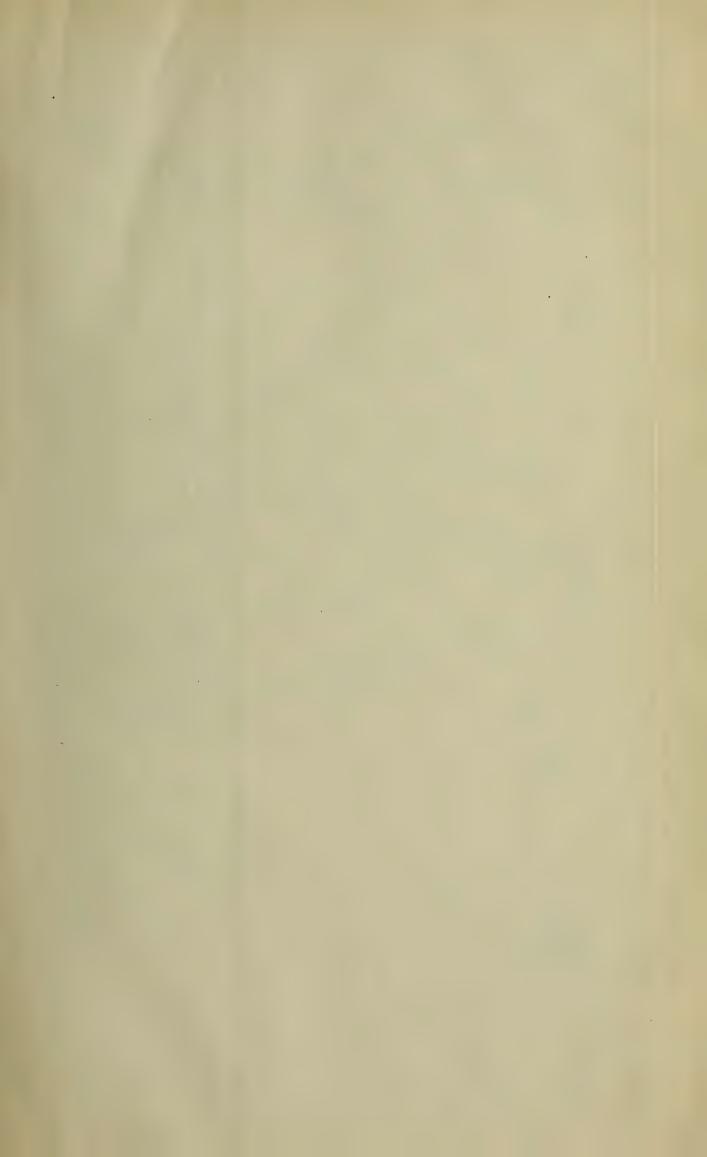
The witnesses to these occurrences are for the most part imperfectly educated persons who cannot give accurate dates, so it is impossible in some cases to fix the dates of particular crimes; and the total number of outrages is so great that we cannot refer to all of them in the body of the report or give all the depositions relating to them in the Appendix. The main events, however, are abundantly clear, and group themselves naturally round three dates—August 19th, August 25th, and September 11th.

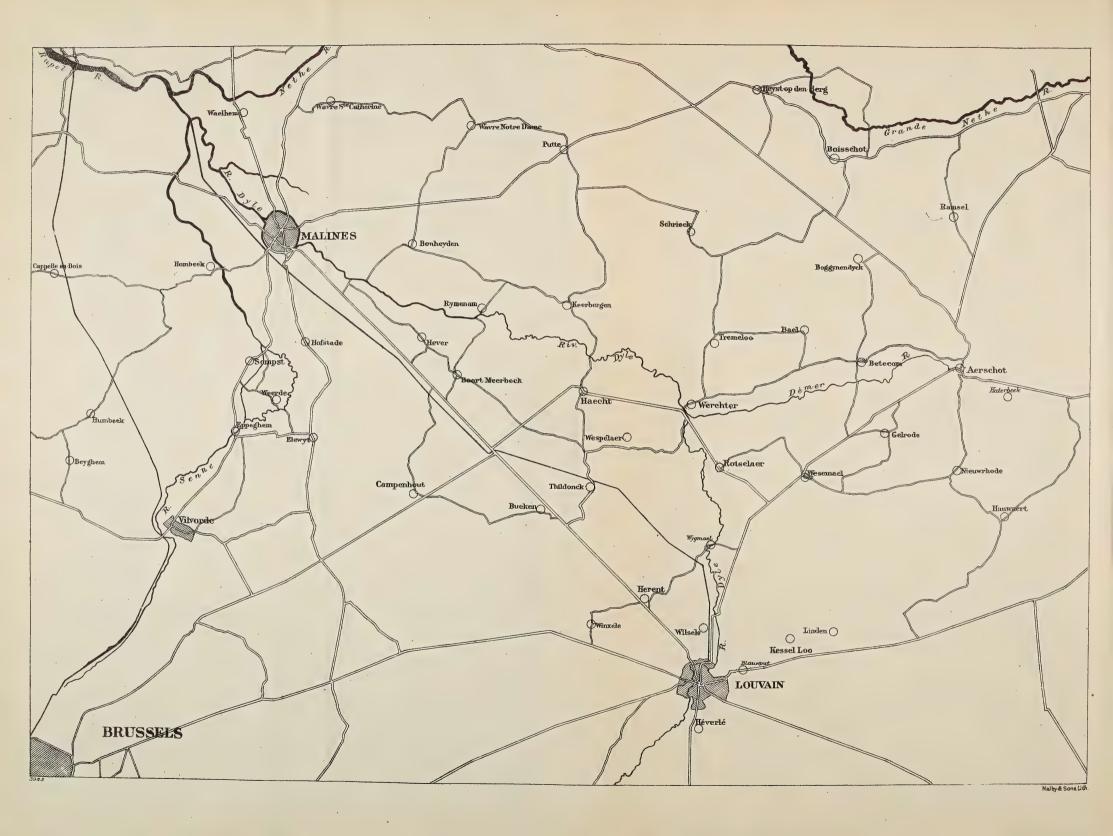
The arrival of the Germans in the district on August the 19th was marked by systematic massacres and other outrages at Aerschot itself, Gelrode and some other villages.

On August 25th the Belgians, sallying out of the defences of Antwerp, attacked the German positions at Malines, drove the enemy from the town and reoccupied many of the villages, such as Sempst, Hofstade, and Eppeghem in the neighbourhood. And just as numerous outrages against the civilian population had been the immediate consequence of the temporary repulse of the German vanguard from Fort Fléron, so a large body of depositions testify to the fact that a sudden outburst of cruelty was the response of the German army to the Belgian victory at Malines. The advance of the German army to the Dyle had been accompanied by reprehensible and indeed (in certain cases) terrible outrages, but these had been, it would appear, isolated acts some of which are attributed by witnesses to indignation at the check at Haelen while others may have been the consequence of drunkenness. But the battle of Malines had results of a different order. In the first place it was the occasion of numerous murders committed by the German army in retreating through the villages of Sempst, Hofstade, Eppeghem, Elewyt and elsewhere. In the second place it led, as it will be shown later, to the massacres plunderings and burnings at Louvain, the signal for which was provided by shots exchanged between the German army retreating after its repulse at Malines and some members of the German garrison of Louvain, who mistook their fellow countrymen for Belgians. Lastly, the encounter at Malines seems to have stung the Germans into establishing a reign of terror in so much of the district comprised in the quadrangle as remained in their power. Many houses were destroyed and their contents stolen. Hundreds of prisoners were locked up in various churches, and were in some instances marched about from one village to another. Some of these were finally conducted to Louvain and linked up with the bands of prisoners taken in Louvain itself, and sent to Germany and elsewhere.

On September 11th when the Germans were driven out of Aerschot across the river Démer by a successful sortie from Antwerp, murders of civilians were taking place in the villages which the Belgian army then recaptured from the Germans. These crimes bear a strong resemblance to those committed in Hofstade and other villages after the battle of Malines.

k 1 to k 4.





AERSCHOT AND DISTRICT. Period I. (August 19th and following days.)

AERSCHOT.

The German army entered Aerschot quite early in the morning. Workmen going

to their work were seized and taken as hostages.

The Germans apparently already irritated, proceeded to make a search for the priests and threatened to burn the convent if the priests should happen to be found there. One priest was accused of inciting the inhabitants to fire on the troops, and when he denied it, the Burgomaster was blamed by the officer. The priest then showed the officer the notices on the walls, signed by the Burgomaster, warning the inhabitants not to intervene in hostilities

It appears that they accused the priest of having fired at the Germans from the tower of the church. This is important, because it is one of the not infrequent cases in which the Germans ascribed firing from a church to priests, whereas in fact this firing came from Belgian soldiers, and also because it seems to show that the Germans from the moment of their arrival in Aerschot, were seeking to pick a quarrel with the inhabitants, and this goes far to explain their subsequent conduct. Hostages were

collected, until 200 men, some of whom were invalids, were gathered together.

Monsieur Tielmans, the Burgomaster, was then ordered by some German officers, c 1, c 6, c 15. to address the crowd and to tell them to hand in any weapons which they might have in their possession, at the Town Hall, and to warn them that anyone who was found with weapons would be killed. As a matter of fact, the arms in the possession of civilians had already been collected at the beginning of the war. The Burgomaster's speech resulted in the delivery of one gun which had been used for pigeon shooting. The hostages were then released. Throughout the day the town was looted by the soldiers. Many shop windows were broken, and the contents of the shop fronts ransacked.

A shot was fired about 7 o'clock in the evening, by which time many of the soldiers were drunk. The Germans were not of one mind as to the direction from which the shot proceeded. Some said it came from a jeweller's shop, and some said it came from other houses. No one was hit by this shot, but thereafter German

soldiers began to fire in various directions at people in the streets.

It is said that a German general or colonel was killed at the Burgomaster's house. As far as the Committee have been able to ascertain, the identity of the officer has never been revealed. The German version of the story is that he was killed by the fifteen-year-old son of the Burgomaster; the Committee, however, is satisfied by the evidence of several independent witnesses that some German officers were standing at the window of the Burgomaster's house, that a large body of German troops were in the square, that some of these soldiers were drunk and let off their rifles, that in the volley one of the officers standing at the window of the Burgomaster's house fell, that at the time of the accident the wife and son of the Burgomaster had gone to take refuge in the cellar, and that neither the Burgomaster nor his son were in the least degree responsible for the occurrence which served as the pretext for their subsequent execution, and for the firing and sack of the town.*

* This account agrees substantially with that given in a letter, written by Mme. Tielmans, the Burgomaster's wife, which is printed in the fifth report of the Belgian Commission. The letter is as follows: e 1. c 3.

e 20.

e 3.

e 1.

c 1, c 4.

e 7.

c 7.

e 7.

[&]quot;This is how it happened. About 4 in the afternoon my husband was giving eigars to the sentinels stationed at the door. I saw that the General and his Aides-de-Camp were looking at us from the balcony, and told him to come indoors. Just then I looked towards the Grand' Place, where more than 2,000 Germans were encamped, and distinctly saw two columns of smoke followed by a fusillade; the Germans were firing on the houses, and forcing their way into them. My husband, children, servant, and myself had just time to dash into the staircase leading to the cellar. The Germans were even firing into the passages of the houses. After a few minutes of indescribable horror, one of the General's Aides-de-Camp came down and said, 'The General is dead, where is the Burgomaster.' My husband said to me 'This will be serious for me.' As he went forward, I said to the Aide-de-Camp 'You can see for yourself, sir, that my husband did not fire.' 'That makes no difference,' he said, 'he is responsible.' My husband was taken off. My son, who was at my side took us into another cellar. The same Aide-de-Camp came and dragged him out, and made him walk in front of him, kicking him as he went. The poor boy could hardly walk. That morning when they came to the town the Germans had fired through the windows of the houses, and a bullet had come into the room where my son was, and he had been wounded in the calf by the ricochet. After my husband and son had gone, I was dragged all through the house by Germans, with their revolvers levelled at my head. I was compelled to see their dead General. Then my daughter and I were thrown into the street without cloaks or anything. We were massed in the Grand' Place, surrounded by a cordon of soldiers, and compelled to witness the destruction of our beloved town. And then by the hideous light of the fire I saw them for the last time, about one in the morning, my husband and my boy tied together. My brother-in-law was behind them. They were being led out to execution.

The houses were set on fire with special apparatus, while people were dragged e 19, c7, e 15. from their houses already burning, and some were shot in the streets.

Many civilians were marched to a field on the road to Louvain and kept there all e 5, e 6, e 13. night. Meanwhile many of the inhabitants were collected in the square. By this c 9. time very many of the troops were drunk.

e 6, e 8.

On the following day a number of the civilians were shot under the orders of an officer, together with the Burgomaster, his brother and his son. Of this incident, which is spoken to by many witnesses, a clear account is given: "German soldiers " came and took hold of me and every other man they could see, and eventually there " were about 60 of us, including some of eighty (i.e., years of age), and they made us " accompany them all the prisoners had to walk with their hands above their "heads. We were then stopped and made to stand in a line, and an officer, a big " fat man who had a blueish uniform came along the line and picked out the "Burgomaster, his brother and his son and some men who had been employed under "the Red Cross. In all, ten men were picked out the remainder were made " to turn their backs upon the ten. I then heard some shots fired, and I and the other " men turned round and we saw all the ten men, in luding the Burgomaster, were "lying on the ground." This incident is spoken to by other witnesses also: some of c 4 e 9 c 17, their depositions appear in the Appendix.

GELRODE.

On the same day, at Gelrode, a small village close to Aerschot, 25 civilians e 39. were imprisoned in the church; seven were taken out by 15 German soldiers in charge of an officer just outside. One of the seven tried to run away, whereupon all the six who remained behind alive were shot. This was on the night of the 19th August. No provocation whatever had been given. The men in question had been searched, and no arms had been found upon them. Here, as at Aerschot, precautions had been taken previously to secure the delivery up of all arms in the hands of

Some of the survivors were compelled to dig graves for the seven. At a later date the corpses were disinterred and re-buried in consecrated ground. The marks of the bullets in the brick wall against which the six were shot were then still plainly visible. On the same day a woman was shot by some German soldiers as she was walking home. This was done at a distance of 100 yards and for no apparent reason.

An account of a murder by an officer at Campenhout is given in a later part of this Report, and depositions relating to Rotselaer, Tremeloo, and Wespelaer will be

found in the Appendix.

e 20.

e 11.

e 42.

e 41.

c 16.

e 18-e 52. c 53-e 59.

c 60-c 61.

11

The Committee is specially impressed by the character of the outrages committed in the smaller villages. Many of these are exceptionally shocking and cannot be regarded as contemplated or prescribed by the responsible commanders of the troops by whom they were committed. The inference, however, which we draw from these occurrences is that when once troops have been encouraged in a career of terrorism, the more savage and brutal natures, of whom there are some in every large army, are liable to run to wild excess, more particularly in those regions where they are least subject to observation and control.

AERSCHOT AND DISTRICT.

Period II. (August 25th.)

Immediately after the battle of Malines, which resulted in the evacuation by the Germans of the district of Malines, Sempst, Hofstade, and Eppeghem, a long series of murders were committed either just before or during the retreat of the army. Many of the inhabitants who were unarmed, including women and young children, were killed—some of them under revolting circumstances.

Evidence given goes to show that the death of these villagers was due not to accident but to deliberate purpose. The wounds were generally stabs or cuts,

and for the most part appear to have been inflicted with the bayonet.

MALINES.

In Malines itself many bodies were seen. One witness saw a German soldier cut a woman's breasts after he had murdered her, and saw many other dead bodies of women in the streets.

HOFS'CADE.

In Hofstade a number of houses had been set on fire and many corpses were seen, d 10-d 65. some in houses, some in back yards, and some in the streets.

Several examples are given below.

Two witnesses speak to having seen the body of a young man pierced by bayonet d 64, d 65. thrusts with the wrists cut also.

On a side road the corpse of a civilian was seen on his doorstep with a bayonet wound in his stomach, and by his side the dead body of a boy of five or six with his hands nearly severed.

The corpses of a woman and boy were seen at the blacksmith's. They had been

killed with the bayonet.

In a café a young man, also killed with the bayonet was holding his hands together d 16. as if in the attitude of supplication.

Two young women were lying in the back yard of the house. One had her breasts

cut off, the other had been stabbed.

A young man had been hacked with the bayonet until his entrails protruded. He

also had his hands joined in the attitude of prayer.

In the garden of a house in the main street, bodies of two women were observed, d 13. and in another house the body of a boy of 16 with two bayonet wounds in the chest.

SEMPST.

In Sempst a similar condition of affairs existed. Houses were burning, and in some of them were the charred remains of civilians.

In a bicycle shop a witness saw the burned corpse of a man. Other witnesses

speak to this incident.

Another civilian, unarmed, was shot as he was running away. As will be remembered all the arms had been given up some time before by order of the

burgomaster.

The corpse of a man with his legs cut off, who was partly bound, was seen by another witness, who also saw a girl of seventeen dressed only in a chemise and in great distress. She alleged that she herself and other girls had been dragged into a field, stripped naked and violated, and that some of them had then been killed with the bayonet.

Weerde.—At Weerde four corpses of civilians were lying in the road. It was said that these men had fired upon the German soldiers; but this is denied. The arms had been given up long before.

Two children were killed in a village, apparently Weerde, quite wantonly as they were standing in the road with their mother. They were three or four years

old and were killed with the bayonet.

A small farm burning close by formed a convenient means of getting rid of the They were thrown into the flames from the bayonets. It is right to add that no commissioned officer was present at this time.

Eppeghem.—At Eppeghem, on the 25th of August, a pregnant woman who had been wounded with a bayonet was discovered in the Convent. She was dying. On the road six dead bodies of labourers were seen.

ELEWYT.—At Elewyt a man's naked body was tied up to a ring in the wall in the backyard of a house. He was dead, and his corpse was mutilated in a manner too horrible to record. A woman's naked body was also found in a stable abutting on the same backyard.

VILVORDE.—At Vilvorde corpses of civilians were also found. These villages are all on the line from Malines to Brussels.

BOORT MEERBEEK.--At Boort Meerbeek a German soldier was seen to fire three times at a little girl of five years old. Having failed to hit her, he subsequently bayoneted her. He was killed with the butt end of a rifle by a Belgian soldier who had seen him commit this murder from a distance.

HERENT.—At Herent the charred body of a civilian was found in a butcher's shop,

and in a hand cart 20 yards away was the dead body of a labourer.

Two eye-witnesses relate that a German soldier shot a civilian and stabbed him with a bayonet as he lay. He then made one of these witnesses, a civilian prisoner, smell the blood on the bayonet.

d 33.

d 31.

d 15.

d 52.

a 66, d 69. d 72. d 67.

d 83.

d 84.

d 85.

d 87.

d 90.

d 92.

d 91.

d 95.

d 97.

d 98.

HAECHT.—At Haecht the bodies of 10 civilians were seen lying in a row by a d 101, d 104. d 105. brewery wall.

In a labourer's house, which had been broken up, the mutilated corpse of a woman

of 30 to 35 was discovered.

A child of three with its stomach cut open by a bayonet was lying near a house.

WERCHTER.—At Werchter the corpses of a man and woman and four younger d 110. persons were found in one house. It is stated that they had been murdered because one of the latter, a girl, would not allow the Germans to outrage her.

This catalogue of crimes does not by any means represent the sum total of the depositions relating to this district laid before the Committee. The above are given merely as examples of acts which the evidence shows to have taken place in numbers that might have seemed scarcely credible.

In the rest of the district, that is to say, Aerschot and the other villages from which the Germans had not been driven, the effect of the battle was to cause a recrudescence of murder, arson, pillage, and cruelty, which had to some extent died

down after the 20th or 21st August.

c 2.

c 24, c 25 e 26

e 23.

c 15.

e 20.

c 21.

e 29, e 30.

e 32, c 36.

e 31

In Aerschot itself fresh prisoners seems to have been taken and added to those who were already in the church, since it would appear that prisoners were kept to some extent in the church during the whole of the German occupation of Aerschot. The second occasion on which large numbers of prisoners were put there was shortly after the battle of Malines, and it was then that the priest of Gelrode was brought to

Aerschot church, treated abominably and finally murdered.

One witness describes the scene graphically: "The whole of the prisoners-men, " women, and children -were placed in the church. Nobody was allowed to go outside "the church to obey the calls of nature. The church had to be used for that purpose. "We were afterwards allowed to go outside the church for this purpose, and then I " saw the clergyman of Gelrode standing by the wall of the church with his hands " above his head, being guarded by soldiers." The actual details of the murder of the priest are as follows: The priest was struck several times by the soldiers on the head. He was pushed up against the wall of the church. He asked in Flemish to be allowed to stand with his face to the wall, and tried to turn round. The Germans stopped him, and then turned him with his face to the wall, with his hands above his head. An hour later the same witness saw the priest still standing there. then led away by the Germans a distance of about 50 yards. There with his face against the wall of a house he was shot by five soldiers.

Other murders of which we have evidence appear in the Appendix.

Some of the prisoners in the church at Aerschot were actually kept there until the arrival of the Belgian army, on September 11th, when they were released. Others were marched to Louvain, and eventually merged with other prisoners, both from Louvain itself and the surrounding districts, and taken to Germany and elsewhere.

It is said by one witness that about 1,500 were marched to Louvain, and that the

journey took six hours.

The journey to Louvain is thus described by a witness: We were all marched off to e 25. Louvain, walking. There were some very old people, amongst others a man 90 years of age. The very old people were drawn in carts and barrows by the younger men. There was an officer with a bicycle, who shouted, as people fell out by the side of the road, "Shoot them."

AERSCHOT AND DISTRICT.

Period III. (September.)

It is unnecessary to describe with much particularity the events of the period beginning about September 10th. The Belgian soldiers who had recaptured the place found corpses of civilians, who must have been murdered in Aerschot itself, just as they found them in Sempst and the other villages on August 25th. Some of these bodies were found in wells, and some had been burnt alive in their houses.

The prisoners released by the Belgian army from the church were almost starved. o 32, e 34 At HAECHT several children had been murdered, one of two or three years old was d 107. found nailed to the door of a farmhouse by its hands and feet, a crime which seems almost incredible, but the evidence for which we feel bound to accept. In the garden of this house was the body of a girl, who had been shot in the forehead

CAPELLE-AU-BOIS.—At Capelle-au-Bois two children were murdered in a cart, and d 115-121. their corpses were seen by many witnesses at different stages of the eart's journey.

EPPEGHEM.—At Eppeghem the dead body of a child of two was seen pinned to the ground with a German lance. Same witness saw a mutilated woman alive near Weerde on the same day.

TREMELOO.—Belgian soldiers on patrol duty found a young girl naked on the ground, covered with scratches. She complained of having been violated. On the same day an old woman was seen kneeling by the body of her husband, and she told them that the Germans had shot him as he was trying to escape from the house.

c 57.

d 89.

LOUVAIN AND DISTRICT.

The events spoken to as having occurred in and around Louvain between the 19th and the 25th of August deserve close attention.

For six days the Germans were in peaceful occupation of the city. No houses were set on fire—no citizens killed. There was a certain amount of looting of empty houses, but otherwise discipline was effectively maintained. The condition of Louvain during these days was one of relative peace and quietude, presenting a striking contrast to the previous and contemporaneous conduct of the German army elsewhere.

On the evening of August 25th a sudden change takes place. The Germans, on that day repulsed by the Belgians, had retreated to and re-occupied Louvain. Immediately the devastation of that city and the holocaust of its population commences. The inference is irresistible that the army as a whole wreaked its vengeance on the civilian population and the buildings of the city in revenge for the setback which the Belgian arms had inflicted on them. A subsidiary cause alleged was the assertion, often made before, that civilians had fired upon the German army.

The depositions which relate to Louvain are numerous, and are believed by the Committee to present a true and fairly complete picture of the events of the 25th and 26th August and subsequent days. We find no grounds for thinking that the inhabitants fired upon the German army on the evening of the 25th August. Eyewitnesses worthy of credence detail exactly when, where, and how the firing commenced. Such firing was by Germans on Germans. No impartial tribunal could,

in our opinion, come to any other conclusion.

On the evening of the 25th firing could be heard in the direction of Herent, some three kilometres from Louvain. An alarm was sounded in the city. There was disorder and confusion, and at 8 o'clock horses attached to baggage wagons stampeded in the street and rifle fire commenced. This was in the Rue de la Station and came from the German police guard (21 in number) who seeing the troops arrive in disorder, thought it was the enemy. Then the corps of incendiaries got to work. They had broad belts with the words "Gott mit uns" and their equipment consisted of a hatchet, a syringe, a small shovel, and a revolver. Fires blazed up in the direction of the Law Courts, St. Martin's Barracks, and later in the Place de la Station. Meanwhile an incessant fusillade was kept up on the windows of the houses. In their efforts to escape the flames the inhabitants climbed the walls. "My mother "and servants," says a witness, "had to do the same and took refuge at Monsieur " A., whose cellars are vaulted and afforded a better protection than mine. A little " later we withdrew to Monsieur A.'s stables, where about 30 people who had got "there by climbing the walls, were to be found. Some of these poor wretches had "to climb twenty walls. A ring came at the bell. We opened the door. Several "civilians flung themselves under the porch. The Germans were firing upon them from the street. Every moment new fires were lighting up, accompanied by " explosions. In the middle of the night I heard a knock at the outer door of the " stable which led into a little street, and heard a woman's voice crying for help. "I opened the door, and just as I was going to let her in, a rifle shot fired from the street by a German soldier rang out and the woman fell dead at my feet. About 9 in the morning things got quieter, and we took the opportunity of venturing into the street. A German who was carrying a silver pyx and a number of boxes of cigars, told us we were to go to the station where trains would be waiting for When we got to the Place de la Station we saw in the Square 7 or 8 dead bodies of murdered civilians. Not a single house in the place was standing. A whole row of houses behind the station at Blauwput was burnt. After being "driven hither and thither interminably by officers, who treated us roughly and insulted us throughout, we were divided." The prisoners were then distributed between different bodies of troops and marched in the direction of Herent. Seventy-

e 1.

e 1.

e 8.

e 1.

seven inhabitants of Louvain, including a number of people of good position (the names of several are given) were thus taken to Herent. "We found the village of Herent in flames, so much so that we had to quicken up to prevent ourselves from " being suffocated and burnt up by the flames in the middle of the road. Half burnt " corpses of civilians were lying in front of the houses. During a halt soldiers stole " cattle and slaughtered them where they stood. Firing started on our left. We were " told it was the civilians firing, and that we were going to be shot. The truth is "that it was the Germans themselves who were firing to frighten us. There was not "a single civilian in the neighbourhood. Shortly afterwards we proceeded on our " march to Malines. We were insulted and threatened. . . . The officers were " worse than the men. We got to Campenhout about 7 p.m., and were locked into the "church with all the male population of the village. Some priests had joined our " numbers. We had had nothing to eat or drink since the evening of the day before. " A few compassionate soldiers gave us water to drink, but no official took the trouble "to see that we were fed." Next day, Thursday, the 27th, a safe-conduct to return to Louvain was given, but the prisoners had hardly started when they were stopped and taken before a Brigade General and handed to another escort. Some were grossly ill-treated. They were accused of being soldiers out of uniform, and were told they could not go to Louvain "as the town was going to be razed to the ground." Other prisoners were added, even women and children, until there were more than 200. They were then taken towards Malines, released, and told to go to that town together, and that those who separated would be fired on. Other witnesses corroborate the events described by the witness.

A woman employed as servant by an old gentleman living in the Rue de la Station tells the story of her master's death. "We had supper as usual about 8, but two "German officers (who were staying in the house) did not come in to supper that evening. My master went to bed at 8.15, and so did his son. The servants went to bed at half-past 9. Soon after I got to my bedroom I saw out of my room flames from some burning house near by. I roused my master and his son. As they came down the stairs they were seized by German soldiers and both were tied up and led out, my master being tied with a rope and his son with a chain. They were dragged outside. I did not actually see what happened outside, but heard subsequently that my master was bayonetted and shot, and that his son was shot. I heard shots from the kitchen where I was, and was present at the burial of my master and his son 13 days later. German soldiers came back into the house and poured some inflammable liquid over the floors and set fire to it. I escaped by another staircase to that which my master and his son had descended."

On the 26th (Wednesday), in the city of Louvain, massacre, fire, and destruction went on. The University, with its Library, the church of St. Peter, and many houses were set on fire and burnt to the ground. Citizens were shot and others taken prisoners and compelled to go with the troops. Soldiers went through the streets saying "Man hat geschossen." One soldier was seen going along shooting in the air.

Many of the people hid in cellars, but the soldiers shot down through the gratings. Some citizens were shot on opening the doors, others in endeavouring to escape. Among other persons whose houses were burnt was an old man of ninety lying dangerously ill who was taken out on his mattress and left lying in his garden all night. He died shortly after in the hospital to which a friend took him the following morning.

On Thursday, the 27th, orders were given that everyone should leave the city which was to be razed to the ground. Some citizens, including a canon of the Cathedral with his aged mother, were ordered to go to the station and afterwards to take the road to Tirlemont. Among the number were about 20 priests from Louvain. They were insulted and threatened, but ultimately allowed to go free and make their way as best they could, women and sick persons among them, to Tirlemont. Other groups of prisoners from Louvain were on the same day taken by other routes, some early in the morning through various villages in the direction of Malines with hands tightly bound by a long cord. More prisoners were afterwards added, and all made to stay the night in the church at Campenhout. Next day, the 28th, this group then consisting of about 1,000 men, women and children, was taken back to Louvain. The houses along the road were burning and many dead bodies of civilians, men and women, were seen on the way. Some of the principal streets in Louvain had by that time been burnt out. The prisoners were placed in a large building on the cavalry

e 18.

e 2.

e 2.

e 13.

e 18.

e 2.

exercise ground—"One woman went mad, some children died, others were born." On the 29th the prisoners were marched along the Malines road, and at Herent the women and children and men over 40 were allowed to go, the others were taken to Boort Meerbeek, 15 kilometres from Malines, and told to march straight to Malines or be shot. At 11 p.m. they reached the fort of Waelhem and were at first fired on by the sentries, but on calling out they were Belgians were allowed to pass. prisoners were practically without food from early morning on the 26th until midnight on the 29th. Of the corpses seen on the road some had their hands tied behind their backs, others were burnt, some had been killed by blows and some corpses were those of children who had been shot.

Another witness, a man of independent means, was arrested at noon by the soldiers of the 165th Regiment and taken to the Place de la Station. He was grossly illtreated on the way and robbed by an officer of his purse and keys. His hands were tied behind his back. His wife was kept a prisoner at the other side of the station. He was then made to march with about 500 other prisoners until midnight, slept in the rain that night, and next day, having had no food since leaving Louvain, was taken to the church in Rotselaer where there were then about 1,500 prisoners confined, including some infants. No food was given, only some water. Next day they were taken through Wespelaer and back to Louvain. On the way from Rotselaer to Wespelaer 50 bodies were seen, some naked and carbonised and unrecognisable. When they arrived at Louvain the Fish Market, the Place Marguerite, the Cathedral and many other buildings were on fire. In the evening about 100 men, women and children were put in horse trucks from which the dung had not been removed, and at 6 next morning left for Cologne.

The wife of this witness was also taken prisoner with her husband and her maid, but was separated from him, and she saw other ladies made to walk before the soldiers with their hands above their heads. One, an old lady of eighty-five—(name given) -was dragged from her cellar and taken with them to the station. They were kept there all night but set free in the morning, Thursday, but shortly afterwards sent to Tirlemont on foot. A number of corpses were seen on the way. The prisoners, of whom there are said to have been thousands, were not allowed even to have water to drink although there were streams on the way from which the soldiers drank. Witness was given some milk at a farm, but as she raised it to her lips it was taken

away from her.

A priest was taken on the Friday morning, August 28th, and placed at the head of a number of refugees from Wygmael. He was led through Louvain, abused and illtreated, and placed with some thousands of other people in the riding school in the rue du Manège. The glass roof broke in the night from the heat of burning buildings round. Next day the prisoners were marched through the country with an armed guard. Burnt farms and burnt corpses were seen on the way. The prisoners were finally separated into three groups, and the younger men marched through Herent and Bueken to Campenhout, and ultimately reached the Belgian lines about midnight on Saturday, August 29th. All the houses in Herent, a village of about 5,000 inhabitants, had been burnt.

The massacre of civilians at Louvain was not confined to its citizens. Large crowds of people were brought into Louvain from the surrounding districts, not only from Aerschot and Gelrode as above mentioned, but also from other places. For example, a witness describes how many women and children were taken in carts to Louvain, and there placed in a stable. Of the hundreds of people thus taken from the various villages and brought to Louvain as prisoners some were massacred there, others were forced to march along with citizens of Louvain through various places, some being ultimately sent on the 29th to the Belgians lines at Malines, others were taken in trucks to Cologne as described below, others were released. An account of the massacre of some of these unfortunate civilian prisoners given by two witnesses may be quoted.

"We were all placed in Station St., Louvain, and the German soldiers fired " upon us. I saw the corpses of some women in the street. I fell down, and a woman "who had been shot fell on top of me. I did not dare to look at the dead bodies in "the street, there were so many of them. All of them had been shot by the German

"soldiers. One woman whom I saw lying dead in the street was a Miss J. . . —
"about 35. I also saw the body of A. . . M . . (a woman). She had been shot.

"I saw an officer pull her corpse underneath a wagon."

Another witness who was taken from Aerschot also describes the occurrence: "I was afterwards taken with a large number of other civilians and placed in the

e 3.

e 4.

e 18.

e 1.

e 45

"church at Louvain. Then we were taken to Station St., Louvain. There were about 1,500 civilians of both sexes, and we had been marched from Aerschot to Louvain. When we were in Station St. I felt that something was about to happen, and I tried to shelter in a doorway. The German soldiers then fired a mitrailleuse and their rifles upon the people, and the people fell on all sides. Two men next to me were killed. I afterwards saw someone give a signal, and the firing ceased. I then ran away with a married woman named B... (whose maiden name was A... M...), aged 29, who belonged to Aerschot, but we were again captured. She was shot by the side of me, and I saw her fall. Several other people were shot at the same time. I again ran away, and in my flight saw children falling out of their mothers' arms. I cannot say whether they were shot, or whether they fell from their mothers' arms in the great panic which ensued. I, however, saw children bleeding."

JOURNEY TO COLOGNE.

e 3, e 5, e 7 e 10, e 11, e 16, e 17.

e 15.

The greatest number of prisoners from Louvain, however, were assembled at the station and taken by trains to Cologne. Several witnesses describe their sufferings and the ill-treatment they received on the journey. One of the first trains started in the afternoon. It consisted of cattle trucks, about 100 being in each truck. It took three days to get to Cologne. The prisoners had nothing to eat but a few biscuits each, and they were not allowed to get out for water and none was given. On a waggon the words "Civilians who shot at the soldiers at Louvain" were written. Some were marched through Cologne afterwards for the people to see. Ropes were put round the necks of some and they were told they would be hanged. An order then came that they were to be shot instead of hanged. A firing squad was prepared and five or six prisoners were put up but were not shot. After being kept a week at Cologne some of these prisoners were taken back—this time only 30 or 40 in a truck and allowed to go free on arriving at Limburg. Several witnesses who were taken in other trains to Cologne describe their experiences in detail. Some of the trucks were abominably filthy. Prisoners were not allowed to leave to obey the calls of nature; one man who quitted the truck for the purpose was killed by a bayonet. Describing what happened to another body of prisoners, a witness says that they were made to cross Station Street where the houses were burning and taken to the Station, placed in horse trucks crowded together, men, women and children, in each waggon. They were kept at the station during the night and the following day left for Cologne. For two days and a half they were without food, and then they received a loaf of bread among ten persons, and some water. The prisoners were afterwards taken back to Belgium. They were, in all, eight days in the train, crowded and almost without food. Two of the men went mad. The women and children were separated from the men at Brussels. The men were taken to a suburb and then to the villages of Herent, Vilvorde and Sempst and afterwards set at liberty.

This taking of the inhabitants, including some of the influential citizens, in groups and marching them to various places, and in particular the sending them to Malines and the dispatch of great numbers to Cologne, must evidently have been done under the direction of the higher military authorities. The ill-treatment of the prisoners was under the eyes and often by the direction or with the sanction of officers, and

officers themselves took part in it.

The object of taking many hundreds of prisoners to Cologne and back into Belgium is at first sight difficult to understand. Possibly it is to be regarded as part of the policy of punishment for Belgian resistance and general terrorization of the mhabitants—possibly as a desire to show these people to the population of a German

city and thus to confirm the belief that the Belgians had shot at their troops.

Whatever may have been the case when the burning began on the evening of the 25th, it appears clear that the subsequent destruction and outrages were done with a set purpose. It was not until the 26th that the Library, and other University buildings, the church of St. Peter and many houses were set on fire. It is to be noticed that cases occur in the depositions in which humane acts by individual officers and soldiers are mentioned, or in which officers are said to have expressed regret at being obliged to carry out orders for cruel action against the civilians. Similarly, we find entries in diaries which reveal a genuine pity for the population and disgust at the conduct of the army. It appears that a German non-commissioned officer stated definitely that he "was acting under orders and executing them with great unwillingness." A commissioned officer on being asked at Louvain by a witness—a highly educated man—about the horrible acts committed by the soldiers said he "was

merely executing orders," and that he himself would be shot if he did not execute them. Others gave less credible excuses, one stating that the inhabitants of Louvain had burnt the city themselves because they did not wish to supply food and quarters for the German Army. It was to the discipline rather than the want of discipline in the army that these outrages which we are obliged to describe as systematic, were due, and the special official notices posted on certain houses that they were not to be destroyed show the fate which had been decreed for the others which were not so marked.

We are driven to the conclusion that the harrying of the villages in the district, the burning of a large part of Louvain, the massacres there, the marching out of the prisoners, and the transport to Cologne (all done without enquiry as to whether the particular persons seized or killed had committed any wrongful act), were due to a calculated policy carried out scientifically and deliberately, not merely with the sanction but under the direction of higher military authorities, and were not due to any provocation or resistance by the civilian population.

TERMONDE.

To understand the depositions describing what happened at Termonde it is necessary to remember that the German Army occupied the town on two occasions, the first, from Friday, September the 4th, to Sunday, September the 6th, and again later in the month, about the 16th. The civilians had delivered up their arms a fortnight before the arrival of the Germans.

Early in the month probably about the 4th, a witness saw two civilians murdered by Uhlans. Another witness saw their dead bodies which remained in the street for ten days. Two hundred civilians were utilised as a screen by the German troops about this date.

On the 5th the town was partially burnt. One witness was taken prisoner in the street by some German soldiers together with several other civilians. At about 12 o'clock some of the tallest and strongest men amongst the prisoners were picked out to go round the streets with paraffin. Three or four carts containing paraffin tanks were brought up, and a syringe was used to put paraffin on to the houses which were then fired. The process of destruction began with the houses of rich people, and afterwards the houses of the poorer classes were treated in the same manner. German soldiers had previously told this witness that if the Burgomaster of Termonde, who was out of town, did not return by 12 o'clock that day the town would be set on fire. The firing of the town was in consequence of his failure to return. The prisoners were afterwards taken to a factory and searched for weapons. They were subsequently provided with passports enabling them to go anywhere in the town but not outside. The witness in question managed to effect his escape by swimming across the river.

Another witness describes how the tower of the church of Termonde St. Gilles was utilised by the Belgian troops for offensive purposes. They had in fact mounted a machine gun there. This witness was subsequently taken prisoner in a cellar in Termonde in which he had taken refuge with other people. All the men were taken from the cellar and the women were left behind. About 70 prisoners in all were taken; one, a brewer, who could not walk fast enough, was wounded with a bayonet. He fell down and was compelled to get up and follow the soldiers. The prisoners had to hold up their hands, and if they dropped their hands they were struck on the back with the butt ends of rifles. They were taken to Lebbeke where there were in all 300 prisoners, and there they were locked up in the church for three days and with scarcely any food.

A witness living at Baesrode was taken prisoner with 250 others and kept all night in a field. The prisoners were released on the following morning. This witness saw three corpses of civilians, and says that the Germans on Sunday, the 6th, plundered and destroyed the houses of those who had fled. The Germans left on the following day, taking about 30 men with them, one a man of seventy-two years of age.

Later in the month civilians were again used as a screen, and there is evidence of other acts of outrage.

ALOST.

Alost was the scene of fighting between the Belgian and German armies during the whole of the latter part of the month of September. In connection with the fighting numerous cruelties appear to have been perpetrated by the German troops.

f 5.

f 4, f 5.

f 1.

f 3

f 2.

f 6.

f 8, f 9. f 10, f 11.

On Saturday, the 11th September, a weaver was bayonetted in the street. Another f 12. civilian was shot dead at his door on the same night. On the following day the witness was taken prisoner together with 30 others. The money of the prisoners was confiscated, and they were subsequently used as a screen for the German troops who were at that moment engaged in a conflict with the Belgian Army in the town itself. The Germans burnt a number of houses at this time. Corpses of 14 civilians were seen in the streets on this occasion.

A well educated witness, who visited the Wetteren Hospital shortly after this date, saw the dead bodies of a number of civilians belonging to Alost, and other civilians wounded. One of these stated that he took refuge in the house of his sister-in-law; that the Germans dragged the people out of the house which was on fire, seized him, threw him on the ground and hit him on the head with the butt end of a rifle and ran him through the thigh with a bayonet. They then placed him with 17 or 18 others in front of the German troops threatening them with revolvers. They said that they were going to make the people of Alost pay for the losses sustained by the Germans. At this hospital was an old woman of eighty completely transfixed by a bayonet.

Other crimes on non-combatants at Alost belong to the end of the month of

f 15 to f 21. September. Many witnesses speak to the murder of harmless civilians.

In Binnenstraat the Germans broke open the windows of the house and threw fluid inside, and the houses burst into flames. Some of the inhabitants were burnt to

The civilians were utilised on Saturday, the 26th September, as a screen. During f 15. their retreat the Germans fired 12 houses in Rue des Trois Clefs, and three civilians, whose names are given, were shot dead in that street after the firing of the houses. On the following day a heap of nine dead civilians were lying in the rue de l'Argent.

Similar outrages occurred at Erpe, a village a few miles from Alost, about the The village was deliberately burnt. The houses were plundered and same date. some civilians were murdered.

Civilians were apparently used as a screen at Erpe, but they were prisoners taken from Alost and not dwellers in that village. This disregard for the lives of civilians is strikingly shown in extracts from German

soldiers' diaries, of which the following are representative examples.

Barthel, who was a sergeant and standard bearer of the 2nd Company of the 1st Guards Regiment on Foot, and who during the campaign received the Iron Cross, says, under date 10th August, 1914: "A transport of 300 Belgians came through "Duisburg in the morning. Of these, 80 including the Oberburgomaster were shot " according to martial law.

Mathern, of the 4th Company of Jägers, No. 11, from Marburg, states that at a village between Birnal and Dinant on Sunday, August 23rd, the Pioneers and Infantry Regiment 178 were fired upon by the inhabitants. He gives no particulars beyond this. He continues: "About 220 inhabitants were shot, and the village was burnt. " Artillery is continuously shooting—the village lies in a large ravine. Just now, "6 o'clock in the afternoon, the crossing of the Meuse begins near Dinant. All "villages, chateaux and houses are burnt down during the night. It is a beautiful " sight to see the fires all round us in the distance."

Bombardier Wetzel, of the 2nd Mounted Battery, 1st Kurhessian Field Artillery Regiment, No. 11, records an incident which happened in French territory near Lille on the 11th October: "We had no fight, but we caught about 20 men and shot them." By this time killing not in a fight would seem to have passed into a habit.

Diary No. 32 gives an accurate picture of what took place in Louvain: "What " a sad scene—all the houses surrounding the railway station completely destroyed— " only some foundation walls still standing. On the station square captured guns. " At the end of a main street there is the Council Hall which has been completely " preserved with all its beautiful turrets; a sharp contrast: 180 inhabitants are stated

" to have been shot after they had dug their own graves."

The last and most important entry is that contained in Diary No. 19. This is a blue book interleaved with blotting paper and contains no name and address; there is, however, one circumstance which makes it possible to speak with certainty as to the regiment of the writer. He gives the names of First Lieutenant von Oppen, Count Eulenburg, Captain von Roeder, First Lieutenant von Bock und Polach, Second Lieutenant Count Hardenberg, and Lieutenant Engelbrecht. A perusal of the Prussian Army List of June 1914, shows that all these officers with the

f 26.

f 27.

f 13.

Diaries of German Soldiers.

Appendix B.

exception of Lieutenant Engelbrecht belonged to the First Regiment of Foot Guards. On the 24th August 1914, the writer was in Ermeton. The exact translation of the extract, grim in its brevity, is as follows: "24.8.14. We took about 1,000 prisoners: "at least 500 were shot. The village was burnt because inhabitants had also shot." Two civilians were shot at once."

We may now sum up and endeavour to explain the character and significance

of the wrongful acts done by the German army in Belgium.

If a line is drawn on a map from the Belgian frontier to Liège and continued to Charleroi, and a second line drawn from Liège to Malines, a sort of figure resembling an irregular Y will be formed. It is along this Y that most of the systematic (as opposed to isolated) outrages were committed. If the period from August 4th to August 30th is taken it will be found to cover most of these organised outrages. Termonde and Alost extend, it is true, beyond the Y lines, and they belong to the month of September. Murder, rape, arson and pillage began from the moment when the German army crossed the frontier. For the first fortnight of the war the towns and villages near Liège were the chief sufferers. From the 19th of August to the end of the month, outrages spread in the directions of Charleroi and Malines and reach their period of greatest intensity. There is a certain significance in the fact that the outrages round Liège coincide with the unexpected resistance of the Belgian Army in that district, and that the slaughter which reigned from the 19th August to the end of the month is contemporaneous with the period when the German army's need for a quick passage through Belgium at all costs was deemed imperative.

Here let a distinction be drawn between two classes of outrages.

Individual acts of brutality—ill-treatment of civilians, rape, plunder, and the like—were very widely committed. These are more numerous and more shocking than would be expected in warfare between civilised Powers, but they differ rather in extent

than in kind from what has happened in previous though not recent wars.

In all wars many shocking and outrageous acts must be expected, for in every large army there must be a proportion of men of criminal instincts whose worst passions are unloosed by the immunity which the conditions of warfare afford. Drunkenness, moreover, may turn even a soldier, who has no criminal habits, into a brute, who may commit outrages at which he would himself be shocked in his sober moments, and there is evidence that intoxication was extremely prevalent among the German army, both in Belgium and in France, for plenty of wine was to be found in the villages and country houses which were pillaged. Many of the worst outrages appear to have been perpetrated by men under the influence of drink.

Unfortunately little seems to have been done to repress this source of danger.

In the present war, however—and this is the gravest charge against the German army—the evidence shows that the killing of non-combatants was carried out to an extent for which no previous war between nations claiming to be civilised (for such cases as the atrocities perpetrated by the Turks on the Bulgarian Christians in 1876, and on the Armenian Christians in 1895 and 1896, do not belong to that category) furnishes any precedent. That this killing was done as part of a deliberate plan is clear from the facts hereinbefore set forth regarding Louvain, Aerschot, Dinant, and other towns. The killing was done under orders in each place. It began at a certain fixed date, and stopped (with some few exceptions) at another fixed date. Some of the officers who carried out the work did it reluctantly, and said they were obeying directions from their chiefs. The same remarks apply to the destruction of property. House burning was part of the programme; and villages, even large parts of a city, were given to the flames as part of the terrorising policy.

Citizens of neutral states who visited Belgium in December and January report that the German authorities do not deny that non-combatants were systematically killed in large numbers during the first weeks of the invasion, and this, so far as we know, has never been officially denied. If it were denied, the flight and continued voluntary exile of thousands of Belgian refugees would go far to contradict a denial, for there is no historical parallel in modern times for the flight of a large part of a

nation before an invader.

The German Government have, however, sought to justify their severities on the grounds of military necessity, and have excused them as retaliation for cases in which civilians fired on German troops. There may have been cases in which such firing occurred, but no proof has ever been given, or, to our knowledge, attempted to be given, of such cases, nor of the stories of shocking outrages perpetrated by Belgian men and women on German soldiers.

The inherent improbability of the German contention is shown by the fact that after the first few days of the invasion every possible precaution had been taken by the Belgian authorities, by way of placards and hand-bills, to warn the civilian population not to intervene in hostilities. Throughout Belgium steps had been taken to secure the handing over of all firearms in the possession of civilians before the German army arrived. These steps were sometimes taken by the police and some-

times by the military authorities.

The invaders appear to have proceeded upon the theory that any chance shot coming from an unexpected place was fired by civilians. One favourite form of this allegation was that priests had fired from the church tower. In many instances the soldiers of the allied armies used church towers and private houses as cover for their operations. At Aerschot, where the Belgian soldiers were stationed in the church tower and fired upon the Germans as they advanced, it was at once alleged by the Germans when they entered the town, and with difficulty disproved, that the firing had come from civilians. Thus one elementary error creeps at once into the German argument, for they were likely to confound, and did in some instances certainly confound, legitimate military operations with the hostile intervention of civilians.

Troops belonging to the same army often fire by mistake upon each other. That the German army was no exception to this rule is proved not only by many Belgian witnesses but by the most irrefragable kind of evidence, the admission of German soldiers themselves recorded in their war diaries. Thus Otto Clepp, 2nd Company of the Reserve, says, under date 22nd of August: "3 a.m. Two infantry regiments "shot at each other—9 dead and 50 wounded—fault not yet ascertained." In this connection the diaries of Kurt Hoffmann, and a soldier of the 112th Regiment (diary No. 14) will repay study. In such cases the obvious interest of the soldier is to conceal his mistake, and a convenient method of doing so is to raise the cry of "francs-tireurs."

Doubtless the German soldiers often believed that the civilian population, naturally hostile, had in fact attacked them. This attitude of mind may have been fostered by the German authorities themselves before the troops passed the frontier, and thereafter stories of alleged atrocities committed by Belgians upon Germans such as the myth referred to in one of the diaries relating to Liège, were circulated amongst the troops and roused their anger.

The diary of Barthel when still in Germany on the 10th of August shows that he believed that the Oberburgomaster of Liège had murdered a surgeon general. The fact is that no violence was inflicted on the inhabitants at Liège until the 19th, and no one who studies these pages can have any doubt that Liège would immediately have been given over to murder and destruction if any such incident had occurred.

Letters written to their homes which have been found on the bodies of dead Germans, bear witness, in a way that now sounds pathetic, to the kindness with which they were received by the civil population. Their evident surprise at this reception was due to the stories which had been dinned into their ears of soldiers with their eyes gouged out, treacherous murders, and poisoned food, stories which may have been encouraged by the higher military authorities in order to impress the mind of the troops as well as for the sake of justifying the measures which they took to terrify the civil population. If there is any truth in such stories, no attempt has been made to establish it. For instance, the Chancellor of the German Empire, in a communication made to the press on September 2 and printed in the "Nord Deutsche Allgemeine Zeitung," of September 21, said as follows: "Belgian girls gouged out the eyes of the German wounded. Officials of Belgian cities have invited our officers to dinner and shot and killed them across the table. "Contrary to all international law, the whole civilian population of Belgium was "called out, and after having at first shown friendliness, carried on in the rear of our troops terrible warfare with concealed weapons. Belgian women cut the throats of soldiers whom they had quartered in their homes while they were sleeping."

No evidence whatever seems to have been adduced to prove these tales and though there may be cases in which individual Belgians fired on the Germans, the statement that "the whole civilian population of Belgium was called out" is utterly opposed to the fact.

An invading army may be entitled to shoot at sight a civilian caught redhanded, or any one who though not caught redhanded is proved guilty on enquiry. But this was not the practice followed by the German troops. They do not seem to have made any enquiry. They seized the civilians of the village indiscriminately and killed them, or such as they selected from among them, without the least regard to guilt

or innocence. The mere cry "Civilisten haben geschossen" was enough to hand over a whole village or district and even outlying places to ruthless slaughter.

We gladly record the instances where the evidence shows that humanity had not wholly disappeared from some members of the German Army and that they realized that the responsible heads of that organisation were employing them, not in war but in butchery: "I am merely executing orders, and I should be shot if I did not execute them," said an officer to a witness at Louvain. At Brussels another officer says: "I have not done one hundredth part of what we have been ordered to do by the High "German military authorities."

As we have already observed it would be unjust to charge upon the German army generally acts of cruelty which, whether due to drunkenness or not, were done by men of brutal instincts and unbridled passions. Such crimes were sometimes punished by the officers. They were in some cases offset by acts of humanity and kindliness. But when an army is directed or permitted to kill non-combatants on a large scale, the ferocity of the worse natures springs into fuller life, and both lust and the thirst of blood become more widespread and more formidable. Had less licence been allowed to the soldiers, and had they not been set to work to slaughter civilians, there would have been fewer of those painful cases in which a depraved and morbid

cruelty appears.

outbursts of passion or rapacity.

Two classes of murders in particular require special mention, because one of them is almost new, and the other altogether unprecedented. The former is the seizure of peaceful citizens as so-called hostages to be kept as a pledge for the conduct of the civil population, or as a means to secure some military advantage, or to compel the payment of a contribution, the hostages being shot if the condition imposed by the arbitrary will of the invader is not fulfilled. Such hostage taking, with the penalty of death attached, has now and then happened, the most notable case being the shooting of the Archbishop of Paris and some of his clergy by the Communards of Paris in 1871, but it is opposed both to the rules of war and to every principle of justice and humanity. The latter kind of murder is the killing of the innocent inhabitants of a village because shots have been fired, or are alleged to have been fired, on the troops by someone in the village. For this practice no previous example and no justification has been or can be pleaded. Soldiers suppressing an insurrection may have sometimes slain civilians mingled with insurgents, and Napoleon's forces in Spain are said to have now and then killed promiscuously when trying to clear guerillas out of a village. But in Belgium large bodies of men, sometimes including the burgomaster and the priest, were seized, marched by officers to a spot chosen for the purpose, and there shot in cold blood, without any attempt at trial or even inquiry, under the pretence of inflicting punishment upon the village, though these unhappy victims were not even charged with having themselves committed any wrongful act, and though, in some cases at least, the village authorities had done all in their power to prevent any molestation of the invading force. Such acts are no part of war, for innocence is entitled to respect even in war. They are mere murders, just as the drowning of the innocent passengers and crews on a merchant ship is murder and not an act of war.

That these acts should have been perpetrated on the peaceful population of an unoffending country which was not at war with its invaders but merely defending its own neutrality, guaranteed by the invading Power, may excite amazement and even incredulity. It was with amazement and almost with incredulity that the Committee first read the depositions relating to such acts. But when the evidence regarding Liège was followed by that regarding Aerschot, Louvain, Andenna Dinant, and the other towns and villages, the cumulative effect of such a mass of concurrent testimony became irresistible, and we were driven to the conclusion that the things described had really happened. The question then arose how they could have happened. Not from mere military licence, for the discipline of the German army is proverbially stringent, and its obedience implicit. Not from any special ferocity of the troops, for whoever has travelled among the German peasantry knows that they are as kindly and good natured as any people in Europe, and those who can recall the war of 1870 will remember that no charges resembling those proved by these depositions were then established. The excesses recently committed in Belgium were moreover too widespread and too uniform in their character to be mere sporadic

The explanation seems to be that these excesses were committed—in some cases ordered, in others allowed—on a system and in pursuance of a set purpose. That purpose was to strike terror into the civil population and dishearten the Belgian

k 10.

troops, so as to crush down resistance and extinguish the very spirit of self-defence. The pretext that civilians had fired upon the invading troops was used to justify not merely the shooting of individual francs-tireurs, but the murder of large numbers of innocent civilians, an act absolutely forbidden by the rules of civilised warfare.*

In the minds of Prussian officers War seems to have become a sort of sacred mission, one of the highest functions of the omnipotent State, which is itself as much an Army as a State. Ordinary morality and the ordinary sentiment of pity vanish in its presence, superseded by a new standard which justifies to the soldier every means that can conduce to success, however shocking to a natural sense of justice and humanity, however revolting to his own feelings. The Spirit of War is deified. Obedience to the State and its War Lord leaves no room for any other duty or feeling. Cruelty becomes legitimate when it promises victory. Proclaimed by the heads of the army, this doctrine would seem to have permeated the officers and affected even the private soldiers, leading them to justify the killing of non-combatants as an act of war, and so accustoming them to slaughter that even women and children become at last the victims. It cannot be supposed to be a national doctrine, for it neither springs from nor reflects the mind and feelings of the German people as they have heretofore been known to other nations. It is a specifically military doctrine, the outcome of a theory held by a ruling easte who have brooded and thought, written and talked and dreamed about War until they have fallen under its obsession and been hypnotized by its spirit.

The doctrine is plainly set forth in the German Official Monograph on the usages of War on land, issued under the direction of the German staff. This book is pervaded throughout by the view that whatever military needs suggest becomes thereby lawful,

and upon this principle, as the diaries show, the German officers acted.†

If this explanation be the true one, the mystery is solved, and that which seemed searcely credible becomes more intelligible though not less pernicious. This is not the only case that history records in which a false theory, disguising itself as loyalty to a State or to a Church, has perverted the conception of Duty, and become a source of danger to the world.

PART II.

Having thus narrated the offences committed in Belgium, which it has been proper to consider as a whole, we now turn to another branch of the subject, the breaches of the usages of war which appear in the conduct of the German army generally.

This branch has been considered under the following heads:-

First. The treatment of non-combatants, whether in Belgium or in France, including—

- (a) the killing of non-combatants in France;
- (b) the treatment of women and children;
- (c) the using of innocent non-combatants as a screen or shield in the conduct of military operations;
- (d) looting, burning, and the wanton destruction of property.

Secondly. Offences, committed in the course of ordinary military operations, which violate the usages of war and the provisions of the Hague Convention.

This division includes—

- (a) killing the wounded or prisoners;
- (b) firing on hospitals or on the Red Cross ambulances and stretcher bearers;
- (c) abuse of the Red Cross or of the White Flag.

* As to this, see in Appendix the Rules of the Hague Convention of 1907, to which Germany was a

[†] Kriegsbranch im Landhriege, Berlin, 1902, in Vol. VI., in the series entitled Kriegsgeschichtliche Einzelschriften, published in 1905. A translation of this monograph by Professor J. H. Morgan has recently been published,

TREATMENT OF THE CIVILIAN POPULATION.

(a) KILLING OF NON-COMBATANTS.

The killing of civilians in Belgium has been already described sufficiently. Outrages on the civilian population of the invaded districts, the burning of villages, the shooting of innocent inhabitants and the taking of hostages, pillage and destruction continued as the German armies passed into France. The diary of the Saxon officer Printed at above referred to describes acts of this kind committed by the German soldiers in end of advancing to the Aisne at the end of August and after they had passed the French Appendix B. frontier, as well as when they were in Belgian territory.

A proclamation (a specimen of which was produced to the Committee) issued at Reims, and placarded over the town, affords a clear illustration of the methods adopted by the German Higher Command. The population of Reims is warned that on the slightest disturbance part or the whole of the city will be burnt to the ground and all the hostages taken from the city (a long list of whom is given in the proclamation) immediately shot.

The evidence, however, submitted to the Committee with regard to the conduct of the German army in France is not nearly so full as that with regard to Belgium. There is no body of civilian refugees in England, and the French witnesses have generally laid their evidence before their own Government. The evidence forwarded to us consists principally of the statements of British officers and soldiers who took part in the retreat after the battle of Mons and in the subsequent advance, following the Germans from the Marne. The area covered is relatively small, and it is from French reports that any complete account of what occurred in the invaded

districts in France as a whole must be obtained.

Naturally soldiers in a foreign country with which they were unacquainted, cannot be expected always to give accurately the names of villages through which they passed on their marches, but this does not prevent their evidence from being definite as to what they actually saw in the farms and houses where the German troops had recently been. Many shocking outrages are recorded. Three examples here may suffice, others are given in the Appendix. A sergeant who had been through the retreat from Mons, and then taken part in the advance from the Marne and who had been engaged in driving out some German troops from a village, states that his troop halted outside a bakery just inside the village. It was a private house where baking was done, "not like our bakeries here." Two or three women were standing at the door. The women motioned them to come into the house, as did also three civilian Frenchmen who were there. They took them into a garden at the back of the house. At the end of the garden was the bakery. They saw two old men—between 60 and 70 years of age—and one old woman lying close to each other in the garden. All three had the scalps cut right through and the brains were hanging out. They were still them to understand that these three had been killed by the Germans because they had refused to bake bread for them.

Another witness states that two German and December 2011.

named D. and bound his hands behind his back, and struck him in the face with their tists. They then tied his hands in front and fastened the cord to the tail of the horse. The horse dragged him for about 50 yards and then the Germans loosened his hands and left him. The whole of his face was cut and torn and his arms and legs were bruised. On the following day one of his sisters, whose husband was a soldier, came to their house with her four children. His brother, who was also married and who lived in a village near Valenciennes, went to fetch the bread for his sister. On the way back to their house he met a patrol of Uhlans, who took him to the market place at Valenciennes and then shot him. About 12 other civilians were also shot in the market place. The Uhlans then burned 19 houses in the village, and afterwards burned the corpses of the civilians, including that of his brother. His father and his uncle afterwards went to see the dead body of his brother, but the German soldiers

refused to allow them to pass.

A lance corporal in the Rifles, who was on patrol duty with five privates during the retirement of the Germans after the Marne, states that they entered a house in a small village and took ten Uhlans prisoners and then searched the house and found two women and two children. One was dead, but the body not yet cold. The left

Langed

arm had been cut off just below the elbow. The floor was covered with blood. The woman's clothing was disarranged. The other woman was alive but unconscious. Her right leg had been cut off above the knee. There were two little children, a boy about 4 or 5 and a girl of about 6 or 7. The boy's left hand was cut off at the wrist and the girl's right hand at the same place. They were both quite dead. The same witness states that he saw several women and children lying dead in various other places, but says he could not say whether this might not have been accidentally caused in legitimate fighting.

The evidence before us proves that in the parts of France referred to murder of unoffending civilians and other acts of cruelty, including aggravated cases of rape, carried out under threat of death, and sometimes actually followed by murder of the

victim, were committed by some of the German troops.

(b) THE TREATMENT OF WOMEN AND CHILDREN.

The evidence shows that the German authorities, when carrying out a policy of systematic arson and plunder in selected districts, usually drew some distinction between the adult male population on the one hand and the women and children on the other. It was a frequent practice to set apart the adult males of the condemned district with a view to the execution of a suitable number -- preferably of the younger and more vigorous--and to reserve the women and children for milder treatment. The depositions, however, present many instances of calculated cruelty, often going the length of murder, towards the women and children of the condemned area. We have already referred to the case of Aerschot, where the women and children were herded in a church which had recently been used as a stable, detained for 48 hours with no food other than coarse bread, and denied the common decencies of life. At Dinant 60 women and children were confined in the cellar of a convent from Sunday morning till the following Friday (August 28th), sleeping on the ground, for there were no beds, with nothing to drink during the whole period, and given no food until the Wednesday, "when somebody threw into "the cellar two sticks of macaroni and a carrot for each prisoner." In other cases the women and children were marched for long distances along roads (e.g., march of women from Louvain to Tirlemont, 28th August), the laggards pricked on by the attendant Uhlans. A lady complains of having been brutally kicked by privates. Others were struck with the butt end of rifles. At Louvain, at Liège, at Aerschot, at Malines, at Montigny, at Andenne, and elsewhere, there is evidence that the troops were not restrained from drunkenness, and drunken soldiers cannot be trusted to observe the rules or decencies of war, least of all when they are called upon to execute a pre-ordained plan of arson and pillage. From the very first women were not safe. At Liège women and children were chased about the street by soldiers. A witness gives a story, very circumstantial in its details, of how women were publicly raped in the market place of the city, five young German officers assisting. At Aerschot men and women were deliberately shot when coming out of burning houses. At Liège, Louvain, Sempst. and Malines, women were burned to death, either because they were surprised and stupefied by the fumes of the conflagration, or because they were prevented from escaping by German soldiers. Witnesses recount how a great crowd of men, women, and children from Aerschot were marched to Louvain, and then suddenly exposed to a fire from a mitrailleuse and rifles. "We were all placed," recounts a sufferer, "in Station Street, Louvain, and the German soldiers fired on us. I saw the corpses of some women in the street. I fell down, and a woman who had been shot fell on top of me." Women and children suddenly turned out into the streets, and compelled to witness the destruction by fire of their homes, provided a sad spectacle to such as were sober enough to see. A humane German officer, witnessing the ruin of Aerschot, exclaims in disgust: "I am a father myself, and I cannot bear It is not war, but butchery." Officers as well as men succumbed to the temptation of drink, with results which may be illustrated by an incident which occurred at Campenhout. In this village there was a certain well-to-do merchant (name given), who had a good cellar of champagne. On the afternoon of the 14th or 15th August, three German cavalry officers entered the house and demanded champagne. Having drunk ten bottles, and invited five or six officers and three or four private soldiers to join them, they continued their carouse, and then called for the master and mistress of the house: "Immediately my mistress came in," says the valet de chambre, "one of the officers who was sitting on the floor got up, and putting

e 36.

ъ 26.

e 27. c 12. e 8. e 13, e 17. a 27. e 7.

e 4.

d 1. b 18, b 2. a 28.

a 31. c 38. a 28. e 1, e 2. d. 71.

c 15. c 45.

e 3.

c. 46.

"a revolver to my mistress' temple shot her dead. The officer was obviously drunk. The other officers continued to drink and sing, and they did not pay great " attention to the killing of my mistress. The officer who shot my mistress then told " my master to dig a grave and bury my mistress. My master and the officer went "into the garden, the officer threatening my master with a pistol. My master was then forced to dig the grave, and to bury the body of my mistress in it. I cannot " say for what reason they killed my mistress. The officer who did it was singing all " the time."

In the evidence before us there are cases tending to show that aggravated crimes against women were sometimes severely punished. One witness reports that a young girl who was being pursued by a drunken soldier at Louvain appealed to a German officer, and that the offender was then and there shot: another describes how an officer of the 32nd Regiment of the line was led out to execution for the violation of two young girls, but reprieved at the request or with the consent of the girls' mother. These instances are sufficient to show that the maltreatment of women was no part of the military scheme of the invaders, however much it may appear to have been the inevitable result of the system of terror deliberately adopted in certain regions. Indeed, so much is avowed: "I asked the commander why we had been spared," says a lady in Louvain, who deposes to having suffered much brutal treatment during the sack. He said, "We will not hurt you any more. Stay in Louvain. All is finished." It was Saturday, August 29th, and the reign of terror was over.

Apart from the crimes committed in special areas and belonging to a scheme of systematic reprisals for the alleged shooting by civilians, there is evidence of offences committed against women and children by individual soldiers, or by small groups of soldiers, both in the advance through Belgium and France as in the retreat from the Marne. Indeed, the discipline appears to have been loose during the retreat, and there is evidence as to the burning of villages, and the murder and violation of their female inhabitants during this episode of the war.

In this tale of horrors hideous forms of mutilation occur with some frequency in the depositions, two of which may be connected in some instances with a perverted form of sexual instinct.

A third form of mutilation, the cutting of one or both hands, is frequently said to have taken place. In some cases where this form of mutilation is alleged to have occurred it may be the consequence of a cavalry charge up a village street, hacking and d 25, &c., &c. slashing at everything in the way; in others the victim may possibly have held a

weapon, in others the motive may have been the theft of rings.

We find many well-established cases of the slaughter (often accompanied by mutilation) of whole families, including not infrequently that of quite small children. In two cases it seems to be clear that preparations were made to burn a family alive. These crimes were committed over a period of many weeks and simultaneously in many places, and the authorities must have known or ought to have known that cruelties of this character were being perpetrated, nor can anyone doubt that they could have been stopped by swift and decisive action on the part of the heads of the

The use of women and even children as a screen for the protection of the German troops is referred to in a later part of this Report. From the number of troops concerned, it must have been commanded or acquiesced in by officers, and in some

cases the presence and connivance of officers is proved.

The cases of violation, sometimes under threat of death, are numerous and clearly proved. We referred here to comparatively few out of the many that have been placed in the Appendix, because the circumstances are in most instances much the same. They were often accompanied with cruelty, and the slaughter of women after violation is more than once credibly attested.

It is quite possible that in some cases where the body of a Belgian or a French woman is reported as lying in the roadside pierced with bayonet wounds or hanging naked from a tree, or else as lying gashed and mutilated in a cottage kitchen or bedroom, the woman in question gave some provocation. She may by act or word have irritated her assailant, and in certain instances evidence has been supplied both as to the provocation offered and as to the retribution inflicted:

(1) "Just before we got to Melen," says a witness, who had fallen into the hands of the Germans on August 5th, "I saw a woman with a child in her arms " standing on the side of the road on our left-hand side watching the soldiers 66 go by. Her name was G , aged about sixty-three, and a neighbour of e 13.

a 32.

e. 13.

11.

a 22. b 5. c 36. d 1. c 59. d 2.

d 36, d 37. d. 99. 12, 13. k 6, k 7.

a 9, a 21. a 31, a 33. e 33, 39, 52, 53, 56, 57. d. 22, &c.

a 4.

mine. The officer asked the woman for some water in good French. went inside her son's cottage to get some and brought it immediately he

had stopped. The officer went into the cottage garden and drank the water. "The woman then said, when she saw the prisoners, 'Instead of giving you "water you deserve to be shot.' The officer shouted to us 'March.'

" went in and immediately I saw the officer draw his revolver and shoot the

" woman and child. One shot killed both."

(2) Two old men and one old woman refused to bake bread for the Germans. They are butchered. (See above p. 29.)

(3) 23rd August. I went with two friends (names given) to see what we could d. 130.

see. About three hours out of Malines we were taken prisoners by a German patrol—an officer and six men—and marched off into a little wood of saplings, where there was a house. The officer spoke Flemish. He knocked at the door; the peasant did not come. The officer ordered the soldiers to break down the door, which two of them did. The peasant came and asked what they were doing. The officer said he did not come quickly enough, and that they had "trained up" plenty of others. His hands were tied behind his back, and he was shot at once without a moment's delay. The wife came out with a little sucking child. She put the child down and sprang at the Germans like a lioness. She clawed their faces. One of the Germans took a rifle and struck her a tremendous blow with < the butt on the head. Another took his bayonet and fixed it and thrust it through the child. He then put his rifle on his shoulder with the child up it, its little arms stretched out once or twice. The officers ordered the house to be set on fire, and straw was obtained, and it was done. The man and his wife and the child were thrown on the top of the straw. There were about 40 other peasant prisoners there also, and the officer said: "I " am doing this as a lesson and example to you. When a German tells "you to do something next time you must move more quickly." The regiment of Germans was a regiment of Hussars, with cross-bones and a

Can anyone think that such acts as these, committed by women in the circumstances created by the invasion of Belgium, were deserving of the extreme form

of vengeance attested by these and other depositions?

death's head on the cap.

In considering the question of provocation it is pertinent to take into account the numerous cases in which old women and very small children have been shot, bayonetted, and even mutilated. Whatever excuse may be offered by the Germans for the killing, of grown-up women, there can be no possible defence for the murder of children, and if it can be shown that infants and small children were not infrequently bayonetted and shot it is a fair inference that many of the offences against women require no explanation more recondite than the unbridled violence of brutal or drunken criminals.

It is clearly shown that many offences were committed against infants and quite young children. On one occasion children were even roped together and used as a military screen against the enemy, on another three soldiers went into action carrying small children to protect themselves from flank fire. A shocking case of the murder of a baby by a drunken soldier at Malines is thus recorded by one eye-witness and

confirmed by another:

"One day when the Germans were not actualling bombarding the town I left my house to go to my mother's house in High Street. My husband was with me. I saw eight German soldiers, and they were drunk. They were singing and making a lot of noise and dancing about. As the German soldiers came along the street I saw a small child, whether boy or girl I could not see, come out of a house. The child was The child came into the middle of the street so as to be in about two years of age. The child came into the middle of the street so as to be in the way of the soldiers. The soldiers were walking in twos. The first line of two passed the child; one of the second line, the man on the left, stepped aside and drove his bayonet with both hands into the child's stomach, lifting the child into the air on his bayonet and carrying it away on his bayonet, he and his comrades still The child screamed when the soldier struck it with his bayonet, but not singing. afterwards.'

These, no doubt, were for the most part the acts of drunken soldiers, but an incident has been recorded which discloses the fact that even sober and highly-placed officers were not always disposed to place a high value on child life. Thus the General wishing to be conducted to the Town Hall at Lebbeke, remarked in French

DO11 11 2 -

d 4.

f 2.

to his guide, who was accompanied by a small boy: "If you do not show me "the right way I will shoot you and your boy." There was no need to carry the threat into execution, but that the threat should have been made is

significant.

We cannot tell whether these acts of cruelty to children were part of the scheme for inducing submission by inspiring terror. In Louvain, where the system of terrorising was carried to the furthest limit, outrages on children were uncommon. The same, however, cannot be said of some of the smaller villages which were subjected to the system. In Hofstade and Sempst, in Haecht, Rotselaer and Wespelaer, many children were murdered. Nor can it be said of the village of Tamines where three small children (whose names are given by an eye-witness of the crime) were slaughtered on the green for no apparent motive. It is difficult to imagine the motives which may have prompted such acts. Whether or no Belgian civilians fired on German soldiers, young children at any rate did not fire. The number and character of these murders constitute the most distressing feature connected with the conduct of the war so far as it is revealed in the depositions submitted to the Committee.

(c) THE USE OF CIVILIANS AS SCREENS.

We have before us a considerable body of evidence with reference to the practice of the Germans of using civilians and sometimes military prisoners as screens from behind which they could fire upon the Belgian troops in the hope that the Belgians would not return the fire for fear of killing or wounding their own fellow countrymen.

In some cases this evidence refers to places where fighting was actually going on in the streets of a town or village, and to these cases we attach little importance. It might well happen when terrified civilians were rushing about to seek safety, that groups of them might be used as a screen by either side of the combatants without any intention of inhumanity or of any breach of the rules of civilised warfare. But setting aside these doubtful cases, there remains evidence which satisfies us that on so many occasions as to justify its being described as a practice, the German soldiers, under the eyes and by the direction of their officers, were guilty of this act.

Thus, for instance, outside Fort Fléron, near Liège, men and children were marched

in front of the Germans to prevent the Belgian soldiers from firing.

The progress of the Germans through Mons was marked by many incidents of this character. Thus, on the 22nd August, half a dozen Belgian colliers returning from work were marching in front of some German troops who were pursuing the English, and in the opinion of the witnesses they must have been placed there intentionally. An English officer describes how he caused a barricade to be erected in a main thoroughfare leading out of Mons, when the Germans in order to reach a cross road in the rear, fetched civilians out of the houses on each side of the main road and compelled them to hold up white flags and act as cover.

Another British officer who saw this incident is convinced that the Germans were acting deliberately for the purpose of protecting themselves from the fire of the British troops. Apart from this protection, the Germans could not have advanced, as the street was straight and commanded by the British rifle fire at a range of 700 or 800 yards. Several British soldiers also speak to this incident, and their story is

confirmed by a Flemish witness in a side street.

On the 24th August, men, women, and children were actually pushed into the front of the German position outside Mons. The witness speaks of 16 to 20 women, about a dozen children, and half a dozen men being there.

Seven or eight women and five or six very young children were utilised in this way

by some Uhlans between Landrécies and Guise.

A Belgian soldier saw an incident of this character during the retreat from Namur.

At the battle of Malines, 60 or 80 Belgian civilians, amongst whom were some women, were driven before the German troops. Another witness saw a similar incident near Malines, but a much larger number of civilians was involved, and a priest was in front with a white flag.

In another instance, related by a Belgian soldier, the civilians were tied by the

wrists in groups

At Eppeghem, where the Germans were driven back by the Belgian sortic from Antwerp, civilians were used as a cover for the German retreat.

Near Malines, early in September, about 10 children roped together, were driven in

front of a German force.

b. 14.

g 1.

g 3 to g 9.

g 11.

g 14.

g 15.

g 16.

g 17.

10

g 19.

g 20.

g 21.

At Londerzeel 30 or 40 civilians, men, women and children, were placed at the g 22. head of a German column.

One witness from Termonde was made to stand in front of the Germans, together f 9. with others, all with their hands above their heads. Those who allowed their hands to drop were at once prodded with the bayonet. Again at Termonde about September g 24. the 10th, a number of civilians were shot by the Belgian soldiers who were compelled to fire at the Germans, taking the risk of killing their own countrymen.

At Tournai, 400 Belgian civilians, men, women and children, were placed in front

of the Germans who then engaged the French.

The operations outside Antwerp were not free from incidents of this character. g 26, g 27, g 31. Near Willebroeck some civilians, including a number of children, a woman and one old man, were driven in front of the German troops. German officers were present, and one woman who refused to advance was stabbed twice with the bayonet, and a little child who ran up to her as she fell had half its head blown away by a shot from a rifle.

Other incidents of the same kind are reported from Nazareth and Ypres. The British troops were compelled to fire, in some cases at the risk of killing civilians.

At Ypres the Germans drove women in front of them by pricking them with bayonets. The wounds were afterwards seen by the witness.

(d) Looting, Burning, and Destruction of Property.

There is an overwhelming mass of evidence of the deliberate destruction of private e 14, d 34. property by the German soldiers. The destruction in most cases was effected by fire, and the German troops, as will be seen from earlier passages in the Report, had been provided beforehand with appliances for rapidly setting fire to houses. Among the appliances enumerated by witnesses are syringes for squirting petrol, guns for throwing small inflammable bombs, and small pellets made of inflammable material. Specimens of the last mentioned have been shown to members of the Committee. Besides burning houses the Germans frequently smashed furniture and pictures; they also broke in doors and windows. Frequently, too, they defiled houses by relieving the wants of nature upon the floor. They also appear to have perpetrated the same vileness upon piled up heaps of provisions so as to destroy what they could not themselves consume. They also on numerous occasions threw corpses into wells,

or left in them the bodies of persons murdered by drowning.

In addition to these acts of destruction, the German troops both in Belgium and France are proved to have been guilty of persistent looting. In the majority of cases the looting took place from houses, but there is also evidence that German soldiers and even officers robbed their prisoners, both civil and military, of sums of money and other portable possessions. It was apparently well known throughout the German army that towns and villages would be burned whenever it appeared that any civilians had fired upon the German troops, and there is reason to suspect that this known intention of the German military authorities in some cases explains the sequence of events which led up to the burning and sacking of a town or village. The soldiers, knowing that they would have an opportunity of plunder if the place was condemned, had a motive for arranging some incident which would provide the necessary excuse for condemnation. More than one witness alleges that shots coming from the window of a house were fired by German soldiers who had forced their way into the house for the purpose of thus creating an alarm. It is also alleged that German soldiers on some occasions merely fired their rifles in the air in a side street and then reported to their officers that they had been fired at. On the report that firing had taken place orders were given for wholesale destruction, and houses were destroyed in streets and districts where there was no allegation that firing had taken place, as well as in those where the charge arose. That the destruction could have been limited is proved by the care taken to preserve particular houses whose occupants had made themselves in These houses were marked in chalk one way or another agreeable to the conquerors. ordering them to be spared, and spared they were.

The above statements have reference to the burning of towns and villages, addition, the German troops in numerous instances have set fire to farmhouses and farm buildings. Here, however, the plea of military necessity can more safely be alleged. A farmhouse may afford convenient shelter to an enemy, and where such use is probable, it may be urged that the destruction of the buildings is justifiable. It is clearly, however, the duty of the soldiers who destroy the buildings to give

g 29. g 35.

g 23.

g 36.

a 16' a 28,

b 26. h 2. e 30 to e 33. d 103, 131,

> e 23. f 3. ь 26. f 2.

&c.

reasonable warning to the occupants so that they may escape. Doubtless this was in many cases done by the German commanders, but there is testimony that in some cases the burning of the farmhouse was accompanied by the murder of the inhabitants.

The same fact stands out clearly in the more extensive burning of houses in towns and villages. In some cases, indeed, as a prelude to the burning, inhabitants were cleared out of their houses and driven along the streets, often with much accompanying brutality—some to a place of execution, others to prolonged detention in a church or other public buildings. In other cases witnesses assert that they saw German soldiers forcing back into the flames men, women, and children, who were There is also evidence that soldiers trying to escape from the burning houses. deliberately shot down civilians as they fled from the fire.

The general conclusion is that the burning and destruction of property which took place was only in a very small minority of cases justified by military necessity, and that even then the destruction was seldom accompanied by that care for the lives of non-combatants which has hitherto been expected from a military commander belonging to a civilised nation. On the contrary, it is plain that in many cases German officers and soldiers deliberately added to the sufferings of the unfortunate

people whose property they were destroying.

OFFENCES AGAINST COMBATANTS.

(a) The Killing of the Wounded and of Prisoners.

In dealing with the treatment of the wounded and of prisoners and the cases in which the former appear to have been killed when helpless, and the latter at, or after, the moment of capture, we are met by some peculiar difficulties, because such acts may not in all cases be deliberate and cold-blooded violations of the usages of war. Soldiers who are advancing over a spot where the wounded have fallen may conceivably think that some of those lying prostrate are shamming dead, or, at any rate, are so slightly wounded as to be able to attack, or to fire from behind when the advancing force has passed, and thus they may be led into killing those whom they would otherwise have spared. There will also be instances in which men, intoxicated with the frenzy of battle, slay even those whom, on reflection, they might have seen to be incapable of further harming them. The same kind of fury may vent itself on persons who are already surrendering; and even a soldier who is usually self-controlled or humane, may, in the heat of the moment, go on killing, especially in a general melée, those who were offering to surrender. This is most likely to happen when such a soldier has been incensed by an act of treachery or is stirred to revenge by the death of a comrade to whom he is attached. Some cases of this kind appear in the evidence. Such things happen in all wars as isolated instances, and the circumstances may be pleaded in extenuation of We have made due allowance for these considerations, acts otherwise shocking. and have rejected those cases in which there is a reasonable doubt as to whether those h 2, h 6,h 11. who killed the wounded knew that the latter were completely disabled. Nevertheless, after making all allowances, there remain certain instances in which it is clear that quarter was refused to persons desiring to surrender when it ought to have been given, or that persons already so wounded as to be incapable of fighting further were wantonly shot or bayoneted.

The cases to which references are given all present features generally similar, and in several of them men who had been left wounded in the trenches when a trench was carried by the enemy were found, when their comrades subsequently re-took the trench, to have been slaughtered, although evidently helpless, or else they would have escaped with the rest of the retreating force. For instance, a witness says: "About September the 20th our regiment took part in an engagement with the Germans.

" After we had retired into our trenches a few minutes after we got back into them the "Germans retired into their trenches. The distance between the trenches of the opposing forces was about 400 yards. I should say about 50 or 60 of our men had " been left lying on the field from our trenches, there we got back to them I distinctly saw German soldiers come out of their trenches, go over the spots where "our men were lying, and bayonet them. Some of our men were lying nearly half "way between the trenches." Another says: "The Germans advanced over the "trenches of the headquarters trench where I had been on guard for three days.

"When the Germans reached our wounded I saw their officer using his sword to

h 15, h 16. h 20, h 31, h 32, h 34,

h 23.

h 28.

1 and

" cut them down." Another witness says: "Outside Ypres we were in trenches, and were attacked, and had to retire until reinforced by other companies of the Royal. "Engiliera. Then we took the trenches, and found the wounded between 20 and 20.

"Fusiliers. Then we took the trenches, and found the wounded, between 20 and 30, "Jying in the trenches with bayonet wounds, and some shot. Most of them, say, three

" quarters, had their throats cut."

In one case, given very circumstantially, a witness tells how a party of wounded British soldiers were left in a chalk pit, all very badly hurt, and quite unable to make resistance. One of them, an officer, held up his handkerchief as a white flag, and this "attracted the attention of a party of about eight Germans. The Germans came "to the edge of the pit. It was getting dusk, but the light was still good, and "everything clearly discernible. One of them, who appeared to be carrying no arms, "and who, at any rate, had no rifle, came a few feet down the slope into the chalk pit, within eight or ten yards of some of the wounded men." He looked at the men, laughed, and said something in German to the Germans who were waiting on the edge of the pit. Immediately one of them fired at the officer, then three or four of these ten soldiers were shot, then another officer, and the witness, and the rest of them. "After an interval of some time I sat up and found that I was the "only man of the ten who were living when the Germans came into the pit remaining "alive, and that all the rest were dead."

Another witness describes a painful case in which five soldiers, two Belgians and three French, were tied to trees by German soldiers apparently drunk, who stuck knives in their faces, pricked them with their bayonets, and ultimately shot them.

We have no evidence to show whether and in what cases orders proceeded from the officer in command to give no quarter, but there are some instances in which persons obviously desiring to surrender were nevertheless killed.

(b) Firing on Hospitals or on the Red Cross Ambulances or Stretcher-bearers.

This subject may conveniently be divided into three subdivisions, namely, firing on-

(1) Hospital buildings and other Red Cross establishments.

(2) Ambulances.

(3) Stretcher-bearers.

Under the first and second categories there is obvious difficulty in proving intention, especially under the conditions of modern long-range artillery fire. A commanding officer's duty is to give strict orders to respect hospitals, ambulances, &c., and also to place Red Cross units as far away as possible from any legitimate line of fire. But with all care some accidents must happen, and many reported cases will be ambiguous. At the same time, when military observers have formed a distinct opinion that buildings and persons under the recognisable protection of the Red Cross were wilfully fired upon, such opinions cannot be disregarded.

Between 30 and 40 of the depositions submitted related to this offence. This number does not in itself seem so great as to be inconsistent with the possibility

of accident.

In one case a Red Cross Depôt was shelled on most days throughout the week. This is hardly reconcilable with the enemy's gunners having taken any care to avoid it.

There are other cases of conspicuous hospitals being shelled, in the witnesses'

opinion, purposely

In one of these the witness, a sergeant-major, makes a suggestion which appears plausible, namely, that the German gunners use any conspicuous building as a mark to verify their ranges rather than for the purpose of destruction. It would be quite according to the modern system of what German writers call Kriegsräson to hold that the convenience of range-finding is a sufficient military necessity to justify disregarding any immunity conferred on a building by the Red Cross or otherwise. In any case, artillery fire on a hospital at such a moderate range as about 1,000 yards can hardly be thought accidental.

(2) As to firing on ambulances, the evidence is more explicit.

In one case the witness is quite clear that the ambulances were aimed at. In another case of firing at an ambulance train the range was quite short. In another a Belgian Red Cross party is stated to have been ambushed.

Morgan's On the whole we do not find proof of a general or systematic firing on hospitals statements or ambulances; but it is not possible to believe that much care was taken to Appendix E. avoid this.

h 49. ef. h 46.

h 18.

h 8.

h 38, h 44. h 47, h 49. h. 52.

38(a).

h 45. h 51. and see generally Professor Morgan's statements

(3) As to firing on stretcher-bearers in the course of trench warfare, the testimony is abundant, and the facts do not seem explicable by accident. It may be that sometimes the bearers were suspected of seeing too much; and it is plain from the general military policy of the German armies that very slight suspicion would be acted on in case of doubt.

h 40, h 41.

h 42.

h 43.

(c) Abuse of the Red Cross and of the White Flag.

The Red Cross.

Cases of the Red Cross being abused are much more definite.

h 56. h 59, h 60

There are several accounts of fire being opened, sometimes at very short range, by machine guns which had been disguised in a German Red Cross ambulance or car; this was aggravated in one case near Tirlemont by the German soldiers wearing Belgian uniform.

h 64, h 65.

Witness speaks also of a stretcher party with the Red Cross being used to cover an attack, and of a German Red Cross man working a machine gun.

h 58.

There is also a well-attested case of a Red Cross motor car being used to carry

ammunition under command of officers.

Unless all these statements are wilfully false, which the Committee sees no reason to believe, these acts must have been deliberate, and it does not seem possible that a Red Cross car could be equipped with a machine gun by soldiers acting without orders. There is also one case of firing from a cottage where the Red Cross flag was flying, and this could not be accidental.

On the whole, there is distinct evidence of the Red Cross having been deliberately misused for offensive purposes, and seemingly under orders, on some, though not

many, occasions.

Abuse of the White Flag.

Cases of this kind are numerous. It is possible that a small group of men may show a White Flag without authority from any proper officer, in which case their action is, of course, not binding on the rest of the platoon or other unit. But this will not apply to the case of a whole unit advancing as if to surrender, or letting the other side advance to receive the pretended surrender, and then opening fire. Under this head we find many depositions by British soldiers and several by officers. In some cases the firing was from a machine gun brought up under cover of the White Flag.

h 72, h 73. h 67, h 77. h 79, h 82.

The depositions taken by Professor Morgan in France strongly corroborate the

evidence collected in this country.

The case numbered h 70 may be noted as very clearly stated. The Germans, who had "put up a white flag on a lance and ceased fire," and thereby induced a company to advance in order to take them prisoners, "dropped the white flag and opened fire at a distance of 100 yards." This was near Nesle, on September the 6th, 1914. It seems clearly proved that in some divisions at least of the German army this practice is very common. The incidents as reported cannot be explained by unauthorised surrenders of small groups.

There is, in our opinion, sufficient evidence that these offences have been frequent, deliberate, and in many cases committed by whole units under orders. All the acts mentioned in this part of the Report are in contravention of the Hague Convention, signed by the Great Powers, including France, Germany, Great Britain, and the United States, in 1907, as may be seen by a reference to Appendix D., in which the provisions of that Convention relating to the conduct of war on land are set forth.

h 70.

CONCLUSIONS.

From the foregoing pages it will be seen that the Committee have come to a definite conclusion upon each of the heads under which the evidence has been classified.

It is proved—

(i) That there were in many parts of Belgium deliberate and systematically organised massacres of the civil population, accompanied by many isolated murders and other outrages.

E 4

- (ii) That in the conduct of the war generally innocent civilians, both men and women, were murdered in large numbers, women violated, and children murdered.
- (iii) That looting, house burning, and the wanton destruction of property were ordered and countenanced by the officers of the German Army, that elaborate provision had been made for systematic incendiarism at the very outbreak of the war, and that the burnings and destruction were frequent where no military necessity could be alleged, being indeed part of a system of general terrorization.
- (iv) That the rules and usages of war were frequently broken, particularly by the using of civilians, including women and children, as a shield for advancing forces exposed to fire, to a less degree by killing the wounded and prisoners, and in the frequent abuse of the Red Cross and the White Flag.

Sensible as they are of the gravity of these conclusions, the Committee conceive that they would be doing less than their duty if they failed to record them as fully established by the evidence. Murder, lust, and pillage prevailed over many parts of Belgium on a scale unparalleled in any war between civilised nations during the last three centuries.

Our function is ended when we have stated what the evidence establishes, but we may be permitted to express our belief that these disclosures will not have been made in vain if they touch and rouse the conscience of mankind, and we venture to hope that as soon as the present war is over, the nations of the world in council will consider what means can be provided and sanctions devised to prevent the recurrence of such horrors as our generation is now witnessing.

We are, &c.,

BRYCE.

F. POLLOCK.

EDWARD CLARKE.

KENELM E. DIGBY.

ALFRED HOPKINSON.

H. A. L. FISHER.

HAROLD COX.

FOREIGN OFFICE. Treaty Series, 1915.

No. 1.—Declaration between the United Kingdom, France, and Russia, engaging not to conclude Peace separately during the present European War. Signed at London,

5th September, 1914.

[Cd. 7737.] Price ½d., post free 1d.

No. 2.—Convention between the United Kingdom and France relating to Prizes captured during the present European War. Signed at London, 9th November, 1914.

[Cd. 7739.] Price 1d., post free 1½d.

No. 4.—Accession of Russia to the Convention of 9th November, 1914, between the

United Kingdom and France relating to Prizes captured during the present European War [Cd. 7858.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

Miscellaneous, 1914.

No. 5.—Despatch from His Majesty's Minister at Brussels enclosing a copy of the Belgian Law of 26th May, 1914, respecting Belgian Nationality.

[Cd. 7464.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 6.—Correspondence respecting the European Crisis.

[Cd. 7467.] Price 9d., post free $11\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 7.—Notes exchanged with the Netherlands Minister on the subject of Oil Properties in Mexico.

[Cd. 7468.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 8.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting the Rupture of

Diplomatic Relations with the German Government.

[Cd. 7445.] Price 1d., post free 1½d.

No. 9.—Despatches from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting an Official German Organisation for influencing the Press of other Countries.

[Cd. 7595.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d. No 10.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Vienna respecting the Rupture of Diplomatic Relations with the Austro-Hungarian Government.

[Cd. 7596.]. Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$.

11.—Documents respecting the Negotiations preceding the War, published by the Russian Government.

[Cd. 7626]. Price 3d., post free 4d.

No. 12. — Diplomatic Correspondence respecting the War, published by the Belgian Government.

[Cd. 7627.] Price $4\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 6d.

No. 13.—Correspondence respecting Events leading to the Rupture of Relations with Turkey.

[Cd. 7628.] Price 9d., post free $11\frac{1}{2}d.$

No. 14.--Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Constantinople, summarising events leading up to Rupture of Relations with Turkey, and Reply thereto.

[Cd. $77\overline{16}$.] Price $1\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 2d.

No. 15.—Diplomatic Correspondence respecting the War, published by the French

[Cd. 7717.] Price 1d., post free 4d.

Miscellaneous, 1915.

No. 1.--Despatch to Sir Henry Howard containing Instructions respecting his Mission to the Vatican.

[Cd. 7736.] Price ½d., post free Id.

No. 2.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Petrograd enclosing a Memorandum on the subject of the Temperance Measures adopted in Russia since the outbreak of the European War.

[Cd. 7738.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d. No. 3.—Letter of 31st July, 1914, from the President of the French Republic to the King respecting the European Crisis, and His Majesty's Reply of 1st August, 1914.

[Cd. 7812.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 5.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Treatment of German Prisoners of War and Interned Civilians in the United Kingdom.

[Cd. 7815.] Price 1d., post free 1½d.

No. 6.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Government respecting the Rights of Belligerents.

[Cd. 7816.] Price 3d., post free 4d.

No. 7.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Treatment of Prisoners of War and Interned Civilians in the United Kingdom and Germany, respectively.

[Cd. 7817.] Price 9½d., post free 1s.

No. 8.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Release of Interned Civilians, and the exchange of Diplomatic and Consular Officers, and of certain classes of Naval and Military Officers, Prisoners of War, in the United Kingdom and Germany, respectively.

[Cd. 7857.] Price 7½d., post free 9½d.

No. 9.—Notes exchanged with the Chilean Minister respecting the sinking of the German Cruiser Dresden in Chilean Territorial Waters.

[Cd. 7859.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

Presented to Parliament by Command of His Majesty.



LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C., PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST ENOFFLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN and SONS, Ltd., 29, Breams Buildings, Fetter Lane, E.C., and 29, Abingdon Street, S.W., and 54, St. Mary Street, Cardiff; or H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottish Branch), 23, Forth Street, Edinburgh; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C.

COMMITTEE ON ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.



APPENDIX

TO THE

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

Presented to Parliament by Command of His Majesty.



LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C., PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN AND SONS, Ltd., 29

P. S. KING & SON.

28, ABINGDON STREET, S.W Parliamentary Booksellers

Edwinders and leak index.

FORTH STREET, EDINBURGH; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin;

E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, LONDON, W.C.

1915.

[Cd. 7895.]

Price 1s. 9d.

GOVERNMENT PUBLICATIONS

(with the under-mentioned exceptions) can be purchased in the manner indicated on the first page of this wrapper.

Booksellers, and the accredited agents of Free Public Libraries, are entitled to a discount of 25 per cent. from published prices.

Hydrographical Publications of the Admiralty are sold by— J. D. Potter, 145, Minories, London, E.C.

Patent Office Publications are sold at—
The Patent Office, 25, Southampton Buildings, Chancery Lane, London, W.C.
(N.B.—Classified Abridgments of Patent Specifications are sold also by Wyman and Sons, Ltd.)

Ordnance Survey and Geological Survey Publications can be purchased from—
The Director General of the Ordnance Survey, Southampton; or
The Superintendent, Ordnance Survey, Dublin; or
Agents in most of the chief towns in the United Kingdom.
(N.B.—Small Scale Maps are, as a rule, procurable at Railway Bookstalls in England and Wales.)

The Journal of the Board of Agriculture and Fisheries is published monthly by the Board, at 4, Whitehall Place, London, S.W. Price 4d., post free.

The London Gazette is published on Tuesday and Friday evenings by Wyman and Sons, Ltd. Price 1s.

The following is a list of some recent Parliamentary and Official Publications:—

VIOLATION OF THE RIGHTS OF NATIONS AND OF THE LAWS AND CUSTOMS OF WAR IN BELGIUM.

Reports of the Official Commission of the Belgian Government.

Preface, "Pro luce et pro jure," by Monsieur J. Van Den Heuvel, Minister of State. Refers generally to:—Outrages committed by the German Soldiery; Proclamations issued by the German Commanders; Denials of the Outrages in the Appeal made to civilized nations by German Professors; the uniform character of the Atrocities proving that they were the deliberate manifestations of a policy and not the isolated acts of irresponsible creatures; the Violation, by Germany and Austria, of the Neutrality of Belgium; Requisitions, by the Germans, of Belgian property; Unjustifiable Bombardments of towns; Airship Bombardments of undefended localities; Execution of Hostages; Fines levied on towns, &c.; &c.

Names of the Commission of Enquiry.

Report of the Commission:—(1) Sack of Aerschot; Suburbs of Aerschot; Rethy.

(2) Sack of Louvain; Suburbs of Louvain and of Malines. (3) Sack of Louvain; Sack of Visé; Suburbs of Louvain, Malines, and Vilvorde. (4) Sack of Aerschot; Evidence as to Damage. (5) Sack of Aerschot and Louvain; Additional Evidence. (6) German Proclamations. (7) The use of Expanding Bullets by German Troops (illustrated); Maltreatment of Prisoners and Wounded; Maltreatment of Hospital Staff and Mis-use of the Red Cross; Maltreatment of the Civil Population; Women and Children placed in front of German Columns: Rembardment of open and undefended places. (8) Pillage and Executions in Belgian. Columns; Bombardment of open and undefended places. (8) Pillage and Executions in Belgian Luxemburg; Arrest of Hostages; Incendiarism; Executions; Rape. (9) Sack of Termonde (illustrated):—First Bombardment, Sack, and Pillage; Arrest of Civilians, Murders, and Executions; Re-occupation of Termonde by Belgian Troops; Second Bombardment; Final Destruction. (10) Report of the London Delegacy of the Commission of Enquiry (illustrated):—Civilians driven into the Firing Line; Imprisonment of Civilian Hostages; Massacres. (11) Incidents at Namur; Massacre at Tamines; Pillage and Massacre at Andenne; Sack of Dinant (illustrated); Massacres at Hastières and Surice. (12) General conclusions, with reply to German acquired and Appendix of Instructions to Relation Authorities issued as with reply to German accusations. Appendix:—Instructions to Belgian Authorities issued on 4th August 1914, and advice to Civilians. Extracts from the Pastoral Letter of His Eminence Cardinal Mercier, Archbishop of Malines, Primate of Belgium. Price 6d., post free 8½d.

PROTEST BY THE BELGIAN GOVERNMENT

against the German allegation that Belgium had forfeited her Neutrality before the Outbreak of War. Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$.

BELGIAN REFUGEES.

Questions arising in connection with the Reception and Employment of the Belgian Refugees in this Country.

FIRST REPORT of the Departmental Committee appointed by the President of the Local Government Board.

[Cd. 7750] of Session 1914-15. Price $6\frac{1}{2}d$., post free $8\frac{1}{2}d$.

MINUTES OF EVIDENCE taken before the Committee.

[Cd. 7779] of Session 1914-15. Price 1s. 10d., post free 2s. 2d.

COMMISSIONS AND COMMITTEES ON QUESTIONS ARISING OUT OF THE WAR.

LIST of certain Commissions and Committees set up to deal with Public Questions arising out of the War.

[Cd. 7855] of Session 1914-15. Price \(\frac{1}{2}d. \), post free 1d.



APPENDIX

g, 15.

TO THE

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

Presented to both Houses of Parliament by Command of His Majesty.



LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE
BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C.,
PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN and SONS, Ltd., 29, Breams Buildings, Fetter Lane, E.C., and 28, Abingdon Street, S.W., and 54, St. Mary Street, Cardiff; or H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottish Branch), 23, Forth Street, Edinburgh; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C.

1915.

[Cd. 7895.]

Price 1s. 9d.



LIST OF CONTENTS.

APPENDIX A Deposition	ons:—										PAG
Liège and District	-	-		-	~	-	-	-	-	_	1
Vallies of Meuse and	Sambre	-	~	-	-	_	_	_	_	con .	14
Aerschot, Malines, V						-			_	-	29
Louvain -	-	-	-	-	_	_		-	-	_	86
Termonde -	-	-	-		-		no.	_		_	108
Alost	-	-	_	-	-	-		-	_	_	111
The use of civilians	as a scree	en			_	-			-		117
Offences against com											
Killing, &c., wo	unded	-	-	-		-	-	-	-		125
Firing on hospit						_	-	-		-	135
Abuse of Red C	ross	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	-	138
Abuse of the W	hite Flag	r -	-	-	-		-	-	-	-	140
Miscellaneous statem	ents rela	ting to F	Belgium	-	-			-		-	144
France	-	-	-	9		-	-			-	155
Appendix B.—Diaries	40	da	-		-		-		-	-	161
APPENDIX C.—Proclama	tions	-	-	-	-		60	-	-		183
APPENDIX D.—Conventi	on conce	rning th	e laws a	nd custo	ms of w	ar on lai	nd	-	-	-	188
APPENDIX E.—Deposition	ns taken	and pap	pers forv	varded b	y Profes	ssor Mor	gan		60		190
PLATES	_			_	_		_	_	_	_	197

APPENDIX A.

DEPOSITIONS.

The following passage relating to this Appendix is taken from page 4 of the report:—

"Many [witnesses] hesitated to speak lest what they said, if it should ever be published, might involve their friends or relatives at home in danger, and it was found necessary to give an absolute promise that names should not be disclosed.

"For this reason names have been omitted."

"In all cases [the depositions] are given as nearly as possible (for abbreviation was sometimes inevitable) in the exact words of the witness, and wherever a statement has been made by a witness tending to exculpate the German troops, it has been given in full. Excisions have been made only where it has been felt necessary to conceal the identity of the deponent or to omit what are merely hearsay statements, or are palpably irrelevant. In every case the name and description of the witnesses are given in the original depositions and in copies which have been furnished to us by H.M. Government. The originals remain in the custody of the Home Department, where they will be available in case of need, for reference after the conclusion of the war."

Names of places are given throughout in the French form.

The status of the witness is printed in each case at the head of the deposition. The nationality of all the witnesses is Belgian unless the contrary is indicated.

The depositions are grouped together, each group being distinguished by a letter. They are arranged, as far as possible, in the order in which they appear in the Report, viz.:—

a = Liège and District.

b = The Valleys of the Meuse and Sambre.

c } = The Aerschot, Malines, Vilvorde, Louvain Quadrangle.

e = Louvain.

f = Termonde and Alost.

g = The use of civilians as a screen.

h = Offences against combatants.

k = Miscellaneous statements relating to Belgium.

1 = France.

^{*} For greater security the initials of persons mentioned in the depositions have been changed.



LIÈGE AND DISTRICT.

Belgian Refugee.

On the 4th August the Germans came to Aubel. I was requisitioned by the burgomaster of the commune for trench-digging and tree-cutting on the Hombourg Road. A picket of German cavalry came up to where we were, that is to say, up to 100 yards from us. We were warned of their arrival by a road-mender, and escaped. I went to my house at Aubel. A German battalion came to Aubel shortly after my arrival. They took the four sons of a farmer at Aubel prisoner at the farm and took them to the police station in Aubel. This was on the pretence that they had fired on them, which was untrue. Nobody fired on them. They invoked the protection of Baron de F... The four were released at 9 o'clock in the evening. The Germans burnt another farm. There were no Belgian soldiers in the neighbourhood at the time when the Germans arrived. A few days afterwards another German regiment got into Aubel at half-past 11 o'clock at night. They levelled their revolvers on the people living in the station district so as to bully them into leaving their houses and they shut them up, men, women, and children, in a livery stable. They then took their places in the beds.

a 1 Aubel.

Herve, &c.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 4th August 1914 at Herve I saw at about 2 o'clock in the afternoon near the station five Uhlans; these were the first German troops I had seen. They were followed by a German officer and some soldiers in a motor car. The men in the car called out to a couple of young fellows who were standing about 30 yards away. The young men, being afraid, ran off, and then the Germans fired upon them and killed one of them named D..., aged 20. I know that he was killed, although I did not exactly see him fall, because his companion told me so.

On the 6th August 1914, at about 4 o'clock in the afternoon, I saw from Herve the church and several houses in the market square of the village of Battice burning. This village is situated about 2 miles from Herve, we could not go there because the Germans were in

between.

On the 8th August at about 9 a m., whilst the German foot soldiers were burning Herve (they burnt altogether about 327 houses between the 8th and 10th August). I saw some mounted men ride along the footpaths and shoot with their revolvers in at doors and windows of the

houses as they passed.

It was common knowledge that on that day, namely, 8th August, the Germans having passed quietly through Herve but for the incident mentioned above, on finding their road blocked owing to the resistance of Fléron, one of the Liège forts, returned to Herve, and, enraged at such resistance, fired indiscriminately in all quarters of the town, and in the Rue de la Station they shot Mme. G...., hitting at close range although she had a crucifix in her hand, begging for mercy. The body was left exposed in the roadway for three days.

About 50 men escaping from the burning houses were seized and taken outside the town

The German staff officers who were staying in my hotel told my wife that the reason why they had so treated Herve was because the inhabitants of the town would not petition for a

passage of the Germans at Fléron.

The able-bodied citizens were requisitioned by the German to fight the fire, and while they were so doing the Germans gave themselves up to pillage and loaded motor cars with everything of value they could find.

At Melen, a hamlet of Labouxhe-Melen on the west of Herve, 40 men were shot.

In the case of one family, the father and mother were shot, and a daughter of 22, having been outraged, died because of the violence she had received. A son was wounded by several shots.

Belgian Soldier.

About 4th August, I am not sure to a day or so, near Vottem we were pursuing some Uhlans. I saw a man, woman, and a girl about 9, who had been killed. They were on the threshold of a house, one on the top of the other, as if they had been shot down, one after the other, as they tried to escape. The same day, or the day after, I was on patrol duty. The members of the patrol were not of my class, and I do not know their names. Near Vottem we found an old man of about 70 hanging from a tree. The Uhlans had just passed. The same day we found another man, a civilian, lying dead in the road. He had been shot.

After the battle of Liège I saw the Germans bayoneting the Belgian wounded as they-

the Germans—advanced. I was about 300 yards off. I saw seven or eight so killed.

Belgian Refugee.

On the 5th August last I was taken prisoner by the Germans, together with five other men (names given) in the cellar of my house. The Germans who took us prisoners belonged to the

a 4 Soumagne, &c.

a 3

Vottem.

A 28740

35th and 56th regiments, and two of them came actually into the cellar, but in the street outside there were very many more. Our arms were tied behind our back. We were marched off in the direction of Melen. There were about 200 of us prisoners altogether. When we had gone about a mile three men tried to escape. One only got about 40 yards before he was shot down. After this two others escaped and I have not seen them since. Just before we got to Melen I saw a woman with a child in her arms standing on the side of the road on our left hand side watching the soldiers go by. Her name was G..., aged about 63, and a neighbour of mine. A German officer was marching beside us on our left. The officer asked the woman for some water in good French. She went inside her son's cottage to get some and brought it immediately. We had stopped. The officer went into the cottage garden and drank the water. The woman then said when she saw the prisoners, "Instead of giving you water you deserve to be shot." The officer shouted to us "March." We went on, and immediately I saw the officer draw his revolver and shoot the woman and child. One shot killed both. This took place at about 9 o'clock a.m. We went 'Instead of giving you water you deserve to be shot." The officer shouted to us on to Melen and were kept there till 5 p.m., when we were let go. On my way back I saw the dead bodies of the woman and child still lying where they had been shot.

When I returned I found my house had been burnt down. The Germans were still round my house. They invited me to go and sleep with them in the field near by, which I did. On the next day every man in the village was taken prisoner. There were 57 of them, they were taken into a field belonging to a man named J. E. . . An officer said, "You shot at us." One of us asked if he might say a few words. His name was J. R. . . . He said, "If you think these people have fired, kill me, but let all these men go." He said this in German. The officer answered by ordering his men to fire. His men were drawn up facing the prisoners, who were drawn up in three ranks. The soldiers fired a volley and killed many, and then fired twice more. Then they went through the ranks and bayonetted everyone still living. I saw many bayonetted in this way.

a 5

I was not among these prisoners because one of the German soldiers told me what was going to be done and advised me to hide. I went into a house which the Germans had already searched, and which backed on to the field, and saw everything from one of the windows. I was alone in this house, but there was a woman in the cellar. I stayed in this house for about 5 hours until about 4 p.m. I walked in the direction of my house, which was about 200 metres away. On the way I saw about 20 dead bodies lying here and there along the road. One of them was that of a little girl aged 13. The rest were men, and most of them had had their heads bashed in. There were German sentrics everywhere. In one case a man's body and those of his three sons were lying at the door of his house. This man had been a gravedigger. I know of nothing having been done to annoy the Germans.

Belgian Refugee (Boy).

On the 5th August of this year the Germans came into the village (Soumagne) at midnight. There were 165 infantry and 35 cavalry. I live with my mother and sister. We were at the time in the cellar of the cafe next door. The Germans passed and then turned and fired (rifle) on the village. About half an hour after the Germans came, several of them came shouting and yelling to the cafe. They broke the windows and broke the door. My mother went out of the cellar door. I heard the soldiers cry "halt," then I heard a shot and my mother fell back into the cellar. She was killed. There were 12 others with me in the cellar. The firing lasted until 7 o'clock in the morning. About two miles from Soumagne is Fort Fléron, which is one of the Liège forts. The Germans were under fire from Fort Fléron. After the firing had gone on a short time I left the cellar and hid in a hedge. The village was between Fort Fléron and the German position. I stayed in the hedge for some time and then went into a house to hide. As soon as I got inside I was taken prisoner by six or seven Germans who came and searched it and took all inside prisoners. Our arms were bound---we were roped together. About 40 of us altogether. The guns from the fort were firing on us and five of us were hit. The Germans took us to Labouxhe. There a priest told us that the Germans were going to keep the eight youngest and let the rest go on condition that they did not disclose the position of the German troops. I was the youngest, but they did not take me. I was freed with the 31

I went to Fécher, where I was taken prisoner by the German sentries. One of the sentries showed me a small revolver which he said was mine. It was not. I was with six others. We were put in a corner of the church. An officer came to me with an open razor. He said in French, "I am going to cut your throat with this." One of my companions shrugged his shoulders at this and the officer told one of the German soldiers to shoot him, which he did. We were then bound. There were 40 of us in the church and we were taken out of the church and marched with a large number of others towards Fort Fléron. On the way I saw a large number of corpses of Belgian women and men. I knew a large number of the bodies. Two young men I knew (aged respectively 18 and 22) of Fécher, both told me afterwards that they had been used as a screen by the Germans and had been fired on by the Belgians and very many killed. We were taken to Baller* where we were taken into a

field. There were 265 of us and an officer told us that we were all going to be killed. One of them was my schoolmaster. The Germans then took us to an old fort named La Chartreuse. We remained there for 24 hours and were given nothing to eat. We were let go and I returned home. On the way I saw the bodies of two men whom I knew. I got home and went into the cellar. Everything had been burnt. I went to try and find my sister but was again taken prisoner with the vicar of Micheroux. After five hours we were let loose again. I went to Liège and there on August 22nd I saw many bodies in the Rue Chartreuse. I do not know the names of them. I did not see them shot.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On 5th August 1914 my regiment was stationed at Herstal. In the main street of the village, near a corner house, I saw lying the dead bodies of a man, a woman and two children. The villagers told me they had been murdered by the Germans after the battle was over.

a 6 Herstal.

Blegny Trembleur

&c.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the first Wednesday of the war some German soldiers, belonging to the 16th and 23rd Regiments of Infantry, came to the town, and made all the civilians leave their houses, and took all of them to the church. They had visited and searched my father's house (where I lived) but found nothing. They seemed enraged by the firing from the forts of Barchon. After two hours the women and children were allowed to leave the church. The men, about 280 in number, among whom were my uncle and myself, were kept in church all night, and at 6 o'clock on the following morning we were all taken to Hakoister with the two regiments above-named. There we were placed in rows of four, and some cannon were placed alongside of us, and they were fired in the direction of the forts of Barchon. At the time there were no Belgian soldiers in view; and the only object in firing upon the forts was in order that the forts might reply, and thus hit some of the civilian prisoners. They did not reply. We were then told that we should be shot and that we could confess to the rector of the parish, who was one of our number.

The soldiers then went in front of us, and presented their rifles at us; but just as they were about to shoot an officer arrived on horseback and said "Halt." The soldiers then lowered their rifles. We were then made to walk to Battice, 6 or 7 miles distant. Before starting from Hakoister, the first seven prisoners were tied together with cords. On arrival at Battice we were taken to a field, and were told to keep our eyes on these seven men. The five inner men were then shot dead, and the two outer men were sent back amongst the other prisoners. I cannot explain why the particular five were selected. I heard no complaint

made against them.

Just outside Hakoister my uncle, who suffered from heart disease and whom we were helping along, said "I cannot go any further, leave me here." We placed him at the side of

the road and went on. I did not see him again till the next morning.

We were then taken to a place called Chaussée d'Herve, where we saw some Belgian soldiers in the distance. The German soldiers then knelt down behind the civilians, and fired over our heads in the direction of the Belgian soldiers. The Belgians then fired, and two of the civilians were wounded. When, however, they saw the civilians in front of the German soldiers they ceased firing, and retreated. The above-named two wounded civilians

were shot dead the following day by German soldiers.

The civilian prisoners were on the next day taken into a field, and compelled to lie down. I saw four of the prisoners, viz., my uncle, two others whom I knew, and a man whom I did not know, tied together, and prodded with the bayonets; my uncle bled at the leg from being thus wounded; and then I saw some of the soldiers place lighted cigarettes in each of these prisoner's ears and nostrils. I asked a German officer to release my uncle and he replied that if he had not fired on them he would be liberated. When I had not seen my uncle for some time I asked a German officer in French where my uncle was, and told him that he had heart disease, and he replied in French, "It will be all right; he will come back to you." I afterwards put the same question to the Doctor, and he gave the same reply.

We then left the field, and marched towards Julémont, and were afterwards placed in another field near Julémont, and remained there for 24 hours. We were given no food or drink; and many of the prisoners began to lose their reason. One of the prisoners, who was a doctor in the Red Cross, then spoke to a German doctor, and shortly afterwards we were allowed to go free. I again asked a German officer about my uncle, and he replied that I

would find him all right.

On the next day I went back to this field, and there found my uncle and the three other men who had been bound together, and I saw that they had all been shot dead. I then brought my uncle's body to Blegny, and there buried him.

He was never accused of molesting the Germans, but he was shot because he was too

feeble to walk.

A 2

At Blegny I was warned to flee from the place because the German cavalry were coming, and would kill anybody they met. I then went to Hakoister, and was again captured, but was only kept for a few minutes, and then allowed to go on again. I went back to Blegny. I there saw four bodies covered with sheets. I was about 100 metres away. I was told that the bodies were those of K. . . and H. K. . . . and the burgomaster, and the priest. As to the shooting of K. some of the people said the Germans had accused him of giving information to Belgian soldiers about the forts; and another reason was the possession by him of a large number of revolvers. These revolvers had not, however, been officially tested. With regard to the priest, the people said he had been accused of sending telephone messages to Belgian troops from his church.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 8 Hamoir. Between the 5th and 6th August, a German regiment, namely, the Death's Head Hussars, came to the café tenanted by A. . . .'s father in Hamoir. The young man, A. . . ., 19 years of age, was standing at the door at 9 o'clock at night. When he saw the Germans he went indoors, and the Germans tried to get in. They shot three bullets through the door, and the boy was killed outright. I was about 200 yards away, and saw the Germans shoot at the door. I afterwards saw a coffin, and was informed that it contained the body of the young man, and I attended his funeral.

I produce four photographs of portions of a house at Hamoir, belonging to a Dutchman. This house was unoccupied when the Germans arrived, and they pillaged and stole everything

of value, and smashed the furniture.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 9 Soumagne,

About the beginning of the war, on a Thursday, about 3 or 4 o'clock in the afternoon, I was on the Chaussée leading from Liège to Aix-la-Chapelle. I saw a German soldier firing on a man whom I knew about 28 years of age, who was carrying a baby in his arms. He was running away on the Chaussée. He fell dead as a stone. The child was not hurt. Afterwards three German soldiers came up, that is to say, the soldier mentioned above and two others. They followed the wife of the aforementioned man, who also was running away on the Chaussée. One of the soldiers hit her in the stomach with the butt end of his rifle. Two others also hit her but these blows were not serious. As for me, I went back into my house, which is on the Chaussée a 100 yards further down. I went into the loft. There is a little window in the roof of the loft. I looked out of this little window and I saw a man whom I knew shot. There were a lot of German soldiers in the middle of the village and he was shot by these soldiers. He fell dead on the spot. He was about 28 years of age. I then took refuge in the cowshed and stopped there till about 2 o'clock in the morning. Then about 20 Germans came and set fire to my house. Five or six days afterwards two women met me on the road to Hayne. I know them both. One told me that the Germans had raped her in her house at Hayne near Soumagne and the other told me the same. The women were both together when they were raped. They were raped by a great many Germans. One of the women told me that the house was quite full of them. They told me finally that their husbands had been shot together with 35 others near their house after they had been raped. I saw 56 corpses of civilians in a meadow at Soumagne on the night when my house was burnt. There were only men and a few boys; no women. Some had been killed by bayonet thrusts and others by rifle shots. In the heap of corpses above mentioned was that of the son of the burgomaster. His throat had been cut from ear to ear and his tongue had been pulled out and cut off. I did not see his tongue. It was not in his mouth. In another meadow 300 or 400 yards off I saw 19 corpses of civilians, men and boys. I helped to bury the corpses of the first heap of 56 of which I have spoken. We put 44 of them in a pit in the meadow itself and the others in the cemetery.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 10 Herstal. August 6th, in Herstal, I saw a civilian shot by German soldiers. This was about 1 a.m. At this time the Belgian soldiers were 400 to 500 metres away. They were then retreating. The soldiers who shot the civilian were 40 to 50 yards from the place where he was. There was constant firing by the regiment Kaiser Wilhelm, No. 90. In the morning I saw 30 civilians, old men mostly, one woman; this woman was married to a mechanic, who was also shot I also saw the body of a child. These people were shot in their houses, the doors of which had been broken in. I myself and many others went in to look at these victims. This was at 5 to 6 a.m. on the morning of August 6th. The Belgian soldiers came back at 4.30 a.m. and shot five Germans. The whole of the Germans (about 30) who had been firing from the houses were killed except 8 who were taken prisoners three days after.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

a 11 Herstal. On August 6th I was serving at Herstal near Liège. We were fighting a rearguard action with the Germans. In the course of this fighting we passed a house, in front of which were the bodies of a woman and two men. The house was a small one. We marched past the house

in column. The rear part of the column—about 300 men—stopped and went up to the bodies. The woman was about 50. She had been killed by a bayonet wound in the chest. The body was covered in blood and so was the ground near it. The men were about 55 and 25 years of age. The body of one of the men—the elder one—was lying across that of the woman, and the two bodies were lying in the door of the house. The body of the younger man was lying in front of the house, about two metres away from those of the woman and the other man. Both the men had been bayonetted in the chest. About 4 metres in front of the bodies of the woman and elder man was the body of a Belgian soldier who had been bayonetted, and just inside the door was the body of another soldier. He had been shot.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the arrival of the German troops in the village of Micheroux, during the time when the fort of Fléron was holding out, they came to a block of four cottages, and having turned out the inhabitants, set the cottages on fire and burnt them.

From one of the cottages a woman (name given) came out with a baby in her arms, and a German soldier snatched it from her and dashed it to the ground, killing it then and there.

Belgian Refugee.

When the district of Herstal was occupied by the Germans, I was employed, together with many other inhabitants of the Commune, in picking up the wounded, Belgians and Germans alike, on the battlefield, so that they might be taken to the National Factory. The Germans were in occupation of the battlefield. I saw them fire on four civilians who were engaged in picking up the wounded. They were killed on the spot. Their names are unknown to me. They had done nothing to justify their being killed. Twenty civilians were killed in this way; at least I am so informed. I saw killed only the four mentioned above. At this time, with the exception of wounded men, there were no Belgian soldiers in the Commune or the district.

Belgian Soldier.

On 7th August I was in some trenches by the side of the road in front of Liège, after the battle of Belle Flamme. People were coming along the road from Visé, flying before the Germans. We saw a boy of about 12 with a bandage where his hand should be. We asked what was the matter, and were told the Germans had cut his hand off because he clung to his parents, who were being thrown in the fire. Personally, I only saw the bandage. We also saw a mother and her little girl with a bandage on the latter's head. The mother told us the child's ear had been cut off by the Germans, "for listening to their orders," they said. The girl was about 10 years old, and could not have understood the orders. She was a Walloon.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On August 11th the 36th infantry regiment, and the 40th artillery regiment of the German Army came through the Rue des Champs at Hermalle. The soldiers lay down in an oat-field and I gave them drinks.

Meanwhile another regiment came through on its way to Haccourt, with empty lorries.

These men fired on the fugitives who were coming along the road from Haccourt with their parish priest, whose name I do not know.

A woman, of Hermalle, was shot down, but not killed. She is all right again now.

The soldiers next forced the parish priest to get up on a cart; they tied him up and took him off to Haccourt. It appears that he was shot on his arrival at Haccourt: so I was informed three days afterwards at Haccourt.

A young man got away during the firing which I have spoken of. He was injured in the head and had a bullet in his left arm. I helped him to get his coat on near M...'s house.

There was no justification on military grounds for the firing.

The civilians neither fired on the soldiers nor did anything contrary to the laws of war. Three hundred and sixty-eight of us were imprisoned in Hermalle church for 17 days. Only the men were imprisoned. We were only prisoners at night; during the day we were compelled to dig trenches for the defence of the place. The Germans compelled us to do so.

Belgian Refugee.

The Germans entered Visé on 4th August.

The first house they came to as they entered the town they burned. It was a mediumsized private residence. There was no firing from this house, nor any shooting by civilians at all in Visé, I know of no reason for the burning, any more than for the killing of civilians.

On the 14th and 15th August the Germans burnt practically all the houses in Visé. I saw commissioned officers directing and supervising the burning. It was done systematically with the use of benzine spread on the floors and then lighted. In my own and another house I saw officers before the burning come in with their revolvers in their hands, and have china, valuable antique furniture, and other such things removed. This being done, the houses

a 12 Micheroux.

> a 13 Herstal.

a 14 Liège outskirts.

a 15 Hermalle.

> a 16 Visé.

were by their orders set on fire. On the morning of 15th August, two officers inspected my house, and finding there were things worth taking, they wrote and signed a paper directing the house to be spared and pinned it on the door. [Exhibited.] Then when the valuables had been removed the place was burnt down. I took the paper off the door and preserved it.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 17 Heure le Romain. About the 11th or 12th of August the Germans occupied Heure le Romain, which is near Oupeye. For two days they stayed there and behaved quite politely to the inhabitants. The Germans then discovered a building on the door of which had been placed some notices with reference to a cyclists' club. This notice was signed by the burgomaster of the place and a priest who was the honorary president of the club. It had been placed there before the war. On finding this notice they made all the inhabitants go into the church, among them even old men who had not been out of bed for over six years. They kept them there for 24 hours.

The Germans then sent for the burgomaster and the priest who had signed the notice and they demanded that 25 of the cyclists whose names had appeared on the notice at the school should be given up to them to be shot. The burgomaster and the priest refused to do this. It was not the burgomaster himself who was there, as he was ill, but it was the burgomaster's brother who came in his place. The priest said to the Germans that he was not going to give them any names, but if they wanted to shoot anybody they could shoot him.

The burgomaster's brother and the priest were then taken and placed against the wall of the church and bayonetted by the Germans. I did not see the actual killing myself. I understand the excuse for killing these people was that the notice about the cyclists' club was a military one. It was nothing of the sort, only a pleasure excursion.

I saw the people all put into the church by the Germans. I was hiding in the fields at the time. I then went back to my house at Oupeye. The next day I came back to Heure

le Romain and saw that the whole village had been burnt.
On my return to Heure le Romain I saw a man and l

On my return to Heure le Romain I saw a man and his wife and his infant son and his mother-in-law hiding in a garden. They were about 200 metres from where I was. The Germans approached and I heard shots. Subsequently I passed quite close to where the shots had been fired, and there I saw the bodies of the man and his wife and the baby. I heard afterwards that the baby was not killed but was taken charge of by the Red Cross people, whose hospital had been established in the Fabrique Nationale, which is at Herstal. The baby, so I was informed, eventually died at this hospital, but before he died photographs were taken of the injuries which had been done to him. These photographs are in the possession of the head of the Red Cross at Herstal.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 18 Vaux (?) In the month of August I came back from Haccourt to Vouche.* At Vouche I met a squadron of Uhlans and artillery. I saw them about 300 metres away. The Uhlans had a device of a skull and crossbones on their shakos. The artillery was firing on the fort of Pontisse just outside Liège. When I saw the Uhlans and the artillery I hid myself behind a hedge. From there I saw two young Belgian cilivians, about 18 or 20 years old, working in the field. I heard the Uhlans shouting at these two men but I could not understand what they said. The two Belgians did not seem to understand what was said, and as they paid no attention, the Uhlans fired at them and wounded both of them. I saw them both fall. I then saw some of the artillerymen dig a trench, quite a shallow one. They put the bodies of the two civilians into this trench and covered them with earth. The earth did not cover the bodies more than a few inches. I was from 200 to 300 metres away from this grave, but I could see quite distinctly all that happened. The Germans took the bodies by the head and the heels, and I could see quite plainly that they were not dead, as their arms were moving up and down still. I am certain the men were not dead when they were buried.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 19 Flémalle Grande. One day—about a fortnight after the war began—I went from my home at Seraing to Flemalle Grande to get some wire; after getting the wire I proceeded to my home at Seraing. About half-way between Flémalle Grande and Jemeppe there is an inn called "Compagne de Flémalle." As I approached the inn I saw some German foot soldiers. I do not know to what regiment they belonged, but they wore helmets with spikes. There were about 14 of them and they were placing four men and a woman up against the wall of the inn. The men were unknown to me; but I knew the woman; she lived with her husband in a house next door to me. I cannot remember her husband's name, but since I came to England I have seen her; I saw her at Aldwych.

After placing them against the wall, the soldiers went a little distance from them, then shot the four men. They did not shoot the woman, though they had placed her in the middle with two of the men on each side of her. She cried and fell on her knees and begged for mercy and they did not shoot her. The shots did not kill the men, and they lay groaning on the ground and the soldiers then went up to them, killed them outright with their bayonets.

* ? Vaux.

Two of the soldiers tried to kiss the woman; but she resisted and escaped from them and ran into her house. I saw no more and went on my way home. I was alone, and so far as I could see there was no one about.

I never heard the names of the four men who were shot or how it came about that they

were shot.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

K . . ., in addition to his ordinary business, opened a large café, at the rear of which was a large dancing saloon, which adjoined his workshop (at Blegny Trembleur). He had only been in occupation of this café nine weeks when war was declared. K . . . had 10 children, four daughters and six sons.

The German soldiers had an engagement near my home on the 4th August; it was the first engagement between the Belgian and the German troops in the war. During the following fortnight the Germans came to and from the town, and they had had drink at the café.

On the 15th August (Our Lady's Day) some 300 to 400 Germans arrived. I think they belonged to the 64th Regiment of Infantry. Prior to this date K . . . had opened the dancing saloon for the reception of wounded soldiers, under the Belgian Red Cross, and there had been some German wounded soldiers there. On the 15th August, however, there were no wounded soldiers in the place. The German wounded had only been allowed to remain there

for a few days, and were then sent away by their own people.

On the 15th August K . . . told me that the major of the German troops had come to the café that day and ordered him to put all the drink into the cellar, and he asked him and his brother to sleep outside the cellar. There was then, however, not much drink left, as the German soldiers had previously taken a lot of wine and champagne from the café. Some of them had paid for what they had, but the majority did not pay. K . . . and his brother spent the night outside the cellar door.

On the next morning the 16th August, K . . .* and his brother were taken off as prisoners, together with the Burgomaster (A. R) and the priest (R. L . . .), and were taken to the church. They were then placed against a wall, and all four shot by the German soldiers. I did not see K... and his brother shot, but I was informed of this by some friends. We heard

the sound of the shots.

had been accustomed to make revolvers for some big manufacturers at Liège, and when the Germans arrived he had 15,000 unfinished "Bull Dog" revolvers in his workshop. He had no cartridges. K... had previously been ordered by the Senator of Liège and a German officer to nail up the doors of the workshop, and this was done. I was present when the order was given. K... employed 128 workmen, but they worked in their own houses. The whole of K... 's stock of revolvers were taken by the Germans. I saw them taken away. Just after we heard the noise of the soldiers shooting their prisoners. I heard some of the Germans charging their revolvers, and three of them came upstairs with the revolvers in their hands, and told us to leave the house at once, as they were going to burn everything. K...'s wife asked for permission to take her money (8,000 francs), but the Germans refused to let her do this. The house was then burned down.

I had to leave the house with only my trousers on, and a coat. K 's little boy only

had his night shirt on. The whole family then went to my cousin's house.

Half an hour later, after the Germans had left, I went out to find K slashed, and the fingers were nearly severed from the hand. I also saw that he had two bayonet wounds in his breast. I did not notice the condition of the other three men, but was

afterwards told that they had also been stabbed in the breast with a bayonet.

K . . . had had in his possession four certificates, which he kept in his pocket book. The first was from a German officer who had come to the café with a Senator of Liège, stating that K . . . was allowed to pass through the troops to fetch provisions. The second certificate stated that K . . . was allowed to retain his weapons in his workshop. The third was from the Burgomaster, to the effect that K . . . belonged to the Red Cross. The fourth was from a Belgian doctor to the same effect. I afterwards looked in K . . . 's pocket book, and found that they were not in it. They had not taken his money.

Belgian Refugee.

On the 16th of August the Germans took me prisoner at my house (at Flémalle Grande) at 6 o'clock in the morning. They took off all the civilians to the square of Profond-Val, 200 in all; they cleared all the women out of the houses so as to search and pillage them.

The soldiers told us that we were going to be shot if the fort of Flémalle did not surrender

by midday. It did surrender at midday, and they let us go at 12.30.

On my way home I met a woman, a neighbour. She told me that some German soldiers had driven her daughter up into the loft to rape her. She was $8\frac{1}{2}$ months gone in pregnancy. Two of them raped her. The child was born the following day. The woman

a 20 Blegny Trembleur.

> a 21 Flémalle Grande.

tried to go up after her daughter, but the Germans stopped her with their bayonets. The daughter's Christian name is J. . ., but I do not know her married name.

The same day a girl of 16 named W . . . told me that two Germans had raped her. She was too weak to resist them. This happened in her house.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

a 22 Ans. On or about the 16th August, after the fall of Liège, my regiment was left behind guarding some of the forts. The German Army had gone forward towards Namur, following our retreating army. Our regiment then followed the Germans along the route they had taken. I, with three others, J. B. . ., Corporal V. . ., and one other, a Fleming, whose name I forget, were on patrol duty thrown out on our left as we marched. We were passing the flying ground outside Liège at Ans when I saw a woman, apparently of middle age, perhaps 28 to 30 years old, stark naked, tied to a tree. At her feet were two little children about three or four years old. All three were dead. I believe the woman had one of her breasts cut off, but I cannot be sure of this. Her whole bosom was covered with blood and her body was covered with blood and black marks. Both children had been killed by what appeared to be bayonet wounds. The woman's clothes were lying on the grass thrown all about the place. I was near J. B. . . at the moment we found the woman. I told Corporal V. . . what I had seen later on. I was marching on the outside of the patrol—on grass land, B. . . being next to me and the corporal closest to the regiment. J. B. . . cut the cords which held the woman up by stabbing them with his bayonet. The body fell and we left it there. We could not stop to bury the bodies because we could see the Germans following. Between the road and the tree to which the woman was tied were some buildings and yards so that the body could not be seen from the road.

Соок.

a 23 Liège, On the 14th July I left Nouzon to go to a place in Germany. I embarked on a barge which belonged to the man to whom I was engaged to be married. I was going to pay a visit to his family. We proceeded down the Mease in this barge and arrived at Liège on

or about the 3rd August.

About a fortnight after we had arrived at Liège I was paying a visit on shore in order to buy some provisions. I went into the shop of a pork butcher in a street near the Place de l'Université. Opposite this shop there was a fruit shop kept by a Spaniard. While I was making my purchases in the butcher's shop I saw the Germans go into the shop kept by the Spaniard and shoot the Spaniard and his shopman. I know of no reason why this was done. I do not know the names of the Spaniard and his shopman. I saw the wife of the proprietor of the shop come running down into the shop with nothing on but her chemise. She was pushed outside by the Germans. I then ran away myself because I was afraid. The same night that this happened I left Liège on foot and went as far as Maestricht.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

a 24

On Thursday the 20th August 1914, at about 8 a.m., a company of German soldiers being the 1st company of the 26th Regiment of Infantry of the garrison of Aix-la-Chapelle under the command of Lieut. Schmidt, arrived in my street (in Liège). This officer was afterwards billeted at my house and his name was written on the outside of the door. The soldiers brought with them a wagon which I thought contained ammunition, and left it near my house after taking out the horses and moving them further up the street. The people were all ordered to be inside their houses by 7 p.m.

At 9.20 p.m. the same day while Lieut. Schmidt was sitting with me in my cellar kitchen, eating his supper, I heard the sound of some shots coming from the bottom of the street. The lieutenant, who had his revolver beside him on the table, rushed out of my house. I bolted

the door after him.

In front of my house was No. 2, Rue des Pitteurs, which was then unoccupied, the occupant having left. The next house No. 4 was also unoccupied. No. 6 was occupied by a man about 55 years of age and his wife (who was grey haired). The two windows of my kitchen are barred on the outside and I looked out of the window and could see that on the path

were lined up a number of German soldiers.

At about half-an-hour after Schmidt had left my house I saw some of the soldiers break open the door of No. 2 and throw into the house some benzine which I saw them take from the wagon in front of my house. I then heard someone call out "Trak" and immediately the soldiers fired into the house; there was an explosion, and immediately the house caught fire. I at once took refuge in my cellar and through a little hole could still see what was happening. Mr. and Mrs. G... immediately came out of their house, the man in front and the woman close behind. Immediately they appeared the soldiers fired at them and killed them. Neither the man nor his wife had any arms and had given no provocation whatever. The soldiers were all of the 26th Regiment. I did not see Lieut. Schmidt but I have no doubt he was in the street. I repeatedly afterwards heard the order of "Trak" given and at once shots were fired.

When I saw Mr. and Mrs. G... shot I and my wife went on to the roof of our house and remained there till 3 o'clock the following morning. I had a small ladder and placed this from one roof to another and eventually got to the roof of a street called Rue de Bavière at about 4 a.m. The soldiers after they had fired No. 2, Rue des Pitteurs, fired No. 8 in the same way, and then a public school on the same side of the street. Then the houses on the other side of the street commencing from No. 17 were fired; and by 4 a.m. the whole street was on fire, including my own house No. 1.

on fire, including my own house No. 1.

On the morning of the 21st August Lieut-General Kolewe issued a proclamation which stated that the firing of the houses was in consequence of some Russian students having fired upon German soldiers. There was no truth in this allegation as there were no Russian students in the Rue des Pitteurs which was the first street to be attacked. I knew the whole

of its inhabitants.

The police had previously visited every house and collected all the arms. I am certain that the German soldiers were the first to shoot. I should certainly have heard if any shots

had been fired by any person beforehand.

There was no possible reason for firing the houses. The only excuse I can give is that the Germans had been drinking and I noticed when they fired that the soldiers were half drunk. When he was in my house I noticed that Schmidt had been drinking. I did

not see him after he left my house.

The houses were burning the whole of the next day (21st August). I then discovered that seven persons in all had been killed, namely Mr. and Mrs. G..., Mr. and Mrs. S..., and their daughter aged 21, who lived at No. 13 (or 15), Rue des Pitteurs and two other persons. I did not see the bodies of the three S...s, but I was informed that they had been shot in their cellar, and that there were no less than 22 bullets in their three bodies.

ARMOURER.

I was employed in an arms factory in Liège. The Germans entered Liège about the middle of August. They published orders that no intoxicating liquors were to be sold to anyone. The wife of a Liège innkeeper, whom I knew well, having fled from her home, came to me and told me that after the publication of the order above mentioned German soldiers came to her husband's shop and asked for liquors; then he told them that he was forbidden to supply them with any; and that they thereupon shot him in the head with a revolver and killed him. She also said that her son (aged 17) was present and that he also was shot and killed with a revolver. The innkeeper's wife told me that after her husband and son had been killed the Germans set fire to the shop. I saw that this shop and indeed many other houses in the same street were burned; and many in other parts of the town. Houses were also burned in Rue des Pitteurs and in one house three girls were burned or suffocated. One of them did not die at once but after removal to hospital. There was no firing on the troops by civilians nor any sort of provocation by civilians. The Germans did allege firing by civilians as their excuse for burning houses, but it was untrue. The burgomaster and the chief clergyman of St. Christopher's Church complained to the German commandant of the burning of houses, and then the Germans engaged in patrolling were changed for men of other regiments and there was no more destruction of property.

STEEL TURNER.

I saw many houses in Liège set on fire by German soldiers, although I never saw a single

shot fired on them from any house or by any civilian.

As the houses were fired the occupants tried to escape, and I myself saw four people fall back into their houses suffocated, not daring to venture out or they would have been shot by the German soldiers. I saw 20 people shot as they were endeavouring to leave their houses.

GUNSMITH.

During the occupation of Liège by the Germans I served as a civic guard. About the *11th or 12th of August the Germans shot 18 people, some Russians, some Spaniards and the proprietor of the Café Carpentier, at the corner of the Rue de la Régence in front of the University. They alleged that the foreigners had fired on them; this was untrue. The bodies were taken to the Bourse de Travail. The people in question were shot as they were coming away from a students' dinner. I also saw all the houses in the Rue des Pitteurs burnt on the same night. The Germans burnt them by means of incendiary bombs. Most of them were drunk. They made a practice of stealing wine pretty nearly everywhere.

CIVIL ENGINEER.

I was at Liège on about August 20th and afterwards. The city was perfectly quiet until about 8 p.m. At about 9.15 p.m. I was in bed reading when I heard the sound of rifle fire.

a 28

a 25

a 26

a 27

I at once dressed myself, and the noise of the firing came nearer and nearer. About 10 p.m. they were shooting everywhere, and I had the impression that several thousand men were engaged in shooting at the same time. About 10.30 p.m. several machine guns were firing and artillery as well. About 11 p.m. I saw between 45 and 50 houses burning. There were two seats of the fire: the first was at the Place de l'Université, and was composed of eight houses (I was close by at the time); the second portion on fire was on the other side of the Meuse on the Quai des Pêcheurs, and there were about 35 houses burning. I heard a whole series of orders given in German and also bugle calls, followed by the cries of the victims, and I saw women running about in the street with children chased by the soldiers. I saw three corpses of women taken out of the houses eight days after the city was set on fire; they had been burnt. I know the houses were fired with petrol from my experience as an engineer and the way the flames spread. I saw also the Belgian firemen who came to put out the fire. I was informed that the Belgian firemen were prevented by the Germans from extinguishing the fire, and they were obliged to stand up against the wall with their hands up. The next day they were allowed to put out the fire.

On the next morning (August 21st) I saw a workman whom I know personally. This man lives in the Rue des Pitteurs, in one of the houses which was burned down. About 9 p.m. a German rang the bell at his house, and immediately the door was opened the Germans commenced shooting into the house without hitting anyone; they came into the house with petroleum and set fire to it. Then as the men and women were escaping the Germans fired at them, some of them being wounded. The men were taken prisoners and

the women driven away.

The next morning (August 22nd) of the 40 prisoners which they took about 12 were

shot; the rest were allowed to go.

For the following reasons I conclude that before 5 p.m. the shooting was settled upon. I have heard that a German soldier warned a concierge not to go out of doors, intimating that something would take place in the house. That house was not burnt, but the house next door was. Another soldier said to the person who was living in the house which was burned that he was warned to leave. In a building called "Emulation," 90 German soldiers who were living there left at 8 p.m., and the shooting commenced at 9 p.m., the building being burned that night.

ENGINEER.

At Liège one evening I saw the Germans burning the houses in the Place de l'Université with tins of paraffin and tar, or something of that nature. I stopped there looking at them from 10 o'clock to half-past 11 that night. About half-past 10 I saw a woman and children escaping from the houses. The Germans then called out in German, which I understand, that the men had got to stop in the houses and, in fact, I saw three or four men trying to escape through the doors, but the Germans fired on them to stop them leaving. The men (that is to say, the three or four of whom I have spoken, and the others who were in the houses) were burnt. The fire brigade came up to the Place de l'Université immediately after the fire began. The Germans prevented them from getting their hose pipes to work, saying that they would be shot if they did. They said that whatever had begun to burn had got to be burnt to the ground. The German robbed the cellars in Liège pretty nearly everywhere. They also stole goods and valuables in 50 houses in the town. My opinion is that they burnt the houses to cover up the robberies they had committed there.

Publican.

About the 20th August I was at Liège. About half-past 9 in the evening I heard some shots fired. I was at the Hôtel de Ville, acting as voluntary guard. Patrols were coming in from time to time to the Hôtel de Ville; one only failed to put in an appearance. It had been caught in the firing. We heard two shots fired by the cannon in the citadel. The Germans had been there for about a fortnight—Before the cannon shots were fired we heard cries; it was the crowd shrieking in the street. Afterwards we began to see fires in the different districts of the town. About a dozen of the city guard came in and went out again with the firemen to put out the fire. I was unwell and stopped at the Hôtel de Ville. About midnight there was brought on a fire department cart a whole heap of corpses of civilians. Bits were blown out of their heads. The shots which killed them must have been fired at very close range. They were all civilian corpses. I saw nothing but men's corpses. There were 17 of them.

Belgian Soldier.

About the 10th of August I was in the street between the Rue des Pitteurs and the Rue Baswet. There were about 300 Germans of the 78th Regiment of Infantry in the Rue des Pitteurs. About 20 men were going up to each of the houses. One of them had a sort of syringe with which he squirted into the house and another would throw a bucket of water in. A handful of stuff was first put into the bucket and when the stuff in the bucket was thrown into the house there was an immediate explosion.

F a 29

In this way about 80 houses were set on fire. All the houses were on one side of the street. They did not burn any houses on the other side. Before setting fire to these houses the Germans drove any inhabitants there were in them into the cellars. All the houses were inhabited, but some of the inhabitants had got away before the Germans came up to them. At about 30 of the houses, I actually saw faces at the windows before the Germans entered and then saw the same faces at the cellar windows after the Germans had driven the people into the cellars One set of Germans, about 20 in number, would do all this at a house and then set fire to it. Altogether this took the whole morning. Before each house was burnt it was thoroughly searched by the men who brought out all sorts of furniture and put it on to wagons which were waiting outside, I also saw some of the men bringing out bags of money and handing them to their officers. There were about 30 officers in the street. I am quite sure of this. There were also a crowd of Belgian civilians in the streets. I actually saw all these houses set fire to. In this way 35 people were burnt. I know this from the list which was put up in the police station afterwards and which I saw. One of the houses which was burnt was the house of a man I knew. He and two daughters, his nephew and niece were burnt there. His wife was away at the time. She had gone to Brussels the day before to see her parents. I know the family very well. That night I slept at the stationer's and on the following morning at 7.30, I went out and walked along the Rue des Pitteurs. I walked towards the Place de l'Université. When I was in the Place St. Lambert when I heard shooting, I went to try and find where it was going on. In the Rue Soens de Hasse I saw civilians brought out of their houses. About 150 Germans under eight officers. They were paying house to house visits, bringing all the people out of the houses and forming them up in the street I kept some little distance away and so did many other Belgians who were with me. The Belgians from the houses were marched off to the Place de l'Université between files of soldiers. I followed, keeping about 25 or 30 metres behind. When the Place was reached the Belgians were not formed up in any order, but the Germans fired on them. I heard an officer shout an order in German and all the Germans in one part of the square fired. The firing was not in volleys and went on for about 20 minutes. Whilst this was going on other Germans were going into other houses in the square and bringing out more Belgians whom they put among those who were being shot. Altogether 32 were killed—all men. I counted the bodies afterwards. I saw all this from the end of the Rue Soens de Hasse. There were many Belgians with me, but none of us were troubled. When I saw any Germans coming I got out of the way. I was not in uniform and had my revolver in my pocket. After the shooting about seven or eight were finished off with the bayonet. Immediately after the men had been killed, I saw the Germans going into the houses in the Place and bringing out the women and girls. About 20 were brought out. They were marched close to the corpses. Each of them was held by the arms. They tried to get away. They were made to lie on tables which had been brought into the square. About 15 of them were then violated. Each of them was violated by about 12 soldiers. While this was going on about 70 Germans were standing round the women including five officers (young). The officers started it. There were some of the Germans between me and the women, but I could see everything perfectly. The ravishing went on for about $1\frac{1}{2}$ hours. I watched the whole time. Many of the women fainted and showed no sign of life. The Red Cross took them away to the hospital.

While this was going on other Germans were burning the houses in the square. The houses were empty of people. I went back to the stationer's and got back about 2 o'clock. I heard the Germans say that they burnt and shot because they had been fired on by the Belgian

civilians, but it was untrue.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

At Hermalle-sous-Huy, in the month of September, I was in the square or "place" in front of the station. There was a squad or platoon of German soldiers there in charge of an officer. They placed another officer who was with them against a wall. I then saw a woman, who keeps a café at Hermalle, come out and speak to the officer in charge of the platoon. The officer standing against the wall opposite to the platoon was then allowed to leave. I was told by the brother of the woman that the officer who was standing against the wall had violated her daughter, aged about 18, and had been taken in the act of violating another daughter of the same lady, aged about 12. It was the mother who had surprised the officer violating her daughter. The mother made a complaint to the superior officers of the Germans and the officer who had committed the act was condemned to be shot. He was led out for this purpose in the manner I have described above. The woman then came on the scene, and the officer in charge of the platoon asked her if she would pardon the other officer. She did not wish to see him killed and said she pardoned him. He was then released. The officer was dressed in grey and had a helmet on with a spike on the top of it. He belonged to the 32nd Regiment of the Line. I know this to be so because I saw the number on the linen covering which he wore over his helmet. The other soldiers on the square belonged to the same regiment.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I live at Pepinster. I have not served so far in the Belgian army, but I have now volunteered and leave to-morrow to join.

a 32 Hermalle.

A large German army was passing through Pepinster on their way to Liège and they took as hostages five citizens. The burgomaster was not one of them, as he had obtained a substitute, but the burgomaster employed us to carry the baggage of all the hostages. We therefore marched with this German army and the hostages. We went as far as Cornesse and there we spent the night camping in a large field. The next day an officer told us that a German soldier had been shot in the leg and that he had made a declaration that he had been shot by the civilian inhabitants of Pepinster. The five hostages and my companion and I were then placed against a hedge and we were told that unless we could find the inhabitant who had shot the German soldier we should be shot ourselves. One of the hostages then said that the German soldier had not been shot in Pepinster, but in Cornesse. It appeared that the Germans did not know that there were two towns, Pepinster and Cornesse; the two towns are joined together and would appear to be the same place, but they have different burgomasters. When the Germans heard this explanation they took us and the hostages with them and went to find the burgomaster of Cornesse. They found him and placed him against a wall in the courtyard of the school and four or five German soldiers shot him. He was only hit in the legs and a German officer came up and shot him through the heart with his revolver. was an old man and quite deaf. I do not know what his name was. I never heard whether it was true that the German soldier had been shot by an inhabitant of Cornesse; some said it was true and some said it was not; some people even said the soldier had shot himself so as not to be obliged to fight any more.

After the burgomaster had been shot we were taken back by the Germans to Pepinster

and then released.

About the beginning of October I bicycled from Pepinster to Louvenier*, near Spa, which is about a quarter of an hour from Pepinster. I did not know the Germans were anywhere near and I went to amuse myself. I went into a cafe at Louvenier because I heard firing. They told me there that the Germans were bombarding the town because the inhabitants had fired on them. I then asked whether I could get away by another road without being taken by the Germans. They showed me a little path, which I went along. It brought me to a farmhouse about 7 o'clock in the evening. The farmhouse was about 10 minutes walk, from the café. When I got to the farmhouse I saw the Germans coming to the farm from the main road. I think there were about 100 of them. I went into the farm kitchen and found

there the farmer, his wife and child, two men, and a servant girl.

The Germans then began to enter the farmhouse. There were only three of them. The Germans knocked at the door of the kitchen and the farmer, the two men, the girl, and myself all rushed out of the kitchen into another room and hid ourselves there in the dark. farmer's wife, who had a baby in her arms which she was suckling, was not quick enough to get away and she did not escape with us into the room. In order to get to the room next the kitchen we had to go outside the house and come round by another way. This brought us to a sort of dairy where they made the butter. This dairy had no door into the kitchen, but there was a small window in the wall of the dairy which looked right in the kitchen. It was a square window, about 2 feet 6 inches square. It was a considerable height from the floor, over 5 feet. Underneath the window was a bench on which the jars for the milk were placed. The glass in the window was quite transparent. When we got to the dairy the farmer told us we could see everything that happened through this window. We took the bench away from underneath the window and stood it about I metre or more away from the window, so that we should not be seen from the kitchen. We all got up on this bench and I stood next to the farmer himself. The kitchen was quite bright being lit with electric light which is installed all over Louvenier. As I looked into the kitchen I saw the Germans seize the baby out of the arms of the farmer's wife. There were three German soldiers, one officer and two privates. The two privates held the baby and the officer took out his sword and cut the baby's head off. The head fell on the floor and the soldiers kicked the body of the child into a corner and kicked the head after it. When the farmer, who was with us in the dairy, saw this he wanted to shout out and go nearer the window. The two men and I prevented him from doing this as we said we should lose our own lives. One of the men put a cloth in the farmer's mouth so that the noise of his weeping should not be heard. It takes practically no time to get from the kitchen to the dairy by the way we went. We ran round, You could not hear anything that was said in the kitchen. We could see that the wife was crying, but we could not hear her.

After the baby had been killed we saw the officer say something to the farmer's wife and saw her push him away. After five or six minutes the two soldiers seized the woman and put her on the ground. She resisted them and they then pulled all her clothes off her until she was quite naked. The officer then violated her while one soldier held her by the shoulders and the other by the arms. After the officer each soldier in turn violated her, the other soldier and the officer holding her down. The farmer did not see his wife violated: the two men-servants had pulled him down from the bench after the baby had been killed, and they would not let him get up again. After the woman had been violated by the three the officer cut off the woman's breasts. I then saw him take out his revolver and point it at the woman on the ground. At this moment the farmer broke away from the two men-servants, jumped

on to a chair and put his foot through the window. The two men-servants and I and the servant girl ran away as soon as the farmer had broken the window and we know nothing more. We ran into the fields and from there saw the farmhouse had been set on fire.

I never learnt the name of the farmer. I came back to Louvenier later, but the town had been bombarded and burnt and there was nobody there to speak to. I have never seen the domestics and the girl again and I have never been to the farm again. I do not know the regiment to which these soldiers belong. They were cavalry because they had spurs on. I escaped eventually to Holland with my companion C . . . and so came to England.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I live at Pepinster. I have not served in the Belgian Army. I have tried to be taken as a volunteer, but they would not take me, as there is something wrong with one of my ribs.

I know the last witness well. I have heard the statement he has made with reference to the shooting of the Burgomaster of Cornesse. I was with him on the occasion he refers to and saw and heard all that he did. I confirm his story in every respect. I was not with him when he saw the other incidents he refers to.

About the beginning of September I was handing in a revolver and gun to the Germans at the railway station at Pepinster. We had all been ordered to do this. A cigar merchant came while I was there and handed in a gun. The gun was a sporting gun and it was loaded in both barrels. When the Germans found this out they took the cigar merchant and shot him immediately and buried him quite close to the place where he had been shot. I saw this myself but said nothing. I did not dare say anything and I went away as soon as I could.

ENAMELLER (British subject).

About the end of August I was in the village of Hermée, which is about an hour's walk from Herstal, which is about an hour from Liège. Practically the whole of the village of Hermée was wrecked, about 142 houses being totally destroyed, which left not more than two or three standing. I saw, myself, in this village the bodies of two dead Belgian civilians. I did not actually see other bodies, or the bodies of women and children, but it was well known to myself and other inhabitants that many others had been killed. The excuse given for burning down these houses was that someone in that village, or in some other village near by, had fired upon the German soldiers.

Towards the end of August a woman brought a child to the factory where I was working, which had been turned into a hospital. I saw the child myself and he had been severely wounded with some sharp instrument which was said to be a bayonet. He had been cut right up the stomach. The woman who brought the child was not the mother. She had picked up the child at a village named Heure le Romain and she told me that the mother of this child had been killed by the German soldiers while the baby was in her arms and at the same time her father-in-law and her husband had been killed. The child was $5\frac{1}{2}$ months old. I know this because I myself saw the death certificate. The woman who brought the boy to the hospital used to bring him every morning for treatment, and the German soldiers who were there used to keep her waiting at least half-an-hour before they would let her take the child to the doctor. This happened every morning. I myself protested against this treatment and told them that it was their fellow-soldiers who had themselves killed the baby's father and mother and injured the child. The baby died about 10 days after it was first brought to the hospital. I drew out the rough copy of the death certificate for the doctor to sign.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was employed at the Red Cross Ambulance Station at the Fabrique Nationale at Herstal. I drove the motor ambulance in connection with this station. I myself went and picked up the little boy of about 4 months old and his grandmother, referred to by the last witness, and I confirm what he says with reference to the wounds of these two persons. I found these people in a house at Heure le Romain, and they were carried by me in the motor ambulance from Heure le Romain to Herstal. I understood from statements made by the grandmother to officials of the hospital that the child and she had been wounded, and the parents of the child killed while sitting in a house.

a 34

a 35 Hermée, &c.

a 36

VALLIES OF MEUSE AND SAMBRE.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

b 1 Andenne.

On the evening of the 19th August about seven, the Burgomaster came to me and asked me if I was willing to take in a wounded man who was then lying in a deserted hut right out in the country about one mile and a half from my house. I went through with a village constable and a peasant. We went in the farm cart belonging to Dermine Farm. Near the hut where the wounded man was lying there was a company of Belgian soldiers who were unaware that a wounded man was there. Near the hut also the body of a German soldier was lying, and we learned afterwards that it was that of Lieut de Bülow, of Potsdam. Our expedition was not free from danger. The country was honeycombed with patrols, both Belgian and German. However, we brought back the wounded man to my house, that is to say I, the village constable, and the peasant. With the help of some inhabitants we carried him into one of my rooms. I attended to his injuries, and seeing that he was very bad I sent for the Parish Priest about eleven to give him extreme unction as he was a Catholic. I watched by his side all night. Next morning about nine a Garman patrol cause by and I informed a series that who was in charge of it that I had got a German patrol came by and I informed a serjeant who was in charge of it that I had got a wounded man at my house. He told me that he would inform his commandant, and asked me at the same time where the Parish Priest and the Burgomaster lived as he intended to take them as hostages. About half an hour afterwards I was visited by an infantry commandant, who asked to see the wounded man. He spoke to the wounded man in German, which I do not understand, but immediately after he had spoken to him he thanked me for the care that I had taken of him and told me that the dead body which I had spoken of above was that of Lieut. de Bülow, of Potsdam. He asked me next where the body was to be found. I told him that I had ordered the grave-digger to fetch it that very morning and to take it to the cemetery. He thereupon expressed a desire to see the corpse and asked me the way to the cemetery. He went there. The corpse was in the grave but the grave was not filled in. He made the grave-digger exhume it. He took a few articles from the body for use as remembrances and he gave these to me afterwards when he came back to my house. It is from his own lips that I received the information which I have given relating to the corpse. The articles in question were, a general staff map, a pair of gloves, a packet of cigarettes and a note-book in which the dead man put down his journal. These were given to me by the commandant so that I might send them according to his own instructions a fortnight or three weeks afterwards to Madame de Bülow, at Potsdam. A priest was present. The commandant then left. While he was in my yard one A . . . R . . . , who lives near me and is a cabinet maker, came up. Apparently he was wanted as a hostage. The commandant then said the country was quite quiet; that he thought the Germans and the country people would get on quite well and that he should not take any hostages. This was about 10 and 11 o'clock on the morning of the 20th. A quarter or half an hour afterwards there came a German sergeant on a bicycle. He asked me first for a general staff map which the commandant professed to have left at my house. I looked for it, but could not find it. I then gave him the map which had belonged to Lieut, de Bülow, making it plain at the same time that it was the map of the aforesaid Lieutenant. As the sergeant left he pointed out four houses which were burning about 200 yards away. As he showed them to me he said: "They say that that's the Germans, but that is not true." I answered: "If it is not true, at any rate it is a strange coincidence." Hardly had he gone when we saw a patrol arrive under the charge of an infantry officer. It came from the direction of the burning houses and it was approaching my house over the hedges separating the gardens. I think the officer was a lieutenant. I am sure it was an officer. He spoke French excellently well. He burst into my house without ringing with all his men behind him and according to what he said, he was coming to see the wounded man. He spoke to the wounded man in German in the presence of his soldiers and when he had finished with him he asked me if the wounded man's condition was grave. I told him that there was hardly any hope. As he was leaving my house, in the passage he said to me abruptly: "I have just been burning four houses." I asked him why: "Why!" he said: "because " one of the occupants of these houses fired yesterday on the Uhlans." I said to him that it was impossible; that I had seen the Uhlans arrive and that I must have heard the crack of the rifle if a shot had been fired. These houses are only 200 yards away from me. "Moreover," said I, "one of your men who had lost his horse went right through the village "without receiving any bad treatment although he was absolutely alone. He asked the "way his comrades had gone and people told him which way they had gone." "Ah!" said he, "did they really?—at any rate, your people are bad lots. You have got lots of Socialists.' I said to him: "Well, what about you? Have not you any?" "Yes," said he, "but you said he, "but your Government is social democratic." I then told him that our people were quite quiet and that he had nothing to fear from them. "At any rate," said he, "the Belgians tear the eyes out of our prisoners." I was flabbergasted and protested that it was not so. He then said: "It is a pity we have to fight the Belgians. Why did not you come in with us? We would have given you a bit of France." I said to him: "You could not expect us to do that—what "about honour? Would you have taken it on if you had been in our place?" and the officer

answered definitely "no."

My brother-in-law and another man were in the yard of the next house at this time. After this the officer went away, telling my brother-in-law, who asked him whether doors and windows should be kept shut, that there was no necessity to do so. About 4 or 5 o'clock we were in front of the house in the street, that is to say, my brother-in-law, another man, and myself. We were talking and we were looking at the sentinel who was stationed on the railway. At this moment bullets whistled past our ears. There was a sharp burst of firing all round and we bolted indoors. The firing lasted for about two hours and we thought that it must be that a Belgian force had returned to recapture the village. When the firing stopped about seven, I ventured out to my window, and I saw the villagers running-men, women and children, all of them in the direction of the quarries where it was known that there were no Germans. I ran out and asked what was the matter. It was not till then that I saw the fire. The whole of the district round the station was blazing. It was one long line of fire for a distance of two miles in the direction of the hamlet of Tramaka. On the Andenne side we could see the houses of the Namur road and all the little farms which rise one above the other on the heights of the right bank burning. We could hear firing still going on. Women came by screaming and saying that their husbands had been hauled out of the house, and that they did not know what the German soldiers had done with them. They also said that the soldiers were firing through the openings into the cellars and into the ground floor rooms and that whenever they saw a shadow of someone, or someone running away, they fired upon it. About nine I went off on foot in the direction of Namur.

I should be able to identify the commandant of whom I have spoken above. I think he belonged to the Brandenbourg regiment. As for the officer, he was quite young without

hair on his face and thin. I cannot say if I could identify him.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Wednesday, the 19th August, from daybreak onwards fighting took place between the 8th Belgian Regiment of Line and the German Army on the left bank of the Meuse on the heights of Seilles. At eight o'clock in the morning Belgian soldiers blew up the bridge of Andenne and withdrew under the forts of Maizeret and Marchovelette. At 10 o'clock Andenne was entered for the first time by a group of about twelve Uhlans, who went up to the bridge and discovered that it had been blown up. It is stated that from this moment the Uhlans intended to massacre a part of the population. Some inhabitants of Andenne, who were near the bridge at the moment when the Germans entered, heard them saying, "Andenne massacre." The Germans went back by the way they came and returned about half an hour afterwards. They were accompanied by the burgomaster and went to the local tax collector and compelled him to hand over the contents of his safe. Shortly afterwards several thousand Germans entered Andenne and made arrangements to spend the night there. Everything was quiet. On Thursday, the 20th August the Germans began to build two bridges over the Meuse, taking for this purpose the building timber, the iron girders, casks, &c., from the different depôts in Andenne itself and Seilles. All went well till half-past four in the afternoon, when sounds of firing were to be heard on the left bank of the Meuse, which was replied to from the right bank. The Belgian troops had been removed the night before. It must have been the Germans firing on each other. The firing went on incessantly till late in the evening. It was not so intense during the night, but it did not cease. Several mitrailleuses were put into action in various streets of the town. Some of these mitrailleuses were placed on one side of the street so as to fire on the house on the opposite side. The Germans were, for the most part, drunk, and they were stationed before the houses firing with their rifles into the doors and windows. About six o'clock in the morning a group of Germans burst into the house where we had taken refuge. It was in the principal square of Andenne. We were taken with our hands raised above our heads into the square of Andenne. We were taken with our hands raised above our heads into the square, and there each of us was searched—men, women and children; old people, sick people and invalids were dragged there from every part of the town. The men were lined up on one side and the women on another. Three men were shot before our eyes, a fourth was run through by a bayonet and drew his last breath in our midst. He was a butcher (names given). The first idea of the German colonel (I do not know what regiment he belonged to, but this fact has been noted by others) was to shoot us all so far as we can tell. However, a young German girl from Berlin intervened and begged the colonel to spare us. She had been staying a few days at Andenne. The colonel dropped his first idea and decided to put 25 soldiers round us and make them shoot once apiece into the mass of us. The girl intervened again and the colonel thereupon chose out some of us and they were taken on to the banks of the Meuse and shot. The colonel accused the population of firing on the soldiers. He decided to keep us as hostages for some time and threatened to shoot two of us for each shot fired by civilians. About 500 of us were taken into three houses, the three first houses at the beginning of the bridge which had been blown up. It was only when I got there that

b 2

I learned of the awful massacre which had taken place. More than 400 people were shot and massacred for the most part in the cellars of the houses. The burgomaster, a doctor, was wounded in his house and then dragged three or four hundred yards to the place where he died. One whole family was wiped out with the exception of the women. Eight of their menfolk were killed. M... de B..., a manufacturer, was blown through by a mitrailleuse a few yards from his house. His wife picked up his body and brought it home in a wheelbarrow. A little later the Germans got into her house and ransacked it. They piled up all the eatables in the house and relieved themselves upon the heap. Another manufacturer had his throat cut from ear to ear. A spirit dealer had his hands cut off at the wrist. A hairdresser was murdered in his kitchen when he had a child sitting on each knee. A paralytic was killed in his garden. I know many other details of this sort. After the massacre the general sack of the town took place. Then the colonel wished to compel women and children of less than fourteen years of age to bury the dead civilians. Some of us, who had been left free in order to arrange about requisitioning, made representations to him and he abandoned this project. In the afternoon 40 prisoners were called for to dig trenches. They were brought back at night and taken out again in the morning and had to bury dead bodies in the trenches which they had dug the night before. Dry bread and water was all they got to eat.

On the third day of our imprisonment there were still dead bodies in certain houses. A new search was ordered to be undertaken by civilians in all the houses. I, myself, was summoned to take away a dead body in the house of an inhabitant. During our detention we were forbidden to open windows to let in air. The w.c. and urinals were full to overflowing and the whole place was filled with an abominable stench. On this third day of our detention at seven o'clock in the morning we were walked for about an hour and a half on what remained of the blown-up bridge. It was rumoured that we were all to be killed if the Belgian forts endeavoured to destroy the wooden bridge which the Germans had constructed. After this the old people and the married men were set free. The young people were kept for another day and night.

A few days after all this happened the Germans wished to make their peace with the population, so they got up a "fête nocturne" and made bonfires in the Grande Place. At this fête the officials nominated by the Germans were compelled to be present. My brother-inlaw could give you full details of this fête. He told me that the women were compelled to go there; that tables were spread and that hot wine which had been stolen in the town, was drunk, and that the women were compelled to shout "Hoch le Kaiser" and to sing "Deutschland über Alles."

The civilian population were perfectly quiet. Civilians did not fire on the soldiers and

did nothing whatever to justify the barbarous conduct of the German Army

Two days after I was set free the Germans came to my house at five o'clock in the morning. In the afternoon I was told that I was going to take in some German officers. They arrived and asked me to go and find a woman to help them in the kitchen. While I was away they found six sporting cartridges in my house. My gun had been given up at the Town Hall. Under the pretext that I had concealed cartridges the Germans wanted to shoot me, but after threatening me for a quarter of an hour they decided not to. They made merry all the night with my wine. The list annexed hereto contains some of the names of civilians who were murdered at Andenne.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 20th August there was violent rifle firing by the German soldiers upon the inhabitants of the village of Seilles, near Andenne, and at the same time that the inhabitants were massacred the Germans set fire to a great number of houses in the village—perhaps 70 to 100.

The day before (19th August) four houses had been burnt on the pretext of firing having

taken place from them on the German troops.

b 3

b 4

There was no such firing and I did not hear a single shot.

The Red Cross flag was flying On 20th August I was talking to a friend at his door. from the roof and was quite distinct, but as I stood there a violent firing on the house from German rifles took place.

MARRIED WOMAN.

On the 15th August I went to see my husband at Antwerp; he is a soldier. remained there for two days. On my way back I had to leave the train by Ouvelet and I was trying to return on foot towards Huy. At Andenne I could not get any further. The Belgian soldiers stopped me; I remained there for two days. On the second day the Germans entered. On the third day as they were eating in a hotel the Belgian guns began to fire upon Andenne. Then the German soldiers left the house and began to fire upon it. We hid ourselves in the cellar, where we remained until 7 o'clock the next day; there were 13 of us in the cellar. In the morning we escaped across the wall to hide in the neighbour's cellar, because it was a little calmer. At 8 o'clock the Germans started to fire upon the house where we were. Then they came in; they drove everybody out with rifles and revolvers in their hands. They shot the three men in the garden, although the women begged for their lives. They kept us in the corridor with our arms raised.

Then they shut us up in a room on the second floor. I escaped through a door which the Germans had not noticed and went down to the first floor. Then I escaped by a window

on the first floor.

On the road I met a German who was carrying a sheet full of pipes and cigars, which he had stolen. He compelled me to help him to carry it and he took away my cloak and my bag. Then he let me go and gave me back my property and also gave me a card by way of pass. A waggon passed with about 10 German soldiers on it and they compelled me to get up and kissed me. Then they let me go.

I was able to cross the bridge at Huy by means of the soldier's card.

I remained several days at home at Huy.

On the 23rd, a Sunday morning, my father, being in ill-health, went out for a walk. He met 15 Germans, who beat him, his skull was cut open; but he was not dead. He was carrying an umbrella and the German soldiers accused him of carrying a gun. They dragged him as far as the theatre in the park, where they again beat him and broke his feet with their rifle butts. Finally, they hanged him to the roof of the theatre.

About lunch-time somebody came to tell us that our father was a prisoner in the park. We went to see, and we begged for his life, but he was already almost dead. My sisters saw him cut down and his body thrown into the water. I remained in bed for seven days and on

the third day we were allowed to have the body back.

The soldiers belong to the 13th German Regiment of the Line; I should be able to recognise them.

Belgian Soldier.

After the retreat from Namur the whole Transport Corps arrived at Bioulx, near Namur, and I then saw German soldiers with lighted torches putting house after house on fire. This was about 9.30 p.m. A large stack of hay had been fired by the Germans, but upon the arrival of the Belgian troops the Germans put out the fire by throwing earth on to the stack.

The Germans then attacked the Belgian troops, and the Belgians retreated, and nearly all were taken prisoners. At Fosse, in the Province of Namur, I left the Transport Corps owing to the defeat and capture of my comrades and escaped; and I went with the people of the village of Fosse into several of their houses, and saw that every house had been pillaged by

the Germans, and its contents stolen.

While at Fosse, I saw a number of refugees on the road from Fosse to Vitrival, on the way to Charleroi. There were about ten women and some children, About 24 German soldiers came towards them, and one of the soldiers had undone his trousers, and exposed his private parts. He approached one of the women, intending to violate her, and she pushed him away. He at once struck this woman in the breast with the bayonet. I saw her fall. Some of this man's comrades laughed as he showed them the bayonet dripping with blood. He then wiped the blade of the bayonet on his coat. I saw this while I was hiding near by, but I dare not try to help the woman because I was still wearing my uniform, and would have been shot at once. I only had my rifle with me at the time. The soldiers appeared to me to belong to the artillery, but I cannot say definitely which regiment they belonged to. They then went away on the road to Fosse. I did not see the wounded woman again.

I am quite certain that the whole of the 24 soldiers had been drinking.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

We saw the Germans breaking down the doors of the houses in Romsée. They came to a house where three men whom I knew (but I cannot recall their names) lived. There were two men of about 60 years of age and a young man of 18, the son of one of the old men.

The Germans broke open the door and went into the house, and they came out saying that they had found a revolver in the house. They brought out the three men and put them against the wall of the house and shot them dead. They then threw the bodies into the house and set alight to the house. In the afternoon I went back to the house and saw the three bodies, they were burnt by the fire. The Germans said that shots had been fired from the house, but that was not true. I am certain that no shot was fired from the house. I and my friend must have heard any shot fired from the house.

Belgian Soldier.

On the first day of the fighting round Namur, when my company was at Marchovelette, two of my comrades were wounded. The medical service had not come up, so we carried them to a farm on the left of our trenches. This was in the morning. Later in the day the Germans attacked us in superior numbers. We were only one company on outpost duty and were forced to retreat. We ran in different directions, and I made for the farm. I had been in the farm before in the course of the day, and had spoken to the farmer, who said that he and his family were going to hide in the granary when the Germans should come. I cannot now remember the name of the farm or farmer. The Germans came to the farm. They were infantry. I was hiding behind a tree. One of the wounded men was in the courtyard of the farm. When the Germans entered the farm, he implored them to spare his life. He was on his knees. They pushed him back into a shed which was next to the granary and

h 5 Environs of Namur.

> b 6 Romsée.

b 7 Marchovelette



would not listen to his supplications. I then saw some Germans collecting the farm horses, chickens, &c., while some others brought straw which they put in the shed where the wounded man was, and in the kitchen. I could see the door and windows of the kitchen. The door of the kitchen was open. I could just see in. The wounded man in the shed was too severely wounded to run away. The other wounded man was in the granary with the farmer and his family. There was another shed near the kitchen. It was a big farm. The Germans set fire to the straw and the farm was soon on fire—the granary immediately. When the smoke began all the Germans came out. One of them was riding one of the farm horses with one of the farmer's daughters in front of him. He had his left arm round her. She was crying and her hair was all down. I do not know what became of her. I was behind the tree all this time. When the Germans went I went away too and managed to rejoin my regiment about two hours later.

The farmer and his family and the wounded men must have all been burnt. I could not enter the farm because of the fire, and I could not leave my hiding-place for some time as there were other Germans not far off.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

b 8 Bonnine, I was on patrol duty, about 12th or 13th August, in a wood in Bonnine, near Namur, with two other Belgian soldiers. As we were coming out of the wood I saw six Uhlans. We killed two Uhlans; and one of my comrades was also killed. I ran behind a tree, and then saw a dead horse. The captain of the Uhlans (whose horse was dead) approached towards me on foot with a revolver in each hand. He shot at me, and missed. I shot him in the jaw, and he died immediately. I took his sword, which had a golden handle, and I saw from his card that he was Count Fritz Bülow. The major of my regiment afterwards told me to retain the sword, which was subsequently burnt with my other belongings in a house where

I had to seek refuge near Namur.

A week later the Germans bombarded Bonnine. Some 15 Uhlans were coming in the street there, and I saw two peasants hide themselves behind a wagon. One of the Uhlans dragged them from the wagon, and he hacked them to pieces with his sword with the help of other Uhlans. I was in a house on the opposite side of the street, and with my comrades fired on the Uhlans, and killed 13 out of the 15; the two others escaped. We made barricades and trenches in the place, and at the end of nine days only four of my company were left (out of 240). We escaped by hiding under the corpses of our comrades, and got to Namur. The four of us barricaded ourselves in a house, and eventually three of us escaped, but I fell from a window and injured myself. We crossed Namur during the bombardment of the town, and the streets were full of the corpses of men, some Belgian soldiers, civilians, priests, women and children. I also saw the headless corpses of a woman and child lying over a balcony of a house in one of the streets. I think that they had been killed during the bombardment of the town. In a street at Namur I and my two comrades (we had changed into civilian clothes meantime) mixed with a crowd of about 150 people, and the German soldiers came up from side streets and without a word of warning fired on the unarmed people, and only 10 persons escaped—I being one of them. These nine people were afterwards taken prisoners, but I got free.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

b 9 Geldbressée. In the middle of August I was engaged with other Belgian soldiers on reconnaissance duty at Geldbressee, near Namur, when I saw two Belgian woman who had just been shot by German soldiers and killed. The Germans were then some 400 yards away. The women had just been killed. Other women near by told me the two had been taken out of their houses and shot. I did not see the assassination.

In October I went after a battle into a small inn in the village of Lebbeke; I saw two women there who told me that German soldiers had bound their hands behind their backs in the cellar of the inn and violated them both. It had happened a week or 10 days before. It was mother and daughter, the daughter 20 or 22 years old, they were the wife and daughter of the innkeeper.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

b 10 Temploux. On the 23rd of August, 1914, the Germans entered my village (Temploux) and came to L...'s house. L..., who was a professor of modern languages at the College of Namur, was prepared, under the force of circumstances, to obey the German orders with regard to receiving the German soldiers who were billeted on him, and came to the door to admit the commandant. The commandant, 257 Düsseldorf Company, drew his revolver and shot L... in the lungs, in the presence of his wife, young daughter, and son and myself. L..., as he was dying, asked the commandant the reason for this brutality, and the reply was that the commandant had lost his temper, because certain Francs-tireurs fired upon the Germans entering Temploux, but these Francs-tireurs did not exist, but they were actual Belgian soldiers, for whom neither L... nor the village of Temploux were responsible. Having committed this murder, the German soldiers burned the house, in order to hide the cowardly act.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The Germans entered Namur, 24th August, and the following day, and at the same time the town was systematically set on fire in six different places. Concurrently, there was indiscriminate firing on the civilian population as they ran out of their burning houses. Large numbers were killed. I do not personally know that any women or children were killed. A neighbour of mine and his son, a young fellow of about 20; were arrested by the Germans as they ran out of their house and shot forthwith. I did not see the shooting, but I saw the dead bodies. About 140 houses were burned altogether in Namur. Some days before the German entry, the Belgian authorities had put up notices warning the population against giving any provocation to the Germans and none of any kind was given. In particular there was no firing on the troops. My brother-in-law informed me that immediately the Germans entered Surice, 24th August, they shot several persons, in particular, one man of over 80. That night there was a council of war (German). Next day (25th), the Germans ordered all the inhabitants to come out of their houses and all the men who had not already fled were shot, including several strangers temporarily there.

Amongst those shot, were :-

(11 names given, all people of good standing.)

The French were driven out of Surice by the Germans and there may have been firing by them during their retreat. My brother-in-law said there was no provocation of any kind given by civilians nor did he tell me that the Germans made such complaint. But, in fact, that was an allegation they always made.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Sunday, August 25th, I saw the Germans set fire to the hospital at Namur, which was displaying a white flag bearing the Red Cross. They plastered the walls with inflammable pastilles about the size of a penny, which they rubbed with the hand and ignited.

I asked a superior German officer why they had done this, and he replied that soldiers in

the hospital had fired on them, and they had been obliged to burn it down.

I was unable to ascertain whether or not this statement was true.

I saw the dead bodies of a contractor and his son, who had been shot by the Germans as they were escaping from Namur. There were no weapons near them, and the father was still holding in his hand a tobacco pipe.

Belgian Soldier.

I had served 18 months in the Army, and finished my service two years and a half before war broke out, when I was recalled to the colours. I am an engine driver on the State Railway.

On the 27th August I was taken prisoner at Denée, in the province of Namur. I was marched to a place I did not know by a roundabout way, when happened the events I am

about to narrate.

I was taken prisoner by a company of Germans of the 62nd Regiment of infantry. They had "Gibraltar" or "Cibraltar" (I don't know which) on their sleeves.

There was a civilian who was a prisoner too.

I asked him why he was a prisoner. He told me that a German priest had given him a letter to take to an ambulance, and had put a red cross on his arm. When he returned from the ambulance he took the Red Cross off his arm. A German officer saw him do this and made him prisoner.

The next morning I saw him shot.

That same day I saw two other civilians who had been taken prisoners. One was about 36 years old. He was a cripple with one leg shorter than the other. The other civilian was an old man about 80 years old, and paralysed—palsied. Neither was capable of bearing arms. Two German soldiers told their officer that these two men had wounded them by shooting at them with rifles. Neither had rifles nor anything in their pockets. I saw the Germans search them. The Germans kicked them. The next morning I saw them shot.

MARRIED WOMAN.

My husband and I were at the outbreak of the war between Germany and Belgium keeping a small shop at Tamines. My husband also worked as a labourer.

Our house is situated on the village green at Tamines, and commands an uninterrupted

Tamines was occupied by the Germans in the first fortnight in August 1914. On or about the 15th or 16th August I saw a German soldier kill a little Belgian boy of about 15 years of age who was walking on the aforesaid green. The little boy was killed by a rifle bullet. As far as I could see the boy was doing no harm to any one. I do not know the boy's name.

On some date between the 15th and 20th August I saw about 20 German soldiers. together with an officer, on the aforesaid green. A little girl and her two little brothers came and looked at the said soldiers. I then saw these soldiers kill her and her two little brothers.

b 11

b 12 Namur.

b 13 Denée.

b 14

Tamines.

The girl was killed by being shot through the ear. These three children, whose ages were 8, 12, and 15, were no relations of mine or my husband, but they were well known to me as inhabitants of Tamines.

At about the same date referred to in the preceding paragraph of this my declaration, I saw German soldiers force an old man of about 70 years of age, who was well known to me, to assist them to lift up certain wounded German soldiers. When he had finished this work he was shot and killed by the soldiers.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About 23rd August the Germans came from Lambusart to Tamines. They arrived in Tamines in the afternoon. They were infantry and artillery who entered. There were about 50 French soldiers at Tamines for some days before. They had come from the neighbourhood of Charleroi. They barricaded the bridge over the Sambre at Tamines. The Germans fired on Tamines from Velaine-s/-Sambre the day of their entry, and the French soldiers replied with shrapnel. The French retired before the Germans advanced. The Germans arrived in groups. I did not see them enter. I had hidden in my cellar when I heard the bombardment. My street had been bombarded and there was hardly anything left standing in it. It was about 2 p.m. when I went down into my cellar. My wife and I and our two children had taken dinner together in our house, and after dinner my wife and the elder child, a little girl of $7\frac{1}{2}$ years, had gone out to the house of my sister-in-law. I never saw either of them alive again.

For my own part, towards evening I came out of my cellar with my little boy and went with him to the house of my sister-in-law to look for my wife and little girl. There was no one there. In order to go to my sister-in-law's house from mine one does not pass the public square or go near the Sambre. I did not see a single person anywhere I passed and I returned with my little boy to the cellar. It was not till the next morning that I learned what had happened. I went down to the station; I spoke to a man called G . . . He did not wish to tell me about my wife. He said she had probably been taken to the wood at Velaine. I went there.

The women who had been shut up in the churches had been taken there the evening before and had been made to pass the night in the wood, an iron fence being drawn around it. I succeeded in seeing my sister-in-law there and she told me that my wife and daughter had left her house to go home when they heard the firing the day before. I went back to G., and then he told me gently what had happened.

and then he told me gently what had happened.

I then went to the public square and I saw it littered with corpses in all kinds of positions.

German soldiers were keeping guard by them. I did not see the bodies of my wife and child then. I went again to my sister-in-law's house. It was open, but my sister-in-law had not yet returned. The place had been looted—that is, the office there—by Germans.

The Germans compelled men of the town to help in digging a grave in the public square for the killed. The Christian Brothers and the curé of the Church of St. Martin had to help to dig. The bodies were put in one on top of another. While this was being done that afternoon I saw for the first time the bodies of my wife and child. My wife's body had a stab in the head and also one in the breast at the left side. My little girl had a stab in the neck. I saw also the body of the curé of the Church of Les Alloux. His ears and one arm were cut and nearly severed from the body. Amongst those who had been shot down the day before was my nephew, the son of my sister-in-law, 16 years of age.

G... and my sister-in-law and others told me that the Germans had said that the inhabitants had fired on them. It was not true. All arms had been delivered up at the mairie by order before that date.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

b 16 Morlanwelz.

b 15

During August, after the fighting at Liège, I was at home at Morlanwelz. My house is near the railway. My wife and I saw some English cavalry arrive. They called out "English! English!" as they came by our door. We cried "Hurrah for England! Hurrah for France!" whereupon the English made signs to us not to shout. Two hours afterwards, a battle began behind my house and twenty minutes' walk away from it. The English were stationed in a farm belonging to the Burgomaster of Péronne This gentleman is a member of the Belgian Parliament, belonging to the Catholic party. His farm is in the commune of Péronne. The English were compelled to retreat as well as some French cavalry which was with them. The Germans advanced and captured the farm, which they burnt. They took the Burgomaster and his manservant prisoner, and carried them off in front of the Hôtel de Ville of Péronne (Belgium), which is not far off and there they shot them both. They bandaged the Burgomaster's eyes with his tricolour scarf of office. I saw the corpses, but did not see the men shot. The relations of the dead men were ordered not to touch the bodies, which were left in the street 48 hours. They also burnt the Hôtel de Ville and 62 houses on the same day. The Germans said, as they always did, that the civilians had fired on them. That is untrue. Three or four days before they arrived the Burgomaster had informed the civilian population, by means of circulars distributed to each house and placards, that all guns and fire-arms must be deposited at the Hôtel de Ville, and this was done. These arms deposited at the Hôtel de Ville were broken up by the Germans during their stay in the town.

ENGINEER.

About the 21st August at Monceau-sur-Sambre the Germans shot a young man belonging to the district named R... He was 18. They shot him in his garden.

This is how it happened: the Germans burst in the front door, the young man ran sur-Sambre. out into the garden by the back door, the Germans shot him firing from the corner of the house into the garden. Immediately afterwards the Germans seized the young man's father and another of his sons aged 22. They took them to the courtyard of a château (the Château Baslieu) and shot them there together with some others. They shot the son first, then they compelled the father to stand close to his son's feet and to fix his eyes upon him and shot him in that position. The Germans buried them in front of the château. With regard to the other son, the son shot in the garden, the neighbours yielding to the entreaties of his mother, carried him into the house and put him on a bed. The next morning the Germans arrived and asked where the corpse was to be found. The neighbours were compelled to say that it was in a room in the house. The Germans accordingly fetched straw, entered the house, found the corpse, put straw round the bed on which it was lying and set fire to it. The house was completely burnt down. They also burnt 312 houses at Monceau. It would appear that they had a fixed intention to commit atrocities at Monceau. Many people living in the surrounding villages have told me that the troops were always asking about the whereabouts of Monceau: "Where is Monceau? Which is the road to Monceau?"

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I arrived in England direct from Montigny on Wednesday last, 18th November. I was there continually since July. It is 2 kilometres lower down the river than Charleroi. On Saturday, the 22nd August, Uhlans arrived at 7 a.m. They were engaged with the French Army on each side of the town some distance away, about 4 kilometres. French were in ambush—a small detachment only of 150 or 200—in the wood situated on a very steep hill overlooking the main road, about 60 or 70 metres in height. The Germans commenced to march through the town at about 1.30 p.m. First came the cyclists, about 20, then about 50 infantry, then a good 100 Belgian hostages collected from the neighbouring villages, two or three of whom I knew personally, one F., a priest, and another priest whose name I do not know; then more cyclists, then more infantry. Then followed nearly 300 hostages, generally five in a row, though sometimes only four. There was a large new rope round them and the front, rear and outside men had to hold it in their hands. They were escorted by soldiers with fixed bayonets. A detachment halted in the street and put down their arms. The Belgians gave them everything they wanted, food, cigars, soap, towels, I think, so that they might have no harm done to them or their houses and shops. They then looked for some route up to the hill where the French were, which was not so steep as that coming direct from the town. About 5 the French commenced to fire on them, the hostages having passed out of the town. I met a French soldier afterwards in the hospital who told me they would have fired sooner but for the hostages being there. The instant the French fired the Germans set fire to houses all along the main street—I believe the total number was 131. They chased all the inhabitants out, saying that there were French soldiers there. There were no soldiers there and they did not find a single one. I saw this from the church tower. I went up there two or three times for a few minutes. Otherwise I was out in the street or in my own house which commands a view of the main street. All these houses were totally destroyed. The street opens out into a round "place." There they burnt every house except three, one of the inhabitants of which spoke German and asked them not to. They each carried a little bag containing pellets of an explosive nature. [The witness here showed the two pieces, one round and one square, of a material rather like glue, which were samples of what they used. The larger one was rather larger than a shilling.] They were a regular corps of incendiaries and each of them had the word "Gibraltar" on the last arm of his tunic left arm of his tunic.

There were others who set fire to houses with petrol, but the regular "incendiaries" used these explosive pellets. They were thrown in in handfuls and made the fire burn very fiercely. About 10.30 p.m. about 200 hostages passed. At about the same time they put about 50 men, women and children on the bridge over the Sambre, and kept them there till 5 a.m. I suppose to prevent the bridge being blown up, at any rate, they feared it was mined. The river is narrow and not fordable. The 200 hostages I saw at 10.30 were from Montigny itself.

I visited the hospital on Monday morning and saw 27 lying dead. They had been shot outside the hospital during Saturday night, Sunday and Sunday night, the matron of the hospital and the doctor had brought them in and found out their names, and told me that several of them were killed before their own wives.

On Saturday night many of the Germans were drunk. They pillaged all the shops. The whole town was full of them. I never heard an officer give an order to fire houses, but I am sure they must have ordered it.

There was a priest who was assisting at the hospital. He had a niece who spoke German, and when they had broken one window of the hospital she said it was the hospital and they did not fire it. Her uncle's house was already on fire and she asked an officer to b 18

have it put out, and he at once sent a soldier to put it out, and it was done. Only a curtain and two chairs being burnt. A school prepared for Red Cross work, with beds all ready but not yet occupied by wounded, was burnt. It was a large building belonging to the Christian Brothers. Four of the latter were amongst the hostages I saw at 10.30 p.m., and were very badly treated. An officer on inquiring what that large building was which was on fire, and learning it was the Christian Brothers' temporary hospital said, "That is stupid."

They took the Christian Brothers to the bridge over the Sambre and marched them to

Somzee more than 20 kilometres away in the direction of Phillipeville. They beat them and tore their clothes. I was taken prisoner at 6.30 a.m. on the Sunday in the street by a soldier close to my house on my return from mass. There had then been no orders given that inhabitants were not to go out at night. Even if they had been it was broad daylight at 6.30. I was taken before officers and I asked why I was taken, and permission to get my overcoat, hat, and umbrella. I was sent back with five soldiers as escort. They would not let me go in. My sister, who lives with me gave them to me. Then I was taken before other officers of higher rank, officers of the artillery. They charged me with not keeping the population in order and said I was responsible for civilians firing on the soldiers. I replied that I had told everyone not to fire on the soldiers and that I was sure that they had not done so. I explained that it was the French who had fired, and pointed out the position of their pachine guns—they had two. An officer said "it was the civilians." They had been dish seed on the Friday night but I had not time to tell them so. All their rifles were in the Hôtel de Ville. The Germans themselves had found them there and destroyed them and set the Hôtel

de Ville on fire. He said he would destroy the whole town with big guns.

I asked when I could hope to be set at liberty. He replied, "You can go." He spoke French." Then the soldiers, four in number, took me to the other end of the village into a field near the hospital. There were then only two or three other hostages, but the soldiers brought them in from all directions, and at the end of an hour there were more than 100. The other officers then came and questioned me. They were quite affable and listened to what I had to say. Hostages were forbidden to speak to each other. They asked me whether I knew the houses where there were arms. I said I could not tell. I said I had not seen any civilian fire with either rifle or revolver, I heard no revolver shots. I could have told the difference by the sound. I said that the inhabitants had given them food and cigars and other things and treated them well. They said that was only done to get an opportunity of

killing the Germans more easily by gaining their confidence.

The French had retreated about 6 p.m. on the Saturday, but the Germans kept firing all night and they were drinking heavily, everywhere having looted the shops and cafés. I saw no attempt to restrain them. The Germans thought that the French were still in the wood long after they had gone and shot into every house, as well as firing houses, thinking there

might be French there.

It was about 7.30 when they took three men from amongst the hostages and shot them in the same place where the others had been shot. It was said that these three had been found hiding in a cellar and there had been a revolver found in a chest of drawers on the 1st floor. There was no trial of any sort. They did not even attempt to show they had used it.

Next day they put up a notice that all persons found with arms would be shot and their houses burnt. After that many arms were given up. These were all revolvers except a very few small rifles (rabbit rifles). Ordinarily nearly everyone has a revolver. The district is an industrial one, and there are a certain number of bad characters. Nearly all Belgians have revolvers in the houses for self-defence at night.

The three men shot were named V . . , D . . , and M . . . It was V . . 's house, and

the other two had run in there for shelter from the firing.

V was a cafetier who had himself given the Germans much wine and spirits without demanding payment. D... was quite 65. The other two between 40 and 50.

When they shot them they told them to march forward and then said "Halt! Right about

turn" and they shot them the moment they turned.

We were then put in ranks of four and marched forward and the officer said "En avant et celui qui s'enfuit, il est mort." N.B.—The German officer's bad French.

We were marched right through the main street down to the Sambre and across the bridge-a house had just been fired there-and out into the country from place to place until 9 o'clock that night.

The same officer (of the 73rd Regiment) then called me out of the ranks—at the bridge and said, "If we are fired at in the villages we are going through, you and all your fellow " hostages will be shot. If we are not fired on, you will be set at liberty to morrow."

told me to tell this to the other hostages.

Three times during the day we were marched back to Montigny, and out in a different The first time we came back there were some women at the bridge, my sister, one woman, M..., and two young girls of about 15, and eight nuns of the order of Ste Marie. They were put with the other men, women, and children who had been on the bridge all night, none of them had food given them. We had no food when marched round the country, but one soldier gave me a small bit of bread.

At length we arrived at Loverval, 8 kilometres from Montigny; we rested amongst some ammunition wagons. There we stayed from 2 to 7 p.m. They gave us some water in dirty

buckets, such as are used for watering horses. The Christian Brothers told me on the Monday they made them lie down in one place to avoid the French rifle fire. About 9 o'clock, we arrived at a place called Malines and there we were kept for an hour. About that time, a youth of 18, whom I knew, he came from Montigny, and was not quite all there—I think his name was D... tried to escape and was at once shot, and wounded in the thigh. He fell and was left there without their even going to see if he was dead or wounded. His mother found him three days afterwards in a farm, 50 yards away. He was then dead. I expect he bled to death. At any rate there was no doctor to attend to him. The same officer I have spoken of came up, hearing the shots. He repeatedly struck the five men who were nearest to the one who had tried to escape, with clenched fists, and banged their heads against the wall behind, and then ordered the soldiers to shoot them. They led them away a little distance and I heard the shots. He was in such a rage he could hardly speak. He had hardly any voice left. There is a brewery at Malines and they took us there, and told us if we kept quiet and lay down in the straw we should be free in the morning. They would not let us open any windows though we were almost suffocated.

At 5 a.m., Monday, they took away the wagons they had put against the doors. I forgot to say that there were two non-commissioned officers who called me out when we were put into the stable and advised me to try and keep the others quiet during the night so that the captain might let us go in the morning. They said, speaking French: "It pains us very much to see you like this" and were quite kind to us, but there were others who were equally brutal.

We were taken back to the place where the six men were shot the night before, and kept there till 7 a.m. Then the captain came and called me out again and said: "They have fired at us again at Montigny during the night." I am sure it was false. He was silent a moment, and looked at me. Then he said "Go back all the same with these men and tell the people at Montigny not to fire on the German soldiers any more." I said, "Very well, thank you." I explained to him that we would meet other troops who would probably arrest us en route, and he said "Yes, that is so," and he called a soldier—his servant, I think—and dictated to him in German a "laissez-passer à Montigny," which he signed himself.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

22nd August, the Germans entered Jumet. I saw them driving before them, to a place where French troops were entrenched, about 100 Belgian civilians, including some persons I knew. There were several women amongst them and I noticed one child. The French fired on them but none were killed. The civilians were kept in line in front of the Germans by cavalry on either side of them. When the French began to fire the Germans fired on the civilians who were at hand and killed several. I was fired on but not struck. The Germans fired into the houses on either side the road. I followed along after the troops and in a house they had just passed I saw a wounded Belgian girl, about 22 or 23. Her parents told me she had hidden in an oven and a German soldier had opened the door and shot her. She died next day. On this day (23rd), I went to Lodelinsart, a neighbouring village. I saw there the dead bodies of two young men. They had been shot. The neighbours told me that these two young men and their father had been bound together by the Germans and that, after the two sons had been shot one of the father's hands was cut off. I am quite sure this is true. The father was taken to the civil hospital at Charleroi and there attended by a doctor. I was told he died of his injuries. He was a civilian of middle age. I know no reason for this outrage. The Germans I saw about this time were very violent and enraged, I think, with the French attack on them. Some of them appeared to have been drinking. At a house close to mine the Germans banged on a neighbour's door, and on his opening it to them he was shot in face and killed. He was a civilian.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On August 22 there was fighting in my village (Bouffioulx). This began at 7 a.m. and lasted till 1.30 p.m. They began again in the afternoon, and the fighting lasted from 5 p.m. till midnight. All the fighting was between the French and the Germans. There were no Belgian or English soldiers there at all. I stayed in my house in the morning and came out about 1.30 p.m. I saw a man lying dead in the street, shot through the chest, about 50 yards from his house. He was an old man of 65, in his ordinary clothes. His brother-in-law on August 23 (the next day) told me that he had been dragged out of his house when he was alone there with his wife. The door of his house had been broken, but the contents were not damaged. In another part of the village I saw the body of a clerk of about 25 years, unmarried. He had been shot. A..., who was with him when he was shot, told me that they were standing in the streets, and when the Germans came they ran away. A... managed to escape round a corner, but the clerk was shot. In Bouffioulx about one-third of the houses were burnt down and they tried to burn many others. I met one of my workmen sitting on his doorstep crying because they had burnt everything of his. I saw a friend dead in his house in the Chaussée d'Acoz. I saw him after he was dead. He had been shot in the chest and his throat was cut. He was lying in the front part of his shop, which is a grocer's shop. Everything was broken and the shop pillaged. He was a

b 19 Jumet.

b 20 Bouffioul**x**c quick-tempered man and probably he resisted the Germans, but I do not know this of my own knowledge, people in Bouffioulx say generally that he did resist. I saw this in the afternoon, about 2 o'clock. I then went to Les Tiennes, which is a part of the village quite near my place. A dozen of us went together. We saw 25 cottages burning. I saw two men of middle age, who were trying to get out of a grating from a cellar below the street. They were both shot by some Germans who were there in numbers. They could not have got out alive if they had not been shot, because of the flames. I saw a workman afterwards in the He told me that he and his wife were hiding in the cellar of his house at Les Tiennes. The Germans set fire to his house. He escaped through the grating and was shot while he was trying to get out. He was wounded in the chest and fell down and was afterwards taken to the hospital. His wife could not get out, she was found in the cellar afterwards badly burnt but not yet dead. She was brought to the hospital and died in a few hours. I saw her myself before she died. She spoke to me but she could not speak well enough to tell me what had happened. I did not see anyone shot with my own eyes but I saw about 15 dead altogether in the village and in the fields. All were civilians. I neither saw nor heard of any woman being shot or assaulted. I went to Tamines on Thursday, August 27. It is about four miles off Bouffioulx. It is absolutely destroyed and a mass of ruins. There had been 3,000 inhabitants there before the battle. There was no one to tell me what had happened. It is said in Bouffioulx that 527 had been shot. I was told so also at Ostend by people from the neighbourhood. There is no one else from Bouffioulx in England now as far as I know. I had sent my family away to Ostend before the battle. I saw only one German shot in the streets of Bouffioulx near my house. I heard the fighting.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

b 21 Charleroi, &c.

The 22nd August I was at Charleroi and had hidden in the cellar with some of my friends. The Germans found us and shot into the cellar through the door, which is in front of the house. I was not wounded myself but one of my companions whose name I do not know fell dead on my arm. Afterwards the Germans came into the cellar, they tied our hands behind our backs and took us out. We were obliged to bury the dead. Then the Germans told us to go to get something to eat, and as we were going away they shot at us and killed a man from Alost whose name was Jean; I do not know his surname; he was 54 years of age.

The next day I was at Charleroi and saw the Germans putting straw into the cellars of houses which had been burnt the day before, but in the cellars of which there were still living people, and setting the straw on fire. I was in the street when they were doing it. There were hundreds of Germans. There were officers ordering them to do this. I afterwards saw

the cellars full of dead bodies.

On the 26th of August I saw a lot of civilians shot near Maubeuge, in a field. I was a prisoner with them. Those who were shot were those who were running in front of the Germans and stopped a little. Those who did not stop were not shot. Near Brussels later on they shot an old man in my presence because he could not keep up.

SINGLE WOMAN.

b 22 Marchiennes au Pont.

I was at Marchiennes au Pont on the 22nd August; a young girl of 17 was killed by the Germans in a field behind the house in which she lived. I saw the body two days afterwards lying in the field. No one dared go out before, but on that day people—several people went to look at it. The body was quite naked, and the breast cut and covered with blood. I went to view the body with my brother. I was told that the girl, mistaking Germans for English, cried "Vive l'Angleterre!" She was dragged from the house into this field, outraged and killed.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

b 23 Couillet. I lived with my father at Couillet. I am 21 years of age.

About five weeks ago, that is to say, on or about the 25th of August 1914, and before the Germans had actually occupied Couillet, I left my father's house before noon to try to buy some bread for the family. I returned about 6.10 p.m. I happened to look at the clock and

am ware therefore of the hour. The Germans had by this time occupied Couillet.

When I returned I found our doctor in the house. The doctor at first tried to prevent me from entering the dining room. I, however, insisted upon doing so, and found there the dead bodies of my father and my mother and a little nephew of mine. My father's body had eight bullet wounds in it, of which three were in the head and five in the body. My mother's body had five bullet wounds in it, one in the temple, one at the back of the skull, and three in the back. My said nephew had been killed by a bayonet or sword—there were four wounds in the head and one in the stomach.

There were 27 bottles lying in the room, all of which were empty, except one, which had a little wine left in it. These bottles formerly contained red wine.

The said doctor told me how my parents and my nephew had been killed. He informed me that eight Germans, officers belonging to the 45th Battery or regiment of artillery, had demanded bread of my father, and when they did not obtain it they shot him with their

revolvers, although my father had told them that I had gone out to buy bread and that they should have some when I returned. My mother, who had begged the officers for mercy for my father, was then ordered to get some wine. When she had done this she also was shot by the officers and immediately afterwards my said nephew was killed with bayonets or swords.

At about 7 p.m. on the same day some German soldiers arrived at our house. They were all drunk. I had shut the doors of the house but they smashed one of them in. They took me prisoner, and I was taken to Charleroi and locked up there with about 50 other Belgian civilians and we were sent off next morning in cattle cars to Aix-la-Chapelle. We were kept prisoners at Aix-la-Chapelle for 12 days, being guarded by the 22nd Prussian Regiment. At the end of the twelfth day the said Prussian regiment was relieved by a Bavarian regiment. On the 18th day of my imprisonment at Aix-la-Chapelle a Bavarian soldier helped me to escape and gave me some bread. The Bavarian soldiers expressed themselves as friendly and said they did not wish to fight the Belgians. After my escape I came to Liège, Namur, and Charleroi. I found that my father's house had been burnt in the meantime and I eventually made my way to England where I arrived on the 24th September 1914.

MARRIED WOMAN.

Before coming to England we lived at Charleroi. I saw the German troops enter the town last September. As the troops entered the people fled from the streets to their houses. I saw an old Belgian named P..., whom I knew by sight and who was 60 to 65 years old, trying to get up the stairs leading to his rooms. The German soldiers seized him by the legs, dragged him back into the street and shot him dead with rifles. I cannot say how many shots, but several. I saw this myself. It was in our street. Before this happened the soldiers had ordered all the civilians to march in front of them with their hands held up. The old man, however, tried to get into his house and was shot as I have stated.

Shortly after this I saw a baker in the same street putting up his shutters and closing his shop. The Germans ordered him to march, hands up, with the others, but he refused and was shot and wounded in the leg with a rifle.

There was no firing on the German soldiers by civilians and there were no Belgian or French troops at Charleroi at this time. There was no firing at all nor any sort of provocation; the inhabitants were frightened and did their best to get out of the way and hide.

RAILWAY SERVANT.

I was in Charleroi Railway Station on or about the 24th September.* An engagement then took place between German and French troops. The French troops ordered us to leave the station, because of firing. I went home.

On the same night I went out and saw that several houses had been burned. I saw the charred bodies of a man and a boy. A small portion of the man's moustache had not been burned. I think that they had been killed during the engagement between the German and French troops earlier in the day.

During the evening while I was in the streets of the town a number of German cavalrymen came to the town. At the time there were a large number of civilians in the streets. The Germans without any warning shot at the civilians and I saw four men shot dead (this was in the street and on the way towards Brussels). I then ran away from the town and eventually arrived at Ostend.

WIDOW.

I lived with my husband at the commencement of the war at a house at Dinant.

On the 15th August there was an engagement between the French and the German troops near Dinant, and another engagement commenced on Saturday the 22nd August, and early on the following day (Sunday, 23rd August) the French troops were on one side of the river and the Germans were on the town side of the river, on the same side as my own house.

At 6.30 a.m. on that day I was having breakfast. I wanted to go to Mass, but was unable to do so, owing to there being a mitrailleuse placed in front of the house. At that time there were some German soldiers in the house next to mine, and the Germans knocked a hole from that house into my dining room. (The Germans entered the house in this way, because if they had come in front of the house the French troops, who were on the opposite side of the river, would have seen them.)

A German soldier came through the hole in the wall into our dining-room, and as he was doing so there was a knock at our back gate. My husband got up to open the back door, and as he did so the German soldier who had just come through the hole in the wall, and who was about three yards from him, shot him in the heart, and at once the blood spurted out, and he fell dead at once. I ran to catch him as he fell, but one of the two soldiers who were then in

b 24 Charleroi.

b 25

b 26 Dinant. the room struck me with his rifle, and I was taken prisoner. I did not lose consciousness. The German soldiers were yelling like savages. They made me leave the house with them, and as they walked they used some bad language in French. Each of the soldiers held me by the arms, and one of them struck me several times with the butt end of his rifle. I was taken to a convent, which was usually occupied by monks, called "Les Pères Français," and which was an old abbey.

My husband, who was fond of hunting, had some trophies in his house, and usually kept his weapons hung up on the walls, but he, and all the other civilians of Dinant, gave up all

the weapons at the commencement of the war by order of the Burgomaster.

The convent is about five minutes' walk from my house. In a grass square opposite the convent I saw the bodies of about 90 men lying on top of each other. These were all men who lived near to me and were all unarmed civilians. Amongst them were my brother and his two sons, aged 17 and 20.

(I was informed that these men had been taken late on the previous night (Saturday) or early on Sunday morning, and had been placed in a row and at once shot.) I heard no reason given for the shooting of these men, who were nearly all known to me, and I am certain that none of them had been killed during an engagement between the French and German troops.

I was placed in a cellar of the convent; it was a large cellar, and had a vaulted stone roof. The floor was of clay, except for a few boards placed here and there. There were about 60 other women and children in the cellar, and there also were prisoners in other

cellars. Some of the women who were in the cellar came from places near Dinant.

In the middle of Sunday night a priest came and told me to make my confession, and to prepare for death, as he said he supposed that we should all be killed, as the others had been. I then confessed. Just after I had done this a German officer came, and he told the priest that if he wanted to save all the women who were prisoners there he must pay him (the officer) 60,000 francs. The priest said he had not got all that money, but that he had 15,000 francs. The officer said he would accept this. He then laughed and spat in the face of the priest. The priest was immediately afterwards taken away, and I was informed that he was taken to the police prison.

I was kept with the other prisoners in the cellar from the Sunday morning until the following Friday night (28th August). I had to sleep on the ground; there were no beds. We were allowed to leave the cellar to obey the calls of nature, but always under the guard of soldiers. Otherwise we were kept in the cellar all the time. We were given no food until the Wednesday, when somebody threw into the cellar two sticks of macaroni and a carrot for each prisoner. We were not given any drink during the whole time, and did not receive any

other food.

Two soldiers were on guard at the door with rifles, and in the middle of the night the

soldiers came round to see that none of the prisoners were missing.

On the Friday night a German officer and a soldier came to the cellar, and told us that we could go away, and that those who had a home could go to it, and those who had no home left could return to the cellar. I was told this by some of the prisoners who could understand what the officer said.

I then went to my house, but could not get in, because the garden was full of horses, and the house was crowded with German soldiers.—I then spent the night at the house of a friend. On the next morning (Saturday) I again went to my house, but the Germans were still there.

I went to the house on the Sunday morning, and some soldiers were then coming out of the cellar, which they had put on fire. I went to the German commandant and told him in French that the soldiers had set fire to my house. Another officer explained to him what I had said, and he then came with some soldiers to my house, and they put out the fire. He then ordered all the soldiers out of the house and allowed me to go in. He then wrote on the big gate in German some words to the effect that no German soldiers were to enter the house. (This was explained to me by a soldier who could speak French.)

The German soldiers wore a grey uniform. They had small helmets, and about five of

The German soldiers were a grey uniform. They had small helmets, and about five of them were a small black feather, about 2 inches long, on the side of the helmet. I was told that all the soldiers who were killing civilians were a black feather. I do not know if the feather was a part of the uniform. The soldiers who had taken me to the convent were the same uniform. They had no epaulets or shoulder cords. I cannot say which regiment they

belonged to.

When I went into my house I saw dirt everywhere. The soldiers had obeyed the calls of nature in every part of the house. All the wine in the cellar had been drunk; the furniture had been smashed, and the doors had been broken. The furniture in the first floor bedroom had been thrown out of the window into the street. Everything of value, i.e., the silver, &c., had been stolen. (I produce the top of a pepper castor, which was the only thing left.)

A day or two after I was set free I asked one of the officers why my husband had been shot, and he said it was because two of my sons had been in the civil guard and had shot at the Germans. This was quite untrue, as one of my sons was at the time in Liège and the

other was at Brussels.

A woman, whom I did not know by name, told me that my husband had been buried in a hole in our garden. I then got a working man of the town to disinter his body, and

a doctor was present. The man dug up the body, and I then saw that my husband's body had been cut completely in two and placed in two sacks. I saw this myself.

(The witness here broke down.)

The body was dressed, but I saw that my husband's boots had been taken off. His money (about 1,000 francs) and his papers had been stolen. I then had my husband's body burned in the cemetery at Dinant.

The bodies of seven German soldiers had also been buried in my garden, in a large hole. I was informed that the chief director of the woollen factory at Dinant was hiding with some men under a large machine when the Germans arrived, and that all the men were taken to the convent I have mentioned and shot. I had seen his body at the convent on the previous Sunday (23rd August). The whole of the 90 bodies were put into a large trench near the convent. The Corporation of Dinant afterwards applied to the Germans for permission to disinter the bodies of these 90 men, and the Germans gave permission, but insisted upon the civilians doing the work. There were only five civilians then in the place, and one of them came upon the bodies of his father and brother. He stood back in horror, but the German soldiers beat him and made him continue digging, and he then found the bodies of his three nephews. Some of the bodies, which could not be removed, were left in the hole.

The bodies of 60 civilians were also taken out of a hole in a brewery yard at Dinant. The doctor told me that many of the civilians who had been believed to have been taken away as prisoners had in fact been killed and buried in Dinant. The bodies of men who were found had all come from, in, and around Dinant. 48 bodies of women and children were also found in a garden.

The civilians were all unarmed. They had even given their field glasses before the Germans arrived.

Belgian Refugee.

On Friday, the 21st August, at half-past nine in the evening, I was in the café of the Hotel St. Jacques at the corner of the Ciney road at Dinant with some friends. We heard a motor coming down from the Ciney road. At that time the right bank of the Meuse was in the possession of the Germans, and there were no Belgian or French soldiers on this side at that time. We thought that the motor in question must be a German military motor, so we asked the proprietor to turn out the light and to shut the door, which he did at once, and we went into the building behind the house. Hardly had we got there than we heard a mitrailleuse put into action and four bombs exploded in the hotel, wounding some of us. For my part, I got a wound in the left eye from a splinter. The mitrailleuse fired and the explosions went on for about half an hour, and during this time we were taking refuge in an inner courtyard of the building. We did not dare to move. When the noise stopped, we peeped out into the street, going through an empty house which had been smashed up by the mitrailleuse. It had not a single window or shutter left. In the street, it was simply one heap of broken glass, shutters and plate glass torn out.

Further up, about ten houses were on fire. It could be seen that the Germans had broken the windows so as to pass lighted torches into the buildings to keep the fires going. People who came out of their houses told us at once that there had been some people injured, and we found that a resident living in the Rue St. Jacques, had been struck by two bullets in the legs; that another resident had two bayonet thrusts and had been knocked out by blows from

the butt end of a rifle.

The wife of a farmer who was in bed with her little girl got two bullets in the body and her little girl had her foot torn off by bullets. [I saw the two of them carried down the Ciney road on a mattress.]

Apparently, also the Germans had suffered losses, for we found four military caps absolutely full of blood. Undoubtedly some of the soldiers had met their death while throwing bombs.

There was no justification whatever for these barbarous acts.

The population of Dinant was quite quiet and nothing which had occurred during the day gave any reason to suppose that an attack of this sort would be made. When I got back I found a hand grenade in my shop. It had not exploded. It had been thrown in through the glass panel in the door. We picked up next morning about 30 of these grenades and put them in water.

As a further proof of the peaceful state of the population, on the 19th that is to say, four days after the first bombardment which took place on the 15th August, two Uhlans came singly, one at midday and the other at half-past eight in the evening, passed right through the town by the St. Nicholas quarter and went away again without having been troubled in the least.

Belgian Refugee.

Before the war I was a merchant, tiving at Dinant. On 15th August there was a battle at Dinant between the French and the Germans. I saw the dead body of a Red Cross helper (civilian). I knew him; he lived in Dinant. I was told by a neighbour of mine that

b 27

b 28

the man had been deliberately shot at a distance of 10 or 15 yards. I heard no reason for this. The German troops entered Dinant, 21st August, and at once set fire to the houses in Rue St. Jacques. I saw a number of dead bodies of wounded Dinant people being carried by neighbours from this street to the middle of the town (hospital, &c.), and was told that the Germans had knocked at the doors, and as the inhabitants rushed out had killed or wounded them with their lances. Amongst the dead and wounded I saw several men, one woman, and a little girl of about 7. One of the little girl's legs was wounded with a sword or bayonet, and the other was broken.

I left Dinant, 22nd August, and at that time about 50 houses had been destroyed. They had been destroyed by inflammatory bombs after the Germans had seized the town and not by bombardment previously. I saw some bombs which had not exploded, but I did not see any being thrown. When bombs ran short they smashed windows with their rifles to assist conflagration. There was no firing by civilians in Dinant. The Germans had been worsted by the French on 15th August, and I think the violence and destruction in Dinant was by way of revenge for this.

I saw no signs of intoxication amongst the German troops. I neither saw nor heard of

any ill-treatment of women before I left.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The French were engaged with the Germans near Dinant on the 15th August, and the Germans were driven back. They returned on the 21st at about 10 p.m. They started burning the houses in the Rue St. Jacques, and burnt every house in that street; I was in my house at the time. The following day was quiet. About 10 p.m. the Germans and French were engaged, and firing took place across the town. The Germans and the French were again engaged. I spent the whole day in a cellar of a bank with my wife and six children. There were other persons there also. About 5 a.m. on the morning of the 23rd the firing ceased, and almost immediately after a party of Germans came. They first rang the bell and then they began to batter at the door and windows. My wife went to the door and two or three Germans came My wife asked if they wanted food. Many other Germans came in and told us to go out into the street. A soldier took hold of me and with a revolver pointed at me made me go out. The rest followed. In the street there was one other family besides mine. We were driven, with our hands above our heads, along the Rue Grande. All the houses in this street were burning. We were driven to the Rue St. Roch, and were put into a forge; there were a large number of other prisoners already in the forge-there were about a hundred. There we were kept from about 11 a.m. till about 2 p.m. We were taken to the prison. There we were assembled in a courtyard and searched; no arms were found. Then one after the other as we were searched we were passed through a door and were put in cells. I and my family, with several others, were put in one cell. My wife was not put in the cell with us. After about an hour, during which I heard rifle shots continually, I noticed in the corner of the courtyard, leading off the row of cells, a body of a young man, and saw a mantle thrown over it. I recognised the mantle as being that of my wife. My eldest daughter asked to be allowed to go and see what had happened to her mother and she was allowed to go, and about half an hour after I too was allowed to go across the courtyard to see after my wife. the soldiers took me and I found her lying on the floor in a room; my daughter was with her. I saw that she had bullet wounds in four places. She told me to return to our children and I did so. Soon after that, at about 5 p.m., I saw the Germans bringing out all the young and middle-aged men from the cells. I was allowed to stay with my family as I am 55. I saw from the cell in which I was these men ranged in three ranks in the middle of the courtyard. There were about 40 of them. About 20 Germans were drawn up opposite, but before anything was done there was a tremendous fusillade outside the prison, and the civilians who had been drawn up were driven back into their cells. Half an hour later the same 40 men were brought out into the courtyard again. Almost immediately there was a second fusillade like the first and they were driven back to the cells. At about 7 p.m. we were all brought out of the cells and marched out of the prison.

We were marched between two lines of troops to Roche Bayard, about a kilometre away. There we were placed in front of the German line; meantime the Germans were building a bridge over the Meuse immediately behind us. It was then dark. An hour later the women and children were separated and we were brought back to Dinant, passing the prison on our way. Just outside the prison I saw three lines of bodies which I recognised as being those of neighbours. They were nearly all dead, but I noticed movement in some of them; there

were about 120 bodies.

We were taken up to the top of the hill just outside Dinant, and were compelled to stay there until 8 o'clock next morning. We were then taken on foot by stages to Melrenx, where we were put into cattle trucks and taken to Coblenz and from there to Cassen. We were kept at Cassen for three months and were then taken back to Belgium. I rejoined my family at Huy, where a priest who had visited me at Cassen told me they were staying, everything at Dinant had been burnt, and that my wife had died the day after we were taken away.

b 29

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 23rd August I was in my shop. The Germans came and knocked at the door and made me go out into the street with my family. In the street were nine other persons. It was about 11.30 a.m. We were taken, with our hands above our heads, to the forge in the Rue St. Roch. There we found about 100 people, including last witness and his family. We were taken from there to the prison with last witness and placed in a cell adjoining that in which he was. I have heard his evidence and I confirm it in every respect. Amongst the 120 men who were shot were those whose names appear on this list.

BLACKSMITH.

AERSCHOT', MALINES, VILVORDE, LOUVAIN QUADRANGLE.

On the 19th August at 6 a.m. I left home with my father to go to work. We were then captured by German soldiers, both infantry and cavalry (I do not know to what regiments they belonged). An officer searched me; I had no weapons. I was then taken with two soldiers, and was compelled to break open the doors of houses; the people had locked their doors and were hiding. I then met 25 other men who had been taken prisoners and had to follow them. Other civilians were captured, and eventually there were 200 (men) prisoners, many of whom I knew, some invalids who were taken from their beds. We were then made to stand for two hours with our hands above our heads. The Burgomaster of Aerschot (M. Tielmans), by order of some German officers, said to the prisoners in Flemish, "Every "person among you who has weapons must take them to the Town Hall. Any of you poor "men who have got weapons will be killed by the Germans. I therefore beg all of you to "give up your weapons." The rifles had already been collected at the commencement of the war; one of the prisoners, known to me by sight, who had in his possession a gun used for pigeon shooting, then fetched this weapon. We were then allowed to go away.

At night the soldiers passed my house and I saw a railway guard who had been standing in the street, run away at their approach. A German officer shot the man dead with his revolver. Another man, who was also employed at the station, was shot dead at the same time by a soldier. On the same day there was a man named F. . . , who had two sons, one of whom was deaf, was standing by the sluice gates, and was ordered to hold up his hands. I understood what the orders were by signs and by the result. The son who was deaf did not obey the order at once, and was shot dead on the spot in presence of his father and brother. A Uhlan officer ordered the sluice gates to be opened, and the man in charge apparently did not do this quick enough. I heard the officer give some order, and the man

was shot dead at once.

On the same night the Germans placed cannon outside Aerschot, and bombarded the

At the burgomaster's house a German officer was staying. This officer was shot, and the burgomaster's son was accused of having shot him. The burgomaster's son had been wounded in the arm; I do not know when or how. I knew him well. He was a student and about 16, and could not have used a gun. The whole town was then fired by the Germans. and everybody who came out of their houses were taken prisoners and sent to the market place, which was named Market Square. The market was one blaze of fire, and the civilians were obliged to stand in the Market Square close to the flames coming from the houses. I passed the night amid the blazing streets, and the next morning we were taken to a potato I then escaped.

I passed a field where there had been a battle on the previous day, and saw a lot of Belgian soldiers lying dead. I did not see any German soldiers. I passed another place called Beggynendyk, about three-fourths of an hour from Aerschot, in the direction of Antwerp, and saw four civilians lying dead. A sheet had been placed over their bodies, but the heads were visible. These men were close to the battlefield and were probably killed during the battle. I saw at Beggynendyk some German cavalry shooting through the windows of houses as they passed by; I could see no reason for this. I also saw a poor elderly man who had been apparently shot dead while kneeling down. This was at Beggynendyk.

MANSERVANT.

On 19th August at Aerschot the Germans entered the village and broke all the doors and windows and stole everything that came into their hands. I was at that time in service. We opened the door and I showed to them that the lady had prepared something to eat for them. They made me come out, seized me by the collar, and took me down the road, and then dragged me through the street with revolvers in their hands, telling me that I must fight with them in Flemish. There were three men on horseback and one on foot. The infantryman searched me all over and took about 1,700 francs which I had upon me, leaving me with another purse containing about 30 francs. The three horsemen went away at a trot, leaving the infantryman with me. One of the three horsemen was a lieutenant.

e 1 Aerschot.

b 30

e 2

I escaped to the house and then we shut the door. My wife and I escaped to the hospital next door through the hedge. When we got into the hospital the Germans were asking after Belgian soldiers who had escaped into the houses. Then my wife and I went away and hid during the night in the hedge of our garden. There we saw a whole street burning, in which I possessed two houses. We heard children and beasts crying who were in the flames. In the morning we returned to the hospital; we were given a red cross to look after the wounded. The Germans expelled all the Belgian wounded. They took prisoners everybody they saw in the streets. They put all the men in the church and the women and children in the Château of Fontaine. Two days later they let the women go, and then the men over the age of 45 years. The others they kept shut up for 10 days; then they took them towards Louvain.

In the evening when they had been drinking the drunken soldiers would fire rifles in the streets. Then they went to search through the whole hospital to see whether the servants had fired upon them. We have often had to hide in the cellars.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

When the Germans arrived, I, together with the dean and two under pastors, hid in the garden of a convent. The convent was used as a Red Cross ambulance, and I was called to hear the confessions of several wounded Belgian soldiers. The German soldiers searched the convent, and one of them said, "The priests are here. We saw them. If we find them you may be sure we will burn your convent." On the night of the 19th-20th August the Germans set fire to Aerschot. I remained in my hiding place until the Saturday night (22nd August). On that day the German troops left Aerschot, and others arrived, and from the new soldiers I got a passport on Sunday (23rd August). The passport was stamped by the German general and bore the name of the 3rd Battalion, 24th Regiment of Infantry, who was acting as military

The pastor of Aerschot was accused of having shot at the Germans from the tower of his church. This was untrue. The Belgian soldiers, however, had previously fired at the

Germans from the tower during an engagement.

c 3

c 4

I understand that the priest of Gelrode was brought to the church of Aerschot and was made to stand outside the church for two hours with his hands above his head, and on his toes, and that the people who were imprisoned in the church were compelled to make water on the priest. He was afterwards shot, and his body was thrown into the river at Aerschot. His body was afterwards taken from the river in a decomposed state.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The bombardment of Aerschot began at 5.30 a.m. on Wednesday. I left home at 6 a.m. with my father and mother (who live at the next house), and with my wife and all my children we went to the village of Gelrode, half-an-hour—2½ kilometres—from my house. We all remained in the street of that village, which is a kind of valley, until 3 p.m. We could hear the guns all that time. Then we all returned home and saw the first Germans we had seen. The cannon stopped firing about 11 a.m. We all went back to my house. At 7 p.m. the guns from the mountains began to bombard Aerschot again, and then we all left home. We could not go back to Gelrode because of the Germans, so we went to the other side of the town, the south side, to the Thienschepoort, and just outside we saw a public-house and went in there. Many other people went there as well. I do not know the name of the public-house. It was kept by D. . . We all stayed there until the next morning at 5 a.m. There were altogether about 30 men, women and children in the public-house—about 10 grown men. Two came from Hoog Straat, Aerschot. I do not know the name of any other man who was there. The landlord, D. . . ., was there. I had known the landlord at school at the Catholic Schools, Teuvenschepoort, on the west side of Aerschot. His wife was there too. At 5 a.m. thirty or forty Germans entered the house and told us to hold up our There was someone in command who gave orders, but not hands and searched our pockets. There was someone in command who gave orders, but not an officer in a high position. When the first German came to the public-house I was in the public room. We had been all together sitting on the chairs all night. The door of that room opened straight into the street. The door had been shut but not locked all night. The Germans came as many as possible, and opened the front door. There was a pump outside, and at 4 a.m. I saw a little group go there for water, and then other little groups. I had been out with the landlord and one little boy to make water about 3 a.m. - not my own little boy (I do not know the boy's name). As soon as we got outside we saw the flash of rifles and heard the report—only one rifle, I thought, which was fired quickly three or four times. It was about 50 metres away, I should think. I thought the firing was at us because there was no one else about, and as soon as we went out the shots were heard. We came in as quickly as we could and shut but did not lock the door. No one went out after that until after the German soldiers came and opened the door. When the German soldiers opened the door I was sitting nearest to the door, and the first German that entered went for me because I was nearest the door. As soon as the German soldiers came in they said, "You have been shooting"—they speaking in German, but the words are nearly the same as the Flemish. It is easy for us to understand German when they speak not too quickly. The first man who entered said, "You have been shooting," but after that the others kept repeating the same words. Nobody answered at the moment, but after they came in we said, "Not true." I said "It is not true. "We have not been shooting." There had been no shooting during the night. No one in the public-house had fired. As soon as the Germans entered the town, everyone was forced to take their arms to the burgomaster. The burgomaster sent out typewritten notices to that effect, and they were posted on nearly every house. I took none and my son took none, because we had none. I saw no fire-arms in the public-house. The German soldiers pointed revolvers at us when they came in, and threatened to shoot us if we moved. They came in and pointed the revolver, saying at the same time, "You have been shooting."

Then the Germans made all the men—the men only—come outside, and ten or eleven of us went out, I and my eldest son amongst them. Then we were told to put our arms up and they searched our pockets. They took nothing from my pockets, and I think they took nothing from anyone's pockets. Then we had to walk in the same position, hands up, for twenty minutes. When we got too tired we put our hands on our heads [shows how]. We walked to the Teuvensche Steenweg. We walked two and two and Germans on each side. The Germans called next door and at other houses, and called the men out, so that we were about 18 in all. About 30 Germans went with us—all the Germans there. I was the last but one, and my son on my right side. There was no officer with them. As soon as we got to the Teuvensche Steenweg, a German general came up. He was on foot. He had a sword. He had epaulettes, and you could see he was one of the authorities, but I do not know that he was a general. He came forward and said we had been shooting, speaking to all of us together. One after the other we protested that it was not true, and said we had not been shooting. I said "I have not" in reply to the officer, who said "you have been shooting," There were two other groups of prisoners there, 50 or 60 altogether. [I was told afterwards that these others had been there all night.] When we had been there a quarter of an hour, a second general came and took a paper out of his pocket and read from it that one out of three of us was to be shot. He read in German, but we understood it. It was read out like an article of the law. We were accused of breaking a certain law. He read out of the paper that one out of three had to die. We were standing in two lines—three groups standing separately. They took all the young men. The officer pointed out the young men to the German soldiers. [The men he pointed out were taken to the back up a little rise. We were standing in the field near the public road, about 50 metres from the road. Then the officer called out six German na

The soldiers at the rear were shooting for about a quarter of an hour, but we were not allowed to turn our heads [I was told afterwards that the men were shot three at a time, the six soldiers shooting at the three men, and that the burgomaster, his son and brother were the first three shot]. I have never seen my son again either dead or alive. After the shooting we were told to return home. I went direct to my house. No one was at home. I went to look for my wife and children. I went to Nieuwenrode, then to Hauwaert. I slept two nights in the woods near Hauwaert. In Hauwaert I heard where my family were, and went back to Nieuwenrode and found them there—in a house outside the village—on the public road, where many people were. I was afraid to stay there as I was a man. My father and mother were there, and my brother's wife and my wife and four children. I went to Hauwaert with my youngest son. I went back to see my wife twice. We slept with my brother and my brother's son 11 nights in the woods. Then we four went to Thielt (12 days). From there I went back once to see my wife. Then I went to Averbode (two days), and through Gheel, where we took the train to Antwerp. We slept two nights there and then to London by boat.

MARRIED WOMAN.

About the 15th August, the Wednesday after the 15th, the Germans came to Aerschot. On the approach of the Germans Belgian soldiers advised us to flee. I and my father and family hid in a wood. Then we heard the Germans had gone and came back to the town. We found the Germans were still there and took refuge in a house not our own. The Germans had set fire to a house opposite this house, and a civilian who was in the same house as us with his wife and family, went out into the street to go and see if his mother was in the burning house. As he was crossing the road, I and the man's wife saw him shot down. The Germans were only about 18 yards away. I did not see them set fire to the house, but several houses were on fire and there

c 5

was no bombardment to account for it. We then left the house by the back door and crossed the fields to our own house. By this time the Germans were shelling the town with shrapnel and we went into the cellar. Shortly afterwards the Germans came into our part of the town where our house was. The Germans broke in the door and windows with their rifles and ordered us to come out and put up our hands. I had my baby in my arms and could only put up one arm. I saw a German soldier kick my mother-in-law, who was with us, on the knee. We were then forced to go between two lines of German soldiers to the market place, where the men were separated from the women. As I came on to the market place a German soldier kicked me on the knee. This was at 5.30 in the evening. We were kept in the market place from that hour to 4.30 in the morning, when an officer came and told us we could go away, first going home to fetch our clothes. The Germans brought chairs from the houses and would not let us stand up in the market place. We had to keep our hands up all the way from our house to the market place and for a quarter of an hour afterwards. It is five minutes from our house to the market place. Eventually we made our way to Antwerp and thence to England.

I heard that some of the men who were separated from the women were shot, but I did

not see this.

c 6

c 7

I do not know the name of the civilian who was shot. He was a stranger. There were many refugees from other places at Aerschot.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was in Aerschot on 19th August last when the town was taken by the Germans. I was ordered to leave my house by a German soldier and to hold up my hands, and was then driven through barbed wire entanglements into the presence of a German officer, who knocked me on the head with his revolver and afterwards made me run before his horse until we reached a place where I found other citizens, with whom I was detained for two hours and then released, after a proclamation had been read by the burgomaster enjoining quietness and the bringing of all weapons to the town hall.

In the evening I was again arrested with many other civilians and taken to a field on the Louvain road. There our hands were tied behind us and we were made to lie on the ground

face downwards. I suffered greatly from the swelling of my wrists and hands.

We were told by a German officer that we were to be put to death. First, the burgo-master, his son and his brother were shot in front of us. Afterwards 21 more were shot before us, and then 40 were released, of whom I was one. I heard afterwards that in all the Germans shot 150 civilians that day.

MARRIED WOMAN, OR WIDOW.

The Germans first came to Aerschot on August 19th, about 8 a.m. The burgomaster has a brewery and a mill. He and his brother work them together. Very soon after they arrived they fired on his house which is situate about 15 metres from ours. I heard the noise of the firing but did not see it as we had shut our doors and windows. The burgomaster went round the town escorted by German soldiers and asked all the inhabitants to open their doors and windows, I should say about 10 a.m. Then, about 10 a.m., they collected a number of men near the river -the Démer-and kept them there until after midday. During this time they broke many windows, in order to take anything that they liked the look of. They broke mine to get three bottles inside, but they had only vinegar in them. They stole whatever they wanted. An officer came to me and demanded a packet of coffeemore than a kilogramme. He did not pay for it. He gave no receipt. A jeweller occupies the third house from us. He was upstairs making ready for German soldiers to be billeted there. A shot was fired from one of the houses near. Some Germans said it came from the jeweller's and some said it came from other houses. By this time—7 o'clock or so—many German soldiers were drunk, and I am sure it was one of them who fired. Several days before, the town crier was sent to order all arms to be deposited in the Hotel de Ville, and placards were put up to the same effect. I think they were all given up. No one was hit when they alleged there was a shot fired. They—the Germans—began to fire on all the houses at once-I think it was a German had fired and they said it was a civilian. At this time the servant at the burgomaster's told me there were three Germans there, one of them a colonel. I saw them standing there myself inside the window which looks out on the street, drying their hands with a towel. It was a very few minutes afterwards that the soldiers began to fire on all the houses near and I believe they killed the colonel but, of course, I cannot be certain. I heard the whole story from the cook of the burgomaster, I. D . . . She told me that his wife, daughter and son of 15 were in the cellar when the colonel was shot; the Germans said it was the boy of 15 who shot the colonel. They shot the burgomaster and his brother and the boy of 15 next day. The firing continued for about 10 minutes, I think. Then they ordered all the inhabitants into the street and searched all the houses and dragged the women out, I heard by the hair. They put the women and children on one side—I was with them and my five children, one boy of 15 and four girls. I saw many of the men had their hands tied. All this took place in the market place. They took away the men along the road to Louvain some time about 8, it was getting dark and I cannot say how many there were. They kept us there until 3 a.m. Many children were in bed when the order came and had hardly any clothes on—it was a cold night. The soldiers gave us a little water to drink. They did not ill-treat us, and some of them went to get blankets for the children who were cold. They let us go at 3 a.m.

I heard next day, August 20th, that the burgomaster and the brother and son were shot about 3 p.m., together with 150 other men, at least so I was told; I fear my husband was amongst them. About 5 or 5.30, they came and said they were going to burn my house. They told every one near us the same. I went off to Haterbeek to my brother-in-law's farm, half-an-hour's walk away, and stayed until Saturday (22nd). Then I returned with my eldest and youngest daughter. The street was almost deserted, eight women were at home in the day-time, and slept at my house. On Wednesday, the 20th, they made about 100 people go to the church, on Thursday they brought more and on Friday—when I should think there were about 1,000 of us—they made us march to Louvain three or four miles' walk. Shots were fired in the church—to frighten the women and children, I should think—no one was hit. In the thousand were people of all ages and each sex. They gave us nothing to eat, but I was allowed to go and get some food for my children. I don't think those who had no children were allowed to go—I think the men were not allowed to go at all. A soldier escorted those who went. I did not hear any one ask permission who was refused it, but I am sure the men were not allowed to go. We were kept at Louvain until the next day, Saturday. When we got there—it was towards evening—they were shooting at and burning houses. We were allowed to drink what water we could find on the way there, but we dare not ask permission to buy food. There were no Belgian soldiers there (at Louvain). Some of my companions were frightened at the shooting and began to run. They were behind where I was; the soldiers fired at them, one girl was killed and two others wounded, one I know was a girl. They put us into the stables at the barracks to sleep. They let about 700 go at the station at Louvain and the other 300, of which I was one, were sent to the barracks and we had to sleep on the stone floor of the stable. There was just enough room to lie down. On Saturday about 11, an officer came and told us we could go home, but when we got to Aerschot we were all sent to the church again. The men were kept there, the women and children sent to M. Fontaine's château. On Sunday evening we were let go. The men were kept there about 10 days. During the two days I was away at Haterbeek they collected a number of young men up to 40, I think, who were subsequently sent to Germany. They only sent unmarried men. Later on they took all married men between 18 and 45. I heard there were 500 of them.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About seven weeks ago (namely on or about the 19th August), I went to Aerschot Station at 10 a.m. to receive my pay, when I saw a large body of German soldiers, consisting of cavalry and infantry (I do not know what regiments they belonged to) and I went back to my house, and with my wife and child ran away and took refuge at the house of a widow.

A Belgian soldier came to this house and said that all doors must be left open. He told me to go and help to bury some Belgian soldiers who were laying in a field close by. I and some other men with the soldier went to the field. There were two large guns in the field.

We buried two Belgian soldiers, one from St. Nicholas, and the other from Termonde; each of these men had a small medal, from which I was able to see where they had come from.

We then took refuge with another man in his house at Aerschot (I cannot remember his name) and remained there until the following morning. On that day the German soldiers came and took hold of me and every other man they could see, and eventually there were about 60 of us, including some aged 80, and they made us accompany them. One of the prisoners, a young man, aged 23, was struck on the back with the butt end of a rifle by a German soldier. The young man said, "Oh, my father." His father, who was amongst the prisoners, said to him "keep quiet, my boy." Another German soldier put his bayonet into the thigh of another prisoner, and afterwards compelled him to walk on with other prisoners. All the prisoners had to walk with their hands above their heads. We were then stopped and made to stand in a line, and an officer—a big fat man, who had a bluish uniform, and a cap with a band upon it, and with stripes on his arm, the other soldiers having a greyish uniform—came along the line and picked out the burgomaster, his brother, and his son, and some men who had been employed under the Red Cross. In all 10 men were picked out—the men other than the burgomaster, his brother, and his son, being picked out at hazard. The remainder of the 60 men, I being amongst them, were made to turn our backs upon the other 10, and with our faces towards a field. I then heard some shots fired, and I and the other men turned round, and we saw that all the ten men, including the burgomaster, were laying on the ground. I cannot say whether they were dead, but I was afterwards told that they were dead.

I knew the burgomaster, and his brother, and also his son. Two of the other men chosen with the burgomaster were known to me; one was the man who had been hit in the

back with the butt end of a German soldier's rifle.

After the shooting of the 10 men I and the remainder of the 50 prisoners were made to shake hands with 15 German soldiers, and then we were told we could go away. The officer

c 8

said we were all to stop in the town; and we all went away. The soldiers were not drunk.

The man who had been struck with a bayonet was allowed to go away, and I afterwards saw his wound. It was from 2 to 3 inches deep, and the flesh was protruding.

One of the prisoners, a civilian, was first of all chosen amongst the 10 men who were to be afterwards shot, but another soldier said that he was not to go with them, and he did not go. He went away with the rest of the prisoners who were allowed to go free.

The people who had been made prisoners were dragged out of their houses, and none of them were soldiers—all the Belgian soldiers had left the district. I do not know where my own people now are. I could not understand a word of what the German soldiers said, neither could any of my fellow prisoners.

MARRIED WOMAN.

I was living in Aerschot in August of this year when the Germans entered it. It was on the 18th August that they entered. They entered in a constant stream all day long. They entered the houses on each side of mine and the houses opposite. In each house they entered they ejected the occupants, men, women and children. This was done under the supervision of an officer who stood in the street and all the houses in it were treated in this way, though I only actually saw the houses opposite and on each side of mine. The Germans entered my house and compelled us (myself, my husband, my 16 year-old son, my stepson, and three other children) to go into the street. This was at about 9 a.m. Everyone belonging to the village was in the street. All had to raise their arms above their heads, and the men were separated from the women and children. The villagers were allowed to stay 10 minutes in the street and then we (women and children) were allowed to rejoin the men on the banks of Démer where the men had already been taken. We stayed there about five minutes and then returned home leaving the men behind on the Démer in charge of the Germans, who I saw ransacking the men's pockets for weapons. My husband returned home about 10 minutes after I got home. I did my work about the house until about 6.30 p.m. when three Germans came to my house. We were again ordered to go out into the street, which we did and we were told to put our hands up and to go into the market. There were many of us in the street. One of the Germans thrust at me with his bayonet, which passed through my skirt and behind my knees. I was too frightened to notice much. My 16-year old son was many times hit on the shoulders and body with the butt of a rifle.

We were driven to the market.

c 9

c 10

I saw three men standing apart and saw them taken away by the Germans in a cart. I

was too far away to recognise any of them and it was nearly dark.

I remained in the market with my children. My husband and the other men were taken away after we had been in the market about an hour. They tied the hands of nearly all the men behind them except the son of the Burgomaster, whose hands were tied in front of him. I could see this. The men were all marched off. I know of no acts of aggravation on the part of any of the villagers. The Burgomaster and his son were among those shot. A man from Aerschot told me about the same time that he buried the bodies (but I do not know his name) and that my 16-year old son was shot. I have not seen him or my husband since. I have seen no one else who has given me news of the men. I remained in the market till 3 o'clock in the morning. Fifty Germans were preventing us from going home. I saw several Germans go into one of the houses near the market, come out shortly after and then I saw the house was on fire. Altogether five houses in the market were on fire—all next door to one another. These were besides the one I first saw. The Germans were very many of them drunk.

By 3 o'clock in the morning the Germans had passed through the village and those who remained were getting sober. We were told to return to our houses. I went to the house of a neighbour and stayed there half-an-hour and then went home for 10 minutes or so. I went

to a wood near by where I stayed for about 14 days in hiding.

MARRIED WOMAN.

On the 19th of August 1914 I was at home at Rodenberg, near Aerschot. The Belgian soldiers had left on the 18th. Early on the 19th I heard rifle firing, and I and my four children and another woman, a neighbour, and her child took refuge in the cellar of my house. About a quarter of an hour afterwards I heard the Germans come into the upper part They next came down into the cellar. They were soldiers and I should say there were about 25 of them. We begged for pity, but they answered that there was no pity for anyone. They did not say why or that their soldiers had been shot at. So far as I know no one in Rodenburg shot at the Germans. I am certain no one had any weapons. then pulled and pushed us up the stairs and into the street. They did not use their bayonets. When we got into the street other German soldiers fired at us. I was carrying a child in my arms, and a bullet passed through my left hand and my child's left arm. The child was also hit on the fundament. I and the other woman and the children then ran into Aerschot, where a lady took us into her house. There the Germans found us later on, and took me and my children to the Red Cross hospital till the next day, when I was taken

my aunt had

to the regular hospital. I there saw three women, two of whom I knew, die of wounds. I do not know how they were wounded. They died on Saturday, Apgust 22nd, 1914.

LABOURER.

The Germans came to Aerschot on a Tuesday in August, and they passed my house on their way. On the following day I went back to my house in order to feed the cattle in the farm. My aunt, went with me. We then met some 50 Belgian soldiers, who told us not to go further because the Germans were there. They have four children. I then ran away, with my aunt and her baby (aged 1½ years), but after a time she ran into a sideway. I went towards the high road; I learnt that my aunt was shortly afterwards shot through the hand by some German soldiers, and her baby was shot in the thigh. I was informed that my aunt and the baby were afterwards picked up and taken to the hospital in Aerschot. I afterwards saw her in this hospital. When my aunt was shot there were no Belgian soldiers near her.

I hid in a wood at Betecom, and saw some German soldiers passing along the road some distance away with two civilians, one of them being an old man and the other a young man of about 20 years of age. The civilians seemed to be acting as guides. I afterwards met a man who told me he had also been a prisoner, and he told me that the German soldiers put their revolvers to the breasts of these two civilians, and then held their bayonets close to them, and that they afterwards beat the two men with the butt ends of their rifles and killed them. I do not know the name of the man whom I met.

While in the wood I also met two men who told me they were fleeing from the Germans; they left me, and when about 200 metres from me I saw that some German soldiers captured

On the Wednesday morning when I was in my house, which is on a hill, I saw some German soldiers in the distance shooting civilians, and they afterwards set fire to some houses. The soldiers had something in their hands which they threw at the houses, and then I heard a sound like a shot, and then the houses caught fire. The soldiers were about five minutes' walk from my house. My house is situated at about three minutes' walk from the main road

There were no Belgian soldiers present at the time, but afterwards there was an engagement between the Belgian and the German troops. I then fled from my house.

Widow (?).

About 5.30 p.m. [on August 19th] shooting started. I saw the Germans shooting; no Belgians fired—some of the shots passed near me. I saw no officers—the Germans said a civilian had started the shooting. I saw no one killed. I entered the cellar of our house. After about five minutes, six or seven German soldiers forced me out; my daughter and daughter-in-law and husband and son aged 16, were hiding in the cellar. The soldiers made me hold up my hands and told me to go to the market place. I complained, and was kicked once very violently in the back by a soldier. I was in pain for a week. At the market place I was next to a Belgian civilian who was bleeding from the head and was attended to by a German soldier. A German soldier searched my pockets and returned my property (2 franc piece and a snuff-box). Another German soldier came up and kicked me violently in the stomach. I had not spoken to him—one of his comrades said you should not do that, later an officer came and enquired of me about this. I could not tell him who had kicked me.

My husband and son (aged 16) were marched, with a lot of others, through the market place about 8 p.m. I could only say good-bye, and they were led away bound. I should say at least 160 men. I was kept in the market place till 3 a.m., while houses were burning. I saw five burning in the market square but did not see who fired them.

A painter of Aerschot told me in Aerschot, that he had buried my husband and my son. My husband never had any weapons.

MARRIED WOMAN.

I am the daughter of the previous witness. I confirm my mother's account of what happened up to 5.30 p.m. I stayed in the cellar for about two minutes after my mother left; six or seven soldiers then came and pointed their rifles at us and said they were going to shoot the men. I was taken to the market place; my father and brother were taken with me. As soon as they arrived at the market the men and the women were separated. I asked what would happen to my father and brother; a German soldier told me they were all going to be shot; I asked why, and he replied that the burgomaster should not have used his rifle.†

On Thursday morning I saw three corpses of Belgian soldiers in the street. I do not know if they had been fighting or if they were prisoners who had been shot.

We left Aerschot on Thursday morning; after we had gone 3 miles we returned.

* This is the last witness.

c 11

c 12

c 13

[†] Note.—The story in general circulation amongst the German troops was that the death of the officer was due to the action of the son, not to that of the father.

On Friday night at six o'clock, 700 people were locked up in the church. I was one of them; we were kept till 10 a.m. the next morning, then the women and children were allowed to go. We had no food. My mother did not return with me to Aerschot. I went to get news of my father.

Professor.

With the help of a German pass, I left Louvain and proceeded towards Antwerp. En route I passed through Aerschot. All the civilians had fled and the Germans were in possession of the town. I saw some of the soldiers breaking open private houses in the principal square. The whole town was looted. Desiring to secure leave to continue my journey, I asked for and was taken to the officer in command. He was a captain (or of higher rank) and I was taken to him in the street, where I found him personally assisting in setting fire to a house. He and his men were lighting matches and setting them to the curtains. The excuse given for this and the burning of houses was that a German officer of high rank had been killed in the house of the mayor. I was allowed to proceed towards Antwerp conducted by a German soldier. This man stated that he regretted the kind of warfare that the Germans were carrying on (especially as regards burning of houses), but said that they had been fired on by civilians and that what they had done was done by orders. On my journey I afterwards came across the refugees from Aerschot, who told me that the rumour of civilian firing had no foundation.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

When the German soldiers arrived at Aerschot I and some friends hid in a cellar. were afterwards found by the soldiers, and with a large number of other civilians of the town were made prisoners, and had to walk in front of the soldiers for about 20 minutes with our hands above our heads. In all there were between 1,000 and 1,200 civilians, and we were placed in lines in a place near the water. Next to me was standing an old man of 75 years of age. One of the German soldiers, who spoke Flemish, told us that the whole of us were going to be shot dead, but no explanation was given. (He also told us that half a million of men were coming into the town).

We were made to stand near the river for three hours. As we were standing there two German officers came along with the Burgomaster of Aerschot, who said that if we had any weapons they were to be at once given up. (As a matter of fact the whole of the weapons had been taken from the civilians eight days previously.) I was then allowed to go

free, with the other prisoners.

c 14

c 15

As I was walking towards my home I heard the sound of shooting and saw four men fall in front of me. They were civilians, and had not been with the large body of prisoners. The four men were about 35 yards from me. Two of them were known to me, and were father and son—the son was feeble-minded. They were taken out of their house and were shot just in front of it; they were both close together. Another of the men who were shot was a man named G . . . No explanation was given of this shooting. I afterwards heard that the father and son were shot as they were coming out of the house. I also heard that the man G . . . was shot as he was returning from work.

I continued on my way home, and then saw the dead body of another man in the street. He had been shot through the head, but I did not see him shot. He was a civilian and lived

four houses from mine; he was known by the nickname of "Yes."
When I got to my house I found that all the furniture had been broken, and that the place had been thoroughly ransacked and everything of value had been stolen.

The German soldiers then came to my house, and compelled me to make some shafts for

the horses. I was allowed no food or drink until I had finished making them.

I and my wife afterwards hid in the cellar of our house, and when I came out into the street again I saw the dead body of a man at the door of the next house to mine. He was my neighbour, and wore a red cross brassard on his arm. He had been riddled with bullets from a mitrailleuse.

I knew the woman M. V. M. . . . She was shot dead at the door of her house.

The German soldiers were in Aerschot for three days, and during all that time they were

killing Belgian civilians.

I was again made prisoner with a large number of other men. The German soldiers picked out every third man and compelled the other two men to dig his grave. There were in all 150 men of all ages, and 50 of them were shot. I saw some of them shot, but not all. None of the men who were shot had given the slighest provocation. The usual excuse was given, namely, that the civilians had fired on the German soldiers, but this was quite untrue, as none of them had weapons. I tried to escape, but was again captured. The men who were picked out to be shot were usually young men.

I was afterwards taken with a large number of other civilians, and placed in the church at Louvain. Then we were taken to Station Street, Louvain. There were about 1,500 civilians of both sexes, and we had been marched from Aerschot to Louvain. When we were

in Station Street I felt that something was about to happen, and I tried to shelter in a The German soldiers then fired a mitrailleuse and their rifles upon the people and the people fell on all sides. Two men next to me were killed. I afterwards saw someone give a signal, and the firing ceased. I then ran away with a married woman, named B... (whose maiden name was A. M.), aged 29, who belonged to Aerschot, but we were again captured. She was shot by the side of me, and I saw her fall. Several other people were shot at the same time. I again ran away, and in my flight saw children falling out of their mothers' arms—I cannot say whether they were shot, or whether they fell from their mothers' arms in the great panic which ensued. I, however, saw the children bleeding.

I have lost everything which I possessed. I had five men working under me at

Aerschot.

STORE-KEEPER.

At the beginning of the war I was employed as a stretcher bearer under the Red Cross. On the 19th August I was taken prisoner by the Germans. I was wearing a Red Cross brassard at the time. I was placed against a wall and the Germans pretended to shoot me. The Belgian clergyman of the town was also treated in the same manner. We were not, in

A Catholic Institute, named "Pères Damiens," was used as a Red Cross hospital at Aerschot, and there were on the 19th August about 150 wounded Belgian soldiers, of whom eight were Germans. The Germans took these eight men from the institute and then commenced to fire at the windows and corridors with their rifles. In all about 5,000 rounds were fired, I believe to terrorise the inmates. A member of the Red Cross was shot through the arm. I was in the institute at the time. A Red Cross flag was flying over it.

The following civilians were brought into the institute on the same day. They had all

been shot in different parts of the body and were dead. I saw them. Their names were :-

(Five names given.)

I got away from the Germans on the same day and the next day I went to Ghent.

SHOEMAKER.

I am a shoemaker, and before the war I lived at Aerschot. The Germans entered Aerschot, 19th August. I did not see or hear of any firing by civilians, but the noise and uproar were great, and I might not have heard it if there was any. I know the Germans alleged it. The Germans took all the inhabitants in the place prisoners and separated the men from the women. The men, including myself, were bound and marched some half-hour's walk out of the town in the direction of Louvain. Amongst us was the mayor, with whom an officer in the German staff had some conversation. Next morning in the presence of this officer and another the burgomaster and his son and one-third of our whole number were shot by the Germans. The rest of us were unbound and allowed to go free. On my way back to Aerschot I saw the dead body of a woman—a neighbour of mine—lying on the pavement before her house. She had been shot in the forehead. In the cattle market I saw the dead body of another woman—I did not hear why these women were killed. My house had been looted by the German troops, and I got away from Aerschot as fast as I could.

Widow.

The Germans first arrived (at Aerschot) about 9 a.m. on Wednesday, August 19th. The Belgian soldiers had retreated. I saw them pass out of the town. About quarter of an hour after, the Germans arrived. Thousands and thousands came into the town, but they did nothing. I stayed at home, because I was told (falsely) that the bridge had been destroyed. I saw several Uhlans firing a few shots at the church for no reason whatever. Then a whole troop came down the street, breaking windows all along. All the front doors were shut, but the Germans broke them open. (The Germans had issued a proclamation that we were to keep our doors open, but I had not heard about it.) They broke my door open with hatchets, and fired down the passage where I was standing with an old couple, who lived next door. The old man (70 years of age) and I ran away and hid at the back of the house; presently a lot of Germans came along and found us. We were taken out and brought into the town (a quarter of an hour's really) but they let us may into a house. On the way Lawy the Germans ill treating a pricate walk), but they let us run into a house. On the way I saw the Germans ill-treating a priest, who was a Red Cross man. I went back home and found my husband lying dead outside it; he had been shot through the head from behind—at least the blood was flowing from a wound in his forehead, not from the one at back; his pockets had been rifled. I went to the hospital, and I saw the old man, who had been shot in the leg. I went again later and was told he had died. I went home and stayed there till 4.30; then I went to my sister's house. When they were taking away my husband's body, a German officer asked me who had killed him: "Who's done that? Who's shot that man? It is the Belgians who have done that." I said, "The Germans." He said, "It is not a thing that ought to be allowed," and shook his head. I came back home to fetch my clothes and stopped the night in a neighbour's (next door) cellar. The Germans fired on me when I was going there, they were only 10 yards off, but they didn't hit me.

e 16

e 17

c 18

While I was walking about the town I was frequently stopped, but on putting my hands up, I was allowed to proceed. When going to my sister's, I saw the body of a half-witted

young man of 20. I knew him by sight.
When I was in my neighbour's cellar another neighbour—a woman of about 68 or 70 with grey hair-came and called to us from the street; we did not go out or answer, and in

the morning at 4.30 a.m. we found her body in the street in front of her door.

We went to the hospital, where they have very big cellars; we were challenged to stop, but we ran on, and the Germans let us pass into the hospital. So far as I could see no houses had yet been burnt. Thursday, about 10 a.m., I went to my sister's and stayed there till Friday, August 21st, in the cellar. At 5 a.m. we came out and fled through small villages to Antwerp. We saw the bodies of some Belgian soldiers and civilians. We only went through one or two streets before reaching the country. We lived on the outskirts of Aerschot. did not examine any of the bodies, I was too frightened; I cannot say whether they were all bodies of men or not. There were many houses burning when we left. I saw one whole street burnt to the ground-the interior of the houses being gutted, only the outside walls left.

SHOEMAKER.

When the war broke out I was living at Aerschot. I am a shoemaker. When the Germans entered the town on 19th August, they started a general looting of the houses and shops, which they broke into with hatchets. They carried off the contents in motor cars. I noticed one car loaded up with cigars. They also seized all the bicycles in the place. When the war broke out a German whom I knew well by sight had been living in Aerschot some three years. He had no apparent occupation, but lived on his means in a small house. Occasionally he was away for some time. On the outbreak of war he was expelled from Belgium. He came back with the German troops and pointed out to them all houses and other property belonging to the burgomaster, and the Germans destroyed it all. Many civilians in Aerschot were killed by the Germans. I myself saw some 40 dead bodies, including three women. They had been shot. About a third of the town was burned out. I saw the Germans setting fire to houses. They used a special apparatus, something like a big rifle, for throwing naphtha or some similar inflammable substance. In one house, the wife of a man whom I knew well was burned alive. Her husband broke both his legs whilst attempting to rescue her (jumped from first floor window). The Germans with their rifles prevented anyone going to help this man, and he had to drag himself along the street with his legs broken as best he could. The burgomaster of Aerschot (a very kindly, good man) was shot. I do not know why: he was the last man in the world to give provocation.

PRIEST.

I was in Aerschot on 19th August when the Germans entered. On 20th I walked through the town wearing my Red Cross badge. I saw one civilian and a woman lying dead in the street. The German soldiers were then busy in the shops. I did not notice what they were doing. In one jeweller's shop there were half-a-dozen. I was taken prisoner, in spite of my badge, to the German encampment outside the town and before some officer. clergy of inciting the inhabitants to fire on the troops. I denied it. He then blamed the burgomaster. I showed him the notices signed by the burgomaster on the walls warning the inhabitants not to do so. [On the morning of 19th there had been a fight between the Belgians and the Germans. On evening of 19th I was told a German general had been shot. The German soldiers were firing at the time on the houses and I understood he was shot by one of them. So far as I am aware no civilian inhabitants at any time fired on the Germans.] He showed me a heap of civilians dead who had been shot; about 20 I judged. Among them, a priest, the burgomaster, his brother and his son.

I was then marched with the J.P. of the town, his son, the receiver, a baker and a draper as hostages and told we would be shot if anyone fired on the troops. The next day some of us were again taken out and again threatened. This time we were lined up and one German told the others to get ready. All this time I had on the Red Cross badge. I asked if anybody knew English and explained to an officer that I came from America. I was released. The

others were released afterwards. I stayed on in Aerschot for three weeks longer.

On 28th August 500 or 600 of the inhabitants, men, women and children were shut up in the church. Two days after the women and children were released. The others were kept there until 6th September and then those under 45 sent to Germany, but they (the Germans) were not particular about the age. Some of these prisoners were priests who had turned their house into a hospital and were actually tending the wounded when taken. They nearly all belonged to the Red Cross. They are in Germany now.

Half of Aerschot was burnt. The market place was full of furniture. In all the houses left standing the contents were fouled, broken and upset. I myself saw some of the houses broken into and fired.

For almost the whole time I was kept in my house with a sentry before the door. I did not actually see the firing of the town, but the result only.

c 19

e 20

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was with my wife and nine children in Aerschot on August 19th last when the German army entered.

At first I saw some houses on fire within 50 metres of my house.

On the 20th August, I and my two sons were taken prisoners and compelled to dig graves. I was kept a prisoner for a day or two.

On August 30th was forced to walk in company with about 1,500 men, women and children to Louvain. The journey took six hours. German troops were behind us.

I saw houses in Louvain burning.

While I and others were in the Rue de la Station, I saw the Germans shoot at us. One man was shot in the leg. Near the station of Louvain, I saw the bodies of three old men and also others.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On 21st August last the Germans entered Aerschot and came to my shop, which they looted and then broke the windows. They threatened my wife with a revolver pointed at her breast, and told her she must remain, as being a young woman they might want her afterwards.

We, however, escaped together, and were afterwards told by our landlord in Antwerp

that our house and shop had been burned down.

At Beggynendyck, to which place we fled, we saw the young daughter, aged 16, of a railway servant, at Aerschot, who showed us a bullet wound in her arm, which she said had been inflicted on her by the Germans. She also informed us that they had killed her father and mother.

On our journey there we saw the dead bodies of at least two civilians from Aerschot lying on the roadside.

We ultimately escaped to Antwerp and afterwards came to England viâ Flushing.

MARRIED WOMAN.

The German soldiers arrived at Aerschot, and afterwards I was taken prisoner by them, and taken with a large number of other people from Aerschot to the Church of Aerschot and there the whole of the prisoners, men, women, and children, were placed. Nobody was allowed to go outside the church to obey the calls of nature, and we were compelled by the German soldiers to use the church for that purpose, in the presence of everybody. We were afterwards allowed to go outside the church for this purpose, and I then saw the clergyman of Gelrode standing by the wall of the church, with his hands above his head, and being guarded by soldiers and I could see by the appearance around him that men had used him as lavatory. I did not actually see any men in the act of doing this, but I saw the dirt around him. I had been allowed to take my little children outside the church to obey the calls of nature on this occasion.

I was taken back into the church, and shortly afterwards I heard some shooting going on outside, and all the people inside the church were very frightened. (I afterwards heard from people who witnessed the occurrence that the clergyman had been taken to a place near the church and shot dead)

I was forced to remain with the other prisoners in the church until the following day, and we were allowed to go free. I do not know the regiment to which the German soldiers belonged.

BELGIAN REFUGEE (GIRL).

The Germans came to Aerschot one Wednesday shortly after the war began. In the afternoon two officers went to the burgomaster and arrested him, his son and a few other civilians. [Two days later a man, whose name I can't remember, told me that he had buried the bodies of the burgomaster and his son, who had been shot by the Germans.]

Everyone, men, women and children, were forced by the Germans to go to the church and locked in. It was about 5 p.m. I was kept there two nights and two days. This is the time I was in the church. The men had already been there two days before I got there. In the morning of the following day, I asked one of the soldiers if I might leave the church for a natural purpose. Two other Belgian women went out with me. A soldier accompanied us. We went to the w.c., which was on the north side of the church. I saw no one either going to or from the w.c.

The Germans let us out on the Friday afternoon. We were all compelled to go to Louvain. We were forced to sleep in the stables of the barracks in Louvain. About noon on the Saturday we were allowed to go home and the soldiers accompanied us as far as the canal

When I was locked up in the church at Aerschot on the occasion when I went out to the w.c. I saw two soldiers bringing the under-priest of Gelrode along. They were coming from the direction of Gelrode and in the direction of the church. When they got to the church yard the priest was struck several times by each soldier on the head. He was still

c 22

e 21

e 23

e 24

40

walking along. They then pushed him against the wall of the church. This was immediately after he was struck on the head. I heard the priest ask the soldiers if he could stand with his face to the wall. He spoke in Flemish. They didn't answer, and he tried to turn round. The Germans stopped him, and then turned him with his face to the wall with his hands above his head. The other two women with me saw and heard all this. Their names are unknown to me. I saw the priest standing like this for a minute or so whilst I was out of the church. About an hour later I went out again alone and saw the priest still standing there, and then the Germans came and led him away. Seven of them led him away to another house about 50 yards away. They placed him with his face towards the wall of his house and five soldiers shot him. They killed him—I saw he didn't move. The house was that of L. V. D. . . I then returned to the church. There were many Belgians in the neighbourhood who saw it all. We were allowed to go in and out of the church with the leave of the Germans to go just outside. I knew the priest well by sight.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I left Aerschot, August 18. I was on duty. I returned a week later with my wife and four children. We walked the whole way from Brussels to Aerschot. We passed through the village of Werchter where there had been no battle, but it had been in the occupation of the Germans and on all sides of this village we saw burned-down houses, and traces of plunder and havoc. In Wespelaer and Rotselaer and Wesemael we saw the same. We did not pass through the village of Gelrode but close to it and we saw that houses had been burned down there. In Aerschot the Malines Street, Hamer Street, the Theophile de Becker Street and other streets were completely burned down. Half of the Grand' Place had been burned down. We remained at home two and a half days. On the third day we were all locked up in the church, the whole family. Two thousand of the inhabitants were locked up in the church at the time; we were all locked up there for 48 hours. We got nothing but dry sour bread. The children got nothing else, no milk. One woman who had a child only three days old was there. We knew her well, she was the wife of a butcher.

The second day that we were locked up in the church, at 6 p.m., I went out to relieve nature: we all had to do that at the door of the church, women and children and all, in front of the soldiers. While I was at the door I saw the priest of Gelrode placed against the wall of the house opposite the church. His hands were raised above his head. Five or six soldiers stood immediately in front of him, then when the priest let his hands fall down a little, soldiers dropped the butts of their guns on his feet. I was only outside about five minutes. I was told to go in. We learned afterwards that the priest was shot later that evening at another spot, about 100 metres away from there. About 8 p.m. that evening the Germans fired at the church for about five minutes. The people inside were terrified and hid behind each other and under the benches. There was no battle at that time. There were no Belgian soldiers there. I believe the soldiers were drunk—the German soldiers. We were all let out next day at 10 a.m. and we were all marched off to Louvain, which is three hours off by road, walking. There were some very old people, amongst others a man 90 years of age. The very old people were drawn in carts and barrows by the younger men. My nephew was one of those who drew them. There was an officer with a bicycle with us, who shouted as people fell out by the side of the road, "Shoot them."

We arrived in Louvain at 5.30 p.m. We were all put standing outside the station there. Shortly after shooting began. I did not see who shot or where the shooting came from. The shooting lasted about three quarters of an hour. I saw a young woman with her child on her arm, who came from Aerschot, fall down in front of me struck in the leg. The leg had to be cut off next day. Another, a young girl of Aerschot, of the same name, was struck. I saw her fall. We, my family and I, escaped from Louvain that evening to Héverlé and remained there eight days.

Married Woman.

e 26

c 25

I was on my way from my parents' house in Beggynendyck to Aerschot; it is only an hour's walk. It was about August 23rd. Two German soldiers came to me on the road and said I must go with them to the church at Aerschot. It was about 10.30 in the morning. I was taken off there alone. There were a large number of people from Aerschot in the church. The next morning the women were let go home; I started back to my parents', but on the way was stopped by six German soldiers, and was taken back to the church. We were all locked up in the church over that day and the following night. On the afternoon of the following, the second day, while we were still being kept prisoners in the church, I saw the priest of Gelrode standing outside the church; he was holding up his arms, and he was standing against the wall of M. F'...'s house, which is close by the church. The door of the church was open. I knew the priest. Gelrode is only a quarter of an hour from our house. This was about 5 p.m., I should think. German soldiers stood outside the door of the church. I could not say whether they were standing in front of the priest, and I did not see them do anything to him. After that there was firing; there was firing into the church through the open door. This was done four times. I saw bullets in the church, but I did not see that anybody was hit. I should say this was 5 p.m. or 5.30 p.m.

The people inside the church were terrified and crouched down. The priest of Gelrode

belonged to the Belgian Red Cross. I do not know that he was shot.

The whole time we were in the church, three days and two nights, we only got dry bread to eat. I cannot say how many were locked up; some said 400, some said 500, and some 600.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was at Aerschot in middle of August; as a cyclist of my company, I was at the end of the column. I saw some German infantry soldiers kill with bayonets two women who were standing on their doorsteps, they were struck several times. I saw the Germans coming into the village. I could point out the place where it happened at Aerschot. No one was firing at the Germans at the time. I at once reported the occurrence to my commandant.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the end of August in Aerschot a woman whose name I do not know showed me and my comrades a baby which she was carrying in her arms which had (she said) been strangled by German soldiers. She said it was her child, and it was dead. It was three or four months old, and she told us the Germans had strangled it while in her arms, and I surmise it was because of their anger at having to withdraw. I was obliged to follow with my comrades and could not wait to hear more.

I, however, saw the blue marks on the child's neck clearly indicating that it had been

strangled, and all my comrades could see them.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the end of August (two days after the people had been placed in the church at Aerschot) I saw a well by the roadside at a place about 10 minutes' walk from the village of Aerschot and near to some little houses. The well was a round one, and I think it was about 5 or 6 metres deep. I went close to the well and saw the dead body of a man at the top of it. On the well was written in German, "We are going to give him a wash." A comrade of mine who knew German told me that this was the meaning of the German words.

I also saw another civilian lying dead against a wall. He had been shot, but I did not

see him shot.

I also saw the dead body of another civilian lying close to a house. His house had been wrecked, but I do not know whether it had been shelled or burned down. This was on the road from Aerschot to Louvain.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Aerschot there is a long broadway, and in this broadway I saw a drinking well opposite a few small houses. In this well I saw the body of a man, who had a big head. The water had come over the surface, and I judged that there were several bodies in the well—probably four or five—but I only saw one body. The well was about a metre square.

Several of my comrades saw this well, but I do not know whether any of them are at

present in England.

Behind the well there were some little houses, which had been burned down. On the other side there was a newly built farmhouse, and my officer (I do not know his name) told me that the occupier of the farm had been killed by the Germans. I saw the mound in front of this man's house, under which he had been buried.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I went with my regiment to Aerschot, and recovered it from the Germans. At Aerschot I saw a well, in which was the dead body of a man who had been thrown into it by German soldiers.

A few yards from this well a house was on fire, and the German soldiers had prevented the occupants from leaving the house, and they had been burned to death. I saw some charred flesh and bones in the house, but owing to the stench I did not approach very close to it.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was with my regiment at Aerschot, I think at the beginning of September. We found about 30 men locked up in the church. Officers of my company opened the doors and let them out. They were men of over 40. The younger ones had been taken away by the Germans. They told us they had been kept without food or even water for the first two days they were shut up, and on the third day were given only bread and water. They said that at first some women had been shut up with them, but these had been let go before we arrived. In a well, about a quarter of an hour's walk from the church, I saw the body of a man of about 35. He was doubled up and I saw his head and his knees. The water was about $2\frac{1}{2}$ metres down. It was a regular well with a wall built round. I cannot say whether he was shot or drowned or how he was killed.

c 27

e 28

c 29

e 30

e 31

0 01

e 32

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Aerschot I went into four or five houses, and in each of them saw blood on the walls, and on the beds. I saw the dead body of a woman, but do not know how she met her death.

I also saw a woman lying wounded, and a girl of about 16 to 17 years of age was with her. The girl told me that some German soldiers had violated her, but she did not say how many.

The girl seemed quite calm. The woman was her mother.

e 33

e 37

e 38

I saw a well near Aerschot, and in the well I saw the dead body of a man. I also saw houses there, from which white flags were hung, and on these houses were marked in chalk with the words "good people," in German.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

In the month of September my regiment came to Aerschot. We had just driven out the Germans. We were told that a number of people were shut up in the church. We all went there. We found it true. We went in. There were about 100-120 persons of both sexes and all ages above 20 years; no children. Six or eight were dead, four women. They were not wounded. The people told us that they had been shut up for a fortnight or three weeks. They had lost count. They said the Germans gave them only black bread and water every four days and very little then.

Belgian Soldier.

At Aerschot I was with my regiment, and we went to release the Belgians who had been shut up by the Germans in the church. I there saw an old man who had had a bayonet thrust in his right arm. We afterwards went towards Louvain, and about an hour's march from there we found in a well the dead bodies of a man, a woman, and certainly two children.

After the battle of Louvain, at Alost I saw the body of a little boy about $6\frac{1}{2}$ or 7 years of age, with four bayonet wounds in it. It was stiff and propped against a wall. The

Germans had left Alost about two or three days before we got there.

Belgian Soldier.

I went with Adjutant de N... and 20 soldiers to Aerschot. The first thing we saw was the body of a young girl of about 18 to 20, absolutely naked, with her abdomen cut open. Her body was also covered with bruises, showing that she had made a struggle. She was lying close to a ditch near to Aerschot.

About a kilometre further I saw the body of a little boy, aged 8 or 9, with his head

completely cut off. The head was some distance from the trunk.

We, i.e., the company, arrived at Aerschot about the 15th August[®], and at the church we saw a lot of women and children and old men there. They told us they had had no food for two days. Some horses had been placed in the church before the people were put there, and the floor was in a terrible state; the inside of the church was like a stable. We set the people free.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 9th or 10th September I was at Lierre, and then went about that time to Aerschot. My regiment was entrenched there. I saw a woman with a child in her arms, about two years old, crossing the road lying between our trenches and the Germans. Both sides ceased firing for a time, but afterwards the Germans deliberately shot the woman when she was about 100 metres away. Our commander ordered a bayonet attack on the Germans, which was carried out successfully. We found the woman dead, and the child afterwards died of wounds. After our charge we went into the house from which we had seen the woman come out, and we there found the husband of the woman who had been killed, lying dead with seven bayonet wounds in the face. One of my comrades was a native of Aerschot, and knew the man and woman personally. We drove the Germans out of the village. Six of my regiment, including myself, patrolled the village. We found one house the door of which had been forced. We entered and then found under the table the body of a priest whose legs had been cut off, one above the knee and the other below. On the table there were 10 or 12 bottles of wine and glasses. As the Germans retreated they took civilians whom they forced to march behind with their hands uplifted to act as a screen. I saw two old men shot by the Germans, I think because they could not follow quickly enough. We were unable to fire, so made a bayonet charge.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 11th or 12th of September at Aerschot, we were fighting the Germans, and women and children were in the road trying to get back to their homes. After our troops had pushed the Germans forward, the Germans deliberately fired beyond us at four women, a child of 11 or 12 years of age, an infant of six months (about), and four other children who were clinging to their mothers' skirts. The infant was in its mother's arms, and was riddled with shot which passed through into the mother's body. While she was trying to crawl into safety on her knees, the Germans still fired at her until she died.

^{*} This is a mistake for September.

At a village called Putte, between Lierre and Malines, my patrol (myself and four men) came to a farmhouse. We had a sous-officier with us who was killed an hour later. The door of the farmhouse was pushed back against the wall, and we found the dead body of a girl apparently 18 years of age, evidently some time dead. Her arms were nailed to the door in extended fashion, the front part of her dress torn away and her left breast half cut away, and numerous other bayonet wounds on the chest, some piercing through to the back. The sight was so awful we dare not look much, and covered her over, having extracted the nails, and laid her on the ground, covering her with straw.

We found two Germans (marines) at the farm, and a number of caps having the badge of

the 45th Prussian Regiment, and we killed the marines.

At Aerschot I was made a prisoner with 22 other Belgian soldiers, shortly after what I have just described. While we were standing tied together, I saw the Germans set fire to houses in which women and children were trying to take refuge, and then when the women and children came out of the burning houses holding up their arms they deliberately shot them—there were great numbers so treated, I cannot say how many.

All along the main street at the entrance of the town, the houses were deliberately set on

fire. Not a single shot did I hear fired from any house that was set on fire.

The Belgian troops had already withdrawn from the town, and I and my comrades were waiting to attend to our own wounded when we were taken prisoners.

MARRIED WOMAN.

Until lately I was living at Gelrode, a small village near Aerschot.

On or about the 19th August a great number of German soldiers, all of the 49th Infantry Regiment, arrived at Gelrode at about 5 p.m. They had come from Aerschot and when they arrived at Gelrode they took 25 civilians who belonged to the village, as prisoners. These men were all at the time in the church, and were all of the ages of between 25 and 30. The German soldiers placed seven of these men by the side of a wall in front of my house. There were 15 soldiers and they each wore helmets and a man in charge of them had a round cap with a star and a little cross and a red band upon it. The officer in charge gave some order to the soldiers (I could not understand what he said as I only know a few words of German) and two of them took out their swords and walking up to where the seven men were standing struck two of the men round the neck. One of the men fell dead immediately and the second man was wounded. The seventh man made a movement to run away and the soldiers immediately shot the whole of the six men who were against the wall. This occurred in what is known as Church Street, Gelrode, and was on a Wednesday night (19th August).

The men who were shot had given no provocation whatever. None of them were soldiers, and when the Germans took them out of the church they searched them in the middle of the street in my presence, but nothing was found upon them in the way of arms. The mayor of

Gelrode had previously ordered everyone to give up their arms.

One of the men who were shot in this way was the son of the sacristan of the church

and was a singer in the church.

The remaining 18 men, who were all older than the seven men who had been shot, were allowed to go. After the Germans left the village, a day or two later, the people of the village returned to it and they buried these seven men.

On the day when the Germans arrived most of the people left the village. I, however, remained behind with my child, and at the time of the firing outside my house there were no

other persons in it.

I remained in my house and at about 12 o'clock the same night four soldiers, also of the 49th Regiment, came into the house. My child was in the room with me. One of the soldiers said to me in German (which I could understand sufficiently to know what he said) "Will you give in to us?" I said "No. I am willing to die with my child." The soldier then held a revolver at my head, knocked me down and put his knee on my chest whilst a second soldier violated me. The second soldier then put his knee on my chest whilst the first soldier violated me. The remaining two soldiers did not interfere with me. My child was crying in the room all the time. There were no persons who could have heard my cries or come to my assistance in any way. I particularly noticed that each soldier had the No. "49" on his helmet and shoulder strap. I am at present pregnant as the result of this violation.

helmet and shoulder strap. I am at present pregnant as the result of this violation.

On the following day (Thursday, 20th August) I was alone in the house when a German soldier of the same regiment came in the house and asked for butter. I told him I had only one small cow and had no butter at present. He said, "Well, you are bound to give me what I ask for." I still refused and he went to the door and called in two other soldiers, and he said, "This woman is not willing to give the butter I asked for." Another German said, "Well, we will make soup of the baby." One of them took up my baby which was in the room and took off all its clothes save the vest. They made signs that they were going to cut up the baby. I said, "Surely I have not done so much harm that you will take the baby?" At that moment somebody outside shouted that there was a Belgian aeroplane over the village. The three soldiers ran out of the house and I then took the child in my arms and ran into the wood close by. I remained the whole night in the wood. These three soldiers were not the

c 39

same as the men who had been into my house the previous day, but they belonged to the same regiment. The soldiers left Gelrode the next day and went to Louvain.

The main body of the soldiers had been encamped at about 10 minutes walk from my

house; the men whom I saw were part of a patrol.

Belgian Refugee—Single Woman.

I lived at Gelrode with my brother, who had a shop there.

On the 19th August, at about 4 p.m., some German soldiers arrived at Gelrode. Some of them belonged to the 149th Regiment of Infantry; there were also some cavalrymen and artillerymen. In the evening of that day the Germans made prisoners of 40 or 45 men, who were all unarmed civilians belonging to the village, and placed them in the church. The men remained there until the following morning. I saw the men going into the church on the previous evening, and on the next morning I saw 17 of them brought out of the church. I was standing at the door of my house and saw seven of the men pass my house, surrounded by soldiers who had their guns on their shoulders. I asked one of the soldiers, in Flemish, "What are you going to do with these young fellows?" He answered in German, "We are going to shoot them. They have shot upon us and we are going to shoot them." (I could going to shoot them. They have shot upon us and we are going to shoot them.' easily understand what the soldier said.) The men were placed behind the wall of a house not two minutes' walk from mine. I afterwards heard the sound of shots, but owing to the number of soldiers who were in front of me I did not actually see them shooting.

At about 3 o'clock on the same day the Germans left the village and I went to the place where the shooting had taken place and there saw the dead bodies of the seven men who had passed me in the morning. They were all known to me and their names were

as under :-

c 40

(Seven names given, including that of the son of the sacristan.)

Some earth had been thrown upon the bodies. Two of the men had had their heads smashed. I could see that nearly all of them had been shot in the back. There were no marks on the faces of any, except the two I have just mentioned.

At about 6 o'clock that evening I saw the sacristan and I told him his son had been killed, and he shortly afterwards came back with a wheelbarrow and I assisted him and two other men to bury his son at the cemetery. The other six men were afterwards buried by their friends.

The other men who had been imprisoned in the church were set free by the Germans before they left the village. There had been no women or children with them.

I have never seen any civilians at Gelrode shooting at the Germans. None of them had any arms, and they were all very much afraid of the Germans.

The Germans again entered the village on the following Saturday and left on the Monday.

During that time nothing happened.

On a Thursday afternoon at four o'clock at the beginning of September the Germans arrived for the third time in the village. The soldiers then belonged to the 162nd Regiment There were also some cavalrymen. I was then searched by the Germans, and made prisoner with my brother and was taken into the church. All the men, women and children whom the Germans could find were taken to the church. One woman who had just been confined was taken to the church on a mattress with her child beside her. We were kept in the church all night, and on the following morning we were allowed to walk in the cemetery for an hour. We then went back into the church, and were given some bread and water. We were allowed to go out of the church to obey the calls of nature, but always under guard. On the Thursday night when we were placed in the church the women cried with thirst, and I was allowed to go under a guard of two soldiers to my house to get water for them. My house was then full of officers and soldiers.

On Friday afternoon we were all taken to Wesemael, about an hour's journey from Gelrode, and the women were placed in a school there. On the way to Wesemael some of the people threw us some food, but the Germans did not give us any food that day. We remained in the school until the Saturday morning, when at about 6 o'clock we were set free.

The men had been placed in the church at Wesemael. My brother was amongst them,

and I have not seen him since. I believe that he is at present in Germany.

On arriving at my home I found that everything had been pillaged. I then saw three

nuns, who told me that the Germans had left the village at 1 o'clock that morning.

I know the last witness. Her house is on the hill at Gelrode, and is about a minute's walk from the nearest house. I think that she is a woman who would tell the truth and I believe that she could have seen the shooting of the seven men at the house near my own from her house.

There are about 1,000 people in Gelrode, but most of them fled at the approach of the Germans, and only a few households remained behind. Three of the people of the village were shot by the Germans as they were trying to flee. I saw these people lying wounded in the road, but as there was no doctor in the village there was no one to take care of them. The priest of Gelrode then took them to Aerschot on a Wednesday in a horse and cart which belonged to me. The man who drove the cart, and who is a relative of mine, told me that when he arrived at the market place at Aerschot he was seized, and with the priest was taken to the Town Hall. The horse was seized by the gunners. The man and the priest were kept

in the Town Hall for a few days and were well fed. Then the man and the priest were taken to Aerschot Church and the man was placed inside the church with other prisoners. The priest was kept outside the church. On the following day the man and other prisoners from the church were set free.

I was afterwards informed that the priest had been shot.

Belgian Refugee.

On the 19th August, a Wednesday, the German soldiers came to Gelrode. On the following day I was taken prisoner with 20 other civilians of Gelrode, and was made to march with the soldiers for about half a day. Then the whole of us were placed against a wall, and the soldiers counted out every third man and shot him. Seven were shot and 14 were left. I was amongst the remainder. None of these seven men had any weapons. Their names

(Seven names given, including that of son of sacristan.)

One of them was married. The other six were young men from Gelrode. There were a large number of German soldiers and four of them were chosen as a firing party, and these four men shot the seven civilians by order of the officer. I understood this by signs. Another officer had formed the seven men in a row, but apparently from his demeanour he did not want to shoot them. The second officer, however, gave the order to shoot. I did not hear the words used. The officers were clothed differently from the soldiers and were swords. Some of the soldiers held the two officer's horses. The soldiers were cavalrymen, but I do not know the name of their regiment.

I heard no reason given for the killing of these men. I was compelled to help to dig a pit and had to help to carry the dead body of one of the civilians to this pit, in which the

seven men were buried. This was in a field close by the scene of the shooting.

I and the other 13 civilians were then made to walk to Louvain, and we were taken to the church there and kept in it for three days. We were each given a little bread and water, once each day; we were allowed to go outside to obey the calls of nature. There were many other civilians inside the church.

I was then allowed to go free with some of the other prisoners. Owing to the presence of other German soldiers I hid for four days under a bridge between Betecom and Gelrode, and when the Germans left the neighbourhood I went to Gelrode. I then found that my father's house, in which I lived with my wife (whom I found subsequently at Betecom), had been burned down. I then went to Antwerp.

Gelrode is a village of about 300 inhabitants. None of the men who were taken prisoner with me had any weapons. They had all been given up by order of the burgomaster some

days before the Germans arrived.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

In August last, a friend of mine living in Gelrode, about half-an-hour's walk from Aerschot, told me that six inhabitants of Gelrode, with one from Aerschot, had been shot by the German soldiers, and had been buried in the garden of a house, and he wanted me to help him to disinter and rebury the bodies in sacred ground.

I went with him the next day, and helped by some others we did so. I was able to identify the bodies as those of people whom I had well known by sight—they were men

engaged in civil occupations.

The bodies had been riddled by shots, and I was shown a brick wall against which I was informed they had been made to stand, and the marks of bullets were plainly visible.

Belgian Soldier.

I was serving with my regiment between Aerschot and Gelrode. We had been engaged with the Germans for four days, at the end of which the Germans marched into Aerschot. This was about the sixth week of the war On the first day of this engagement—it was a Wednesday—I and 20 others of my regiment were acting as an advance guard. We were marching towards Gelrode from Aerschot along the road. At 6.30 in the evening, when we were about 7 or 8 minutes from Gelrode, I saw a beech tree about 60 feet high. It was standing at the side of the road. I saw a woman of about 30 hanging from a branch on the road side. A rope was round her neck and her feet were about 12 inches off the ground. Under her feet was a lot of blood. We passed by in the middle of the road, but the corporal in charge told us to go on. A hundred yards past the tree we were met by a number of villagers, who told us that the woman had been bayonetted and hung by the Germans at 2.30 on the previous day. We did not stop because we could see quite well that the woman was dead.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Wednesday the 17th day of August 1914, I was in the church at Gelrode, having been imprisoned there by the Germans who had occupied the town. From the church I could

c 44

c 42

c 43

c 41

* Date mistaken. Wednesday was the 19th.

see down the road through the village, and I saw a number of German soldiers, between 20 and 30 of them, fire upon and kill J... N... as she was walking down the road to her home. She was about 100 metres away from the German soldiers when she was shot.

She had never, so far as I am aware, offered any provocation to the German soldiers,

and all Belgian soldiers had left the village the day before.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

When the German soldiers came to Aerschot I was made prisoner, along with all the other civilians in the town. We were taken to the church at Gelrode. We were not allowed to go outside the church to obey the calls of nature. When I asked to go outside the German soldier said to me, "Sit down. You have to stop in the church, or we will shoot you." The German spoke in his own language, but I could easily understand what he said, or what he intended to convey. I had to obey the calls of nature in the church in front of all the other

We were afterwards brought out of the church, and made to hold up our hands and shout "Vive Germany." The burgomaster of Aerschot came up to us with a German officer and said that we were to give up our weapons. These had all, however, been given up long

before.

We were then taken to Louvain. There were about 2,000 prisoners, and all had come

from Aerschot. One of my fellow prisoners was J... M..., a native of Aerschot.

We were all placed in Station Street, Louvain, and the German soldiers fired upon us. I saw the corpses of some women in the street. I fell down, and a woman who had been shot fell on top of me. I did not dare to look at the dead bodies in the street; there were so many of them. All of them had been shot by the German soldiers. One of the women whom I saw laying dead in the street was a Miss J . . . (aged about 35). I also saw the body of A . . . M . . . (a woman)*; she had been shot. I saw an officer pull her corpse underneath a wagon. An order was then given to cease firing, but in fact the firing did not cease at that time. I cannot say to which regiment the German soldiers belonged.

I was informed that we were fired upon by the German soldiers because the civilians at

Louvain had fired upon the Germans.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

c 46

c 45

Between 2.30 and 3 p.m. on the 14th or 15th August† the Germans occupied the village Campenhout. of Campenhout. Three officers of the cavalry entered the house of my master and asked for wine and especially for champagne. They spoke in French. My master answered that he had not got any champagne. One of the officers then called in one of the soldiers of his regiment who was in the street and asked him in German, which language I understand, if it was true that there was no champagne in the house. The soldier replied that he himself had brought champagne to the house when he was in the employ of a merchant who sold champagne

in the village of Campenhout. The officer threatened my master with his revolver and as he did so told me to bring all the bottles of champagne we had in the house and put them in the passage within half an hour. Then I and the footman went and collected all the champagne there was in the house, about 100 bottles, and all other bottles of wine, there were several hundred bottles, and we put them in the passage, piling them in a line about four deep. The officers then went into the drawing-room and called the two sentries outside and ordered all the bottles to be put into a wagon and that I was to bring 10 bottles of champagne into the room for them. They then drank the whole 10 bottles, drinking out of the bottle themselves. After that they called for more bottles and invited another five or six officers and three or four private soldiers to come in. They also asked for glasses. They knocked the tops off the bottles and drank the wine. They then asked for my master and mistress. By this time they were all very drunk and were not able to drink any more, but were breaking the bottles which they made me continue to bring from the passage. My master and mistress came along the passage and my master pushed my mistress in front of him into the room as she was unwilling to enter. He thought it was advisable to go in as the Germans had ordered them to come. Immediately my mistress came in one of the officers who was sitting on the floor got up and putting the revolver to my mistress's temple he shot her dead. The officer was obviously drunk. I think he was an officer, because he was always giving orders. He wore a yellow cord across his breast and another one hanging over his arm. I did not see the number of the regiment, but they had yellow epaulettes. I could easily recognise the man if I saw him again. I should think he was about 40 years old. The other officers continued to drink and sing and did not pay great attention to the killing of my mistress. The officer who had shot my mistress then told my master to dig a grave and bury my mistress. I then asked the officer if I might dig the grave. The officer replied that my master must do it himself and that he would see that it was done. My master and the officer then went into the garden, the officer threatening my master with his pistol. My master was then forced to dig the grave and to bury the body of my mistress in it. My master and the footman then managed to escape by a back door. helped them to get away. When the officers found out that my master and the footman had

^{*} See c. 15. This is the woman there referred to as B . . . (whose maiden name was A. M.). † This date is apparently inaccurate. It should be a few days later.

gone they took me prisoner and locked me in another room, the second drawing-room. The next morning they told me that I must march with about 50 other inhabitants to Cologne to make fortifications there. We marched for two days without any food or drink till on the road from Louvain to Liège we were rescued by a body of Turcos who attacked our guards and freed us.

Before my mistress was shot the German soldiers had been firing off their revolvers at the mirrors and the window panes. I cannot say for what reason they killed my mistress. The

officer who did it was singing all the time.

The morning we left the village the soldiers sprinkled the woodwork of the shutters and the doors with a sort of syringe containing some inflammable liquid, and then set a light to these places with a torch. The whole village was burnt. I heard one of the officers say that the civil population had fired on them.

The footman saw my mistress killed also. I met my master again in Ostend, and he told me he was going to a brother of his in Holland. He only had 200 francs left. I do

not know where the footman is.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I am a cyclist, and early in September I entered Campenhout with the advance guard of my regiment. Campenhout is a village near Louvain. The Germans had been there but had evacuated the village. As I passed through I saw the dead body of a woman lying at the side of the road with a severe wound right across the breast. I passed through Campenhout but made no stay in the village.

Widow.

On the 18th of August at about 8 in the morning the German soldiers came into my house at Rotselaer, entering by the back and front doors. My husband was in the house and one child, also my husband's brother and two neighbours, who were civilians. There was also a sister-in-law of my husband's. There were seven German soldiers. They said that all the men had to go with them. I do not know German, but I understood this. They took all the men with them and ordered the women outside. They took the men about 200 metres away; when they got about 100 metres away one German soldier turned round and shot at me. I was crying at the time and my child was on my arm. They did not hit me. I ran away and did not see what happened to my husband.

About half-an-hour later I was told that they killed my husband. I never saw

his body.

My husband's brother and his sister-in-law and the two neighbours who were in the house were all killed, so I was told. I do not know of any reason why they were killed; no reason was given

The same day that my husband was killed I ran away from Rotselaer with my child. I went to Wilsele. I stayed there for four days and then went to Antwerp and from Antwerp

to England.

Belgian Refugee.

I was engaged to be married to a girl who lives at Rotselaer. On the 18th of August I came to Rotselaer to see my betrothed. In front of a farm, which was burning, I saw four bodies* lying; there were four men. I have no knowledge of how these people were killed. I was taken prisoner by the Germans myself on this same day and they robbed me of everything that I had got. They then let me go. I do not know where my betrothed is or her sister.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.—MARRIED WOMAN.

One day in August my husband was taken prisoner by the German soldiers in the morning. In the afternoon I was also made prisoner, with my six children. There were about 500 women and children taken prisoners, and we were taken in carts along the road to

Louvain. All of the people came from Rotselaer.

While we were on the road to Louvain we passed a place called Wilsele. The soldiers went to the house there and dragged a young man, a civilian, of about 20 years of age, from the house. The father and mother were there also. He tried to get away from the soldiers to rejoin his father and mother. He was thrown into the gutter (or channel) on the road about five minutes' distance from his own house, and there he was shot dead with three shots. I saw this. The man fell dead and the Germans left him lying there. The people who were with me, and who also saw it, said that the young man had been killed because he had refused to come with the Germans. I did not see any officers amongst the soldiers when this young man was shot There were a very large number of soldiers in all with the civilian prisoners. They were infantrymen, followed by six or seven who road bicycles. The ordinary soldiers had round caps, and the officers had helmets with spikes, and had stripes on their arms, and were dressed in grey.

c 47

c 48 Rotselaer.

c 50

c 49

When we arrived at Louvain, we, i.e., men, women, and children, were placed in a stable, and spent the night there. There were no horses in the stable. On the following morning we were given a little cake each, but it was too hard to eat. We were given some water from the pump. We had to sleep on straw.

In the morning I was allowed to go free with my children. I then went back to Rotselaer. I had to carry my little child, aged $2\frac{1}{2}$ years, and at the time I was expecting my confinement,

which took place here 17 days ago.

When near Rotselaer I saw the dead body of a man. His face was shattered, in my opinion, with a blunted instrument. A little further on I saw the dead body of another civilian. I had seen these men alive a short time previously, but I do not know their names; they were from Rotselaer. I was told that these men had hidden in the woods, and had been dragged from the woods by German soldiers, and shot because they had hidden themselves.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Monday, 26th of August [at Rotselaer] about 4 o'clock in the afternoon, a German officer came into my room with his revolver in his hand. He said, "You are my prisoner, follow me." He had already taken prisoner the curé, who was down below; there was with me another priest. On the way the officer, who was followed by two soldiers, said to us, "Just now in the village two of our hussars have been killed." This was an absolute lie, because, two hours afterwards, an officer of higher rank said to me, "If any act of hostility is "committed against our soldiers during the night you will all be shot and the village "sacked." Then I was put in prison in a house with the other priest for about half an hour. Afterwards the officer took us out and brought us into the street to a group of my parishioners, of whom three were selected to be shot with me in case of hostilities. Thereupon a colonel came up and threatened to shoot all of us in case of hostilities. One of my parishioners suggested to me to ask the colonel to shut us up in the church, so that it might be impossible for us to do anything. The colonel answered that the women and children were also shooting. Nevertheless we were shut up in the church until next day. In the evening a general came to lay down his conditions to us. The next morning many women and children were brought to the church. The clock having stopped during the night, I was accused of having done it for the purpose of spying. I answered, "I knew nothing of it." In the afternoon we had to march to Louvain, about two hours' march, where we arrived about half past five in the evening. After two halts in the main square and in front of the station we were shut up in a train about 9 o'clock at night. It was a train composed of cattle trucks, where we passed the night.

The next morning about half past five the train started, and we arrived at Cologne about 11 in the evening. We received nothing to eat on the way, but there were women with us who had brought a little bread with them, which they distributed. There were other

prisoners in the train who came from Louvain and other villages also.

At Cologne we passed the night in large halls which had been prepared for a local exhibition. We had not yet received anything from the Germans, but they gave a little milk to the children at the station. About 9 o'clock in the morning (Saturday) we received some bread. About 10 o'clock we were brought back to the station. We started at midday to return to Belgium, and arrived at Brussels on the Monday morning, having taken about 38 hours on the journey. We spent the whole night outside Liège. During that time the Germans gave us nothing to eat, but at Liège the inhabitants gave us something. At Brussels we remained 12 hours in the train. At 2 o'clock in the afternoon we were compelled to march from Schaerbeek towards Malines, where we arrived about half-past nine in the evening and there we were abandoned and left free. The women and children, and the old men who could not march remained at Brussels. Before midday the Germans gave us a piece of bread; the Burgomaster had provided for it. On our journey back the train was composed of ordinary railway carriages, but in the carriage in which I was there were 43 and 5 guards, though there was room only for 23.

While we were at Louvain I heard a German officer say to another, pointing to some houses which were uninjured, "All this is still to be burnt." They were speaking French. I saw a German officer who spat in the face of my curé. I think that was at Aix-la-Chapelle.

AGRICULTURAL LABOURER.

In the village of Rotselaer there was a girl named M. . . . who was well known to me. About four weeks ago, the day before the Germans came to Rotselaer, I saw and spoke to her. She was then in her sound senses.

The next day the Germans occupied Rotselaer, and all the inhabitants were taken prisoners and put in the church there. Among others I saw M. . . . She was in a wild and

While we were in the church some German soldiers came in. As soon as M.... saw the German soldiers she began cursing and swearing at them in a very loud voice. This was in the presence of myself and many others. She made it clear that she had been dragged into a wood by five German soldiers, and had been violated by these men.

The German soldiers in the church were furious with M. . . . , and they tied her hands

and feet together so that she could not move.

After the Germans left M. . . . was put into an asylum in Louvain.

c 52

c 51

COMMERCIAL AGENT.

On the 19th August I left Ostend, intending to go to Burdinne, near Liège, to see my wife's solicitor. I could not get to Burdinne as I was prevented by the German patrols in the neighbourhood. Near Tremeloo I saw a woman seized by four German soldiers. They threw her on the ground in a little copse, tore off her clothes and raped her—all four of them in turn. I was about 300 yards off. Having no weapon I was compelled to allow them to commit this beastly act. The woman was struggling and screaming. It was her screams which attracted my attention. Finally the soldiers went away and I went up to the woman and found her in a dreadful state. She was crying and groaning and lamenting. She was fairly well dressed. She told me that she had dug her nails pretty deep into one of the soldiers, and she had in fact a quantity of blood and bits of skin in her nails. She told me that she would most certainly be able to identify the man in question if she lived to be 100. She spoke Flemish. She told me her name and that she lived at Louvain. Tremeloo is an easy hour's walk from Louvain. I left the woman in the copse after consoling her as well as I could. I knew that she was in her own country. As for myself, finding it impossible to get to Louvain, I turned round and went to Brussels so as to get to Ostend as quickly as possible. On the 17th September I met an Antwerp lady on the road between Brussels and Ghent. Her name was de S. . . and she told me that she had recently been married. She appeared to be 23 or 24. She told me that her husband was with the army and that she had gone to stay with her uncle at Louvain, and that 17 German soldiers had raped her in a house in Louvain which had been deserted by its inhabitants. This happened at the time when the Germans committed the Louvain atrocities. I asked the lady to take a letter from me to my mother at Antwerp. She did so, and my mother told me that she had told her (my mother) the same story of rape which she told me.

told her (my mother) the same story of rape which she told me.

Note by Examining Barrister.—There is an apparent discrepancy in this deposition. The witness says that the Germans tore off the woman's clothes; later on he says that she was fairly well dressed. The latter statement was made by the witness in answer to a question by me as to the condition of life of the woman, whether she was a peasant woman or a person of a superior class, and his answer was merely intended to show that the woman in question

was not a peasant or working class woman.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The Germans came to Tremeloo in August. I do not know the exact date, but it was on the same day as they entered Louvain. The civilians then fled from the village, but they

returned on the following day.

T. P. T. had remained in the village, and he afterwards told my father that a man named G... had been killed by a bayonet wound. I afterwards saw the dead body of the young man in the school at Tremeloo. I saw that the clothing on the left side of his breast had been pierced by a lance. I knew this man. There was blood on his clothing where it was cut.

He was 23 years old and was training to be an advocate.

I also saw the dead body of a man whom I knew, a man aged 41 or 42. He was in his own house. He was clothed. There was a cut on his clothing over his heart. There was blood on the clothing. The clothing had been pierced with a lance. The priest told me that this man had been found in a small furrow in a field and that he had been killed by

Uhlans, who carried lances.

Forty-seven of the houses in Tremeloo were burned on the same day, after an engagement between the Belgian and the German soldiers. I do not know in what way the Germans burned the houses. T. P. T. told me he had spoken to the German general on the subject of the burning of the 47 houses and the killing of the two civilians, and that the general had said, "We have finished burning, but we did not murder." The German general told T. P. T. that he had seen G. . . 's papers after his death, and had discovered that he was a lieutenant of the "Burgher Wacht" and that he had a Belgian flag around his arm.

The men of Tremeloo between the ages of 20 and 50 who were not soldiers had been enrolled in the "Burgher Wacht" (I did not join because I could not spare the time). Before the Germans came three men belonging to the "Burgher Wacht" kept guard, one only of which was armed. On the day before the Germans arrived all the arms of the "Burgher Wacht" had been given up, by order of the chief officer, and none of the civilians were

armed when the Germans arrived.

Within 10 days of the above occurrence the priest and the vicar* of Tremeloo were made prisoners by the Germans, and since then none of the inhabitants had seen or heard of them; this was before I left Tremeloo.

Belgian Refugee.

On August 19th the Germans came into Tremeloo. The same day they burned 37 houses. They set fire to them; I did not see them setting fire, but I saw that the houses had been burned down. It was the next day that I saw the burned-down houses. They were no longer burning. On the day that the Germans came in I fled to a large wood, half-an-hour away from Tremeloo. Over 200 of the villagers, including my mother and stepfather, eight of

c 53 Tremeloo.

e 54

n 55

us all in family, fled there and spent the night on the ground. The Germans left the next day. We came out of the wood and went back to our houses at 8 a.m. that morning; the

Germans had already left.

By a ditch in the village road I saw the body of a young man of Tremeloo, of 23 years, G.., a well-to-do man. He was stabbed through the heart, the stab coming out behind. I saw the marks of it myself; also he had the appearance of having been heavily beaten. I saw also the body of a villager,* who was the father of five children. His body lay on chairs in his house; I was told it had been found in the morning near the path; it was believed that he had been killed in taking flight. I saw the mark of a bullet-wound in the temple and of a

stab in the arm, I cannot say in which arm.

The 19th August was a Wednesday, I do not forget that day. There had been fighting between the Belgian and German troops that day on the east side of Tremeloo and a little of it

in the village itself.

c 56

e 57

The next day, when we came back on the east side of Tremeloo, I saw corpses of five Belgian soldiers and the grave of a German officer with a German inscription on a cross "Slain, August 19th." I cannot remember the name. The 37 burned-down houses were also on the east side of Tremeloo.

Belgian Refugee.

The German soldiers burned all the houses in Tremeloo in two days. They also captured all the male civilians they could find. They also burned the houses at Werchter. First time they burned 15, second time nearly 150, third time about two, and fourth time three.

My house was burned and I fled with my family.

My wife's mother and my sister-in-law, who lived also in Werchter, went to my house to look after the cattle. This was about six weeks ago. I was then with my family at Bael, near Tremeloo. My house was burned and my sister and mother-in-law said that they went into a little place near the stable which had not been burned, and while they were getting ready for a little meal four German soldiers arrived. They asked if there were any men near. The women told them that the men had run away from the town because the Germans were taking the civilians as prisoners. The soldiers then said, "You need not run away from us, you are in safety here." At midnight the four soldiers returned, and after two of them had searched the stable to see if any men were there, the four soldiers violated my mother-in-law and my sister-in-law. They held a revolver at the two women before violating them.

My sister-in-law, who is unmarried, had with her a baby four months old. She was asked whether the child was the son of a Belgian soldier. She replied that it was not. They said that if it had been the son of a Belgian soldier they would have killed it. (My sister-in-law was engaged to be married to a Belgian soldier, who was the father of the child.)

After they had violated the two women the soldiers told them that they must stay at

the stable and that they (the soldiers) would bring them food and drink.

When the four soldiers left, the two women went out of the stable and hid. About a quarter of an hour later, while they were still hiding, the women saw six different soldiers

going to the stable.

On the following day the women came back to Bael. When I saw them they were both in tears, and the elder woman told her husband and my wife and myself that the soldiers "did what they wished with us." My mother-in-law looked very ill, and she has been very ill since as the result of what the soldiers did to her. My sister-in-law did not seem so distressed as her mother. The women said that the German soldiers were dressed in grey. I do not know where the two women are at the present time. We became separated at Heyst, not far from Lierre. I have not heard of and from them since that day.

Belgian Soldier.

In the month of September I was on patrol duty near Tremeloo by Louvain. heard groaning and saw some Germans running off; we entered a wood where we heard the groaning and found a young girl naked on the ground and covered with scratches. She had fainted. Her clothes were under her. We carried her to a half-destroyed house and partly washed her to revive her. She told us she had been taken from a burnt-out village (Tremeloo) about 800 yards from the wood, and dragged to the wood and violated by some six or seven Germans. She appeared to have been so treated as the lower part of her body was covered with marks and scratches.

The same day in Tremeloo we found an old woman kneeling by her husband who was just dead and still warm, an old man of 72. She told us the Germans had shot him as they (she and her husband) tried to escape from the house. He was shot through the leg and through the head. The bullet in the leg was a German bullet. We took it from the leg to show the woman it was not a Belgian bullet as she said at one time. She seemed half mad with grief, and first said it was the Germans and then us. A battle had lasted four days hereabouts. 22nd or 23rd October, just after 5 o'clock we were advancing. On the left front we saw some

^{*} These are the bodies referred to by the last witness.

Germans waving an English flag and making signs for assistance. Some of us went to their assistance and were fired at by three mitrailleuses concealed in houses, and nearly all killed or wounded. We then found out they (the ones who had signalled to us) were Germans. This was on the banks of the Yser between Nieuport and Pervisse (? Pervyse).

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the middle of September after leaving Rotselaer I was in a village which I think is Tremeloo. An old man called to me, and showed me the body of a woman of about 30 lying in a ditch by the roadside. The body was lying under a sack, the blouse open at the neck; I saw blood. The old man said that she was cut right down from the neck, downwards through the chest, and that the Germans did it. I did not myself look under the sack.

CORPORAL IN BELGIAN ARMY.

In Tremeloo, the beginning of October, I and four others entered a house which had been half destroyed. In the cellar we found a man and a woman dead. The blood was still flowing. They appeared to have been beaten and kicked to death. I saw no bayonet wounds. The cellar was intact, so they had not been killed there by falling masonry. By their side was a little girl dressed. Both hands had been cut off and were on the floor. She was still alive but could not speak. She was about seven years old. We took her to the ambulance, but she died. I saw no Germans there at the time. We retreated in the afternoon. What we saw was about 8 a.m. The Germans had been in possession. We saw their writing on doors of the houses. I know a little German and can recognise the writing.

I also saw a German outpost on one occasion advancing to find out where our trenches were. There were three Germans, each carried two children and they drove about six men and women in front of them with their hands tied. We could not fire and the Germans, when they found out where our trenches were, went back, with the men and women following this time, so we judged they were the parents of the children. They were crying and did not try to escape. The children were only from two to three years old and the Germans were able to hold them both and their revolvers as well. The Germans came within 10 yards of us.

Belgian Refugee.

The 22nd August the Germans arrived at Wespelaer.

Wespelaer is a village of 1,600 persons.

The first day I was threatened that if a single shot was fired that night, I and a hundred of the most vigorous male inhabitants would be shot. The under lieutenant Ida made use of the threats as spokesman for his major and superiors.

I was compelled to go round with a guard to collect such of the inhabitants as lived on the other side of the line (these were lodged in the church), the Germans fearing attack from

that side

The Red Cross Hospital, which I had founded when the war began, was opposite the church. It had been accepted officially by the Belgian Government. I had a doctor and ten stretcher-bearers, eight were made prisoners the 28th August without any reason at all.

When the first Germans arrived they threatened to shoot some of the inhabitants for firing on a patrol of Uhlans, but I had myself seen the shooting which was by a detachment of Belgian soldiers, and I so informed the officer in command. These Germans left on the Sunday, having killed nobody. Others arrived during the week; a whole army corps passed

through. They took all day passing.

For no reason these began burning and killing. No inhabitant had done anything, and as no Belgian soldiers were then in the neighbourhood, no mistake on the subject was possible. The 25th August the burning began. The Germans shot the owner of the first house burnt on his doorstep, and his girl 20 years old inside. I was on the spot within half-an-hour. Thirty-one people altogether were shot, two women included, no children. Seventy houses had been burnt when I left. I only saw one person shot with my own eyes—a man who had an old carbine in his house. It had not been used. He was not carrying it.

An engagement took place on 25th August. Wounded were brought in to the hospital, and some to private houses. The Germans fired at least twenty times at me as I left the hospital after looking after the wounded. Five wounded were received by a resident in his house. On 25th or 26th August the Germans pillaged this house and set it on fire. It was burnt to the ground with the wounded inside. No one was left to move them having

all fled.

A married couple, 80 years old, were burnt alive in another house. The old man's son and daughter-in-law lived with him. They managed to escape, but badly burnt about the arms and face. I did not see this house set on fire, but the Germans pillaged every house before setting it alight, and must have known of the people inside. The son and daughter-in-law were in the cellar, but the old persons were in bed.

A girl, whose name I have, was raped by the Germans. She was a girl of good character. She told me herself. She gave me no details. Her father and brother were amongst those

shot.

c 59

e 58

c 60 Wespelaer. I was made prisoner the 28th August between 7—8 o'clock. I do not know why. I had been helping to see after the wounded, and was on my way to assist in burying the dead. My last two stretcher-bearers were taken prisoners at the same time. I was liberated 29th August about five o'clock. While a prisoner I was given a glass of water and a little sugar—nothing else. At first the column of prisoners was about 700–800, all men; afterwards they increased to 2,000. I was kicked and struck with the fist. The officers saw this and did not interfere.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About August 24th I came back from Antwerp to Wespelaer. The Germans had come in the same day. I saw both cavalry and infantry and also soldiers with bicycles. A great many houses there were already burning. About 200 men were taken prisoners by the Germans that day. I was amongst them. I was taken prisoner in the street and was four days a prisoner. I was taken from Wespelaer to Thildonck. I was first taken to Campenhout. In a field there about a hundred of us were being kept prisoners. Two old men of Campenhout were amongst the prisoners—both about 70 years of age. Their sons were amongst the prisoners. One of the old men was somewhat imbecile. Both were slow in coming out of their houses. When the German soldiers had gone in to fetch them out, they seemed not quite to understand what they were to do, or what they were wanted for. They were slow in coming along on to the field where we were all placed. The German soldiers told them to move on more quickly. They shot both in my presence. I saw it myself. They shot both in

I saw houses burned in Campenhout by the Germans and in other places where we were

kept while prisoners.

My brother-in-law was taken prisoner at Wespelaer four days after me. He was an artisan; he was not a soldier. He and two other burghers from Wespelaer were put on their knees against the wall of a house in Wackerzeel and were shot through the head.

I was set free in Campenhout. Ten days later in Wygmael I saw German soldiers fire on soldiers forming part of a Belgian patrol. Of two of these soldiers I saw that one was shot dead; the other was hit and fell from his horse, but he was only wounded. He was lying on the ground. I saw a German soldier beat him to death with the butt of his rifle.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The Germans arrived (at Wespelaer) August 24th about. The first night they were there they started burning the houses and killing civilians. I had gone off to my sister's, 5 miles away, at Boort Meerbeek. We stayed there one night, and till midday (25th). The Germans threatened us with revolvers at our breasts; they were smashing up the bicycles.

On my way back I saw the dead body of a civilian who lived at Wespelaer lying at one side of the road. He had been shot in the face. At Boort Meerbeek I saw a donkey cart containing a man with his mother and sister. The man had been shot dead, the sister was wounded in the leg, and the old woman was wailing. I knew him; he lived only five

minutes away.

e 62

When I got home, I found my farm in flames, with all the live stock (except the horses, which I was told had been taken by the Germans) in the sheds. My wife and children were with me then. We went away, and came to the house of a near neighbour; the house was burning, and I was told by the youngest daughter (13 years old) that the Germans had fired into the house and then set it alight, and that her father and sister were then inside and were burnt to death, if they had not been already killed.

We went on to my father's house and were there for two days and nights, and had to provide meals for the Germans. But they behaved quite well. Then the fighting began, and

we fled to Antwerp.

I went back by myself, and saw my father's house in flames; about 50 houses were burnt in Wespelaer. There had been bombardment there. One of them was burnt, so I was told, when the owner and an old man of 80 and his wife and son were in it; the son rushed out in flames, and I saw him being taken to a convent at Thildonck near by; but I think he must have died. I saw the house in flames.

I saw many men taken away by the Germans, boys, and even old men of 70; all that they

could find.

e 63

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was a member of the Garde Civique at Wespelaer, but before the arrival of the Germans I had to give up my weapons.

On the 25th August, upon the approach of the Germans, I ran away from Wespelaer, and my neighbour, a woman whom I knew well, and her son (aged 30) and daughter (aged 35) were shot by the German soldiers when about 100 yards from their house. The woman was killed and the son was wounded in the head, and the daughter in the leg. I did not stop as I was fleeing from the Germans. The soldiers were infantrymen, but I do not know the name of their regiment. The civilians were all unarmed, and the people were

The husband of the woman and one of his daughters got away. There had not previously been any engagement in the town between the German and Belgian troops. I went with my family to Malines and at the end of two days we returned to Wespelaer. I then saw the woman, who was dead, and also her son and daughter, who were wounded, and who The two latter were taken to a hospital at Wespelaer, had laid in the road for two days. and the daughter afterwards went to a convent at Thildonck.

On my return to Wespelaer I saw the dead bodies of three other persons, namely, a labourer, and his daughter, a schoolmistress, who lay in front of their house, and a third man, a gardener, who was lying behind some corn sheaves. I saw the wife of the first man; each had been shot. I saw the bullet wounds. The labourer was shot through the stomach. I did not see the daughter's wound. The gardener was shot in the head. The woman told me that he and his daughter had been shot while fleeing from the Germans. These people all belonged to Wespelaer.

A few days later some German soldiers arrived at Wespelaer, and I again left the

town.

Belgian Refugee.

I cannot remember the date; I was taken prisoner by the Germans with 1,200 other civilians. A man was taken from among our number, placed against a wall 100 yards away, and shot by six soldiers by order of an officer. I do not know the regiment. This was at Wespelaer. I also saw the priest of Bueken tied to a gun-carriage and taken off towards Brussels. This was at Bueken. We were made to fetch water from a well at Twintgat accompanied by an officer and four soldiers. Near the well lay four bodies of civilians, three men and one woman. We were compelled by the solders to clap our hands when we saw them.

We were shut up in burned and ruined houses on the chaussée between Louvain and Then we saw other bodies partly burned, and the German soldiers compelled Campenhout.

us to clap our hands again.

I was four days a prisoner, and during those four days I and my companions were compelled to march in front of the German troops to protect them from the fire of the Belgians.

During these four days we had six cups of water and five pieces of sugar a piece.

Belgian Soldier.

At the commencement of the war I was in the Belgian Army, and served with the

Carabineers, stationed at Malines. I had previously been a reservist for eight years.

On the 27th* August, as I was walking with my regiment at Malines, in the morning, I saw a German soldier about 150 metres from me. There were other German soldiers with him, and they were running away from my comrades; they were not in military formation; and, as far as I could see, they all wore the same uniform.

Two women, one of whom I took to be the mother of the other, were close to a house, and were together. The German soldier, whom I have mentioned, struck the elder woman in the middle of the back with his bayonet, and I saw the blade coming through her breast as she faced me. She immediately fell down. I was then about 100 metres from her. The younger woman was a simple peasant, and wore nothing but a skirt, a blouse, and under it a chemise. The soldier immediately pulled off the blouse of the younger woman, and her breasts were quite naked. I saw him then cut off both the woman's breasts, and I saw two large red wounds on the woman's chest. I believe this was done with his bayonet, but it may have been done with a knife, as the German soldiers also carry knives. The woman fell dead. When this happened I was then about 50 metres away from the soldier. I immediately shot the soldier, and he fell. Several other soldiers also witnessed this.

There was no justification for the killing of these women. After I shot the soldier I walked on and passed near the bodies of the two women and the soldier. There were no officers with me at the time; I am a sergeant, but was not in charge of the Belgian soldiers.

The Belgian soldiers recaptured Malines on that day. During the engagement women were in the streets of the town, but as soon as they saw the German troops they fled into their

houses. I think that the soldier who killed the two women must have been drunk.

I saw the dead bodies of several other women in the streets of Malines (I think there were between 10 to 12) who had been killed in different streets of the town near their own houses on the same day (27th August). I cannot say how they were killed, and it is possible that they may have been killed during the progress of the battle between the Belgiaus and the troops. The women were of all ages.

I have lost the power of my wrist, and was discharged from the Belgian Army as unfit

for further service.

Belgian Soldier.

On or about the 26th August, at Malines, I saw a German soldier strike a woman of about 50 years of age, and her son aged about 18, with his bayonet. I at once shot the German and killed him. I afterwards saw the bowels protruding from the woman's body.

* This should be the 25th.

c 64

d 1 Malines.

The German bayonet on being withdrawn inflicts a tearing wound. The son's hands had been cut off and his stomach was also cut. Neither of these persons had given any provocation whatever. This happened just before an engagement between the Belgian and German troops. I do not know the name of the regiment to which the German soldier belonged. The other members of my regiment who were with me also witnessed this, but I cannot say whether any of them are at present in England.

I assisted to place the bodies of the woman and her son in a café close by.

d 3

d 4

d 5

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 8th September I arrived at the bridge at Malines from my house (which is on the south side of the river) at about 4 a.m. and was engaged in feeding some cattle near by.

Between 7.30 and 8 a.m. I saw a Belgian soldier in uniform, and some other Belgians engaged in placing a wireless telephone installation on the church. I then saw some Uhlans. The Belgian soldier shot four of them down, and the other Uhlans turned round and fled. In their flight the Uhlans shot a civilian as he was coming out of the church. This man was known to me as an inspector of police, who lived at Doomstraat. Just then another civilian, an old man, was shot as he was coming out of his house. A moment later an old woman, who lived in a house close by the church, looked out of her window, and one of the Uhlans shot her hand off. The Uhlans shot at everyone they saw indiscriminately. I did not actually see the woman shot, but directly the Uhlans passed I went out and assisted to carry her to the hospital. I also assisted to carry the Uhlans who had been shot. The inspector who had been shot was taken to his house by me and his son and daughter and placed on a mattress. We undressed him, and I then saw that he had a bullet wound in his thigh, and that the bullet had also passed through his stomach. He was in very great pain, and said "Oh, God, have mercy upon me." I assisted to carry him to the hospital, but he died on the way.

MARRIED WOMAN,

I remember the second occasion when the Germans bombarded Malines. One day when the Germans were not actually bombarding the town I left my house to go to my mother's house in High Street. My husband was with me. I saw eight German soldiers. They came round a corner into the street in which I was walking with my husband and came towards us. They were drunk. They were singing and making a lot of noise and dancing about. They were in grey uniforms. As the German soldiers came along the street I saw a small child, whether boy or girl I could not see, come out of a house. The child was about 2 years of age. The child came into the middle of the street so as to be in the way of the soldiers. The soldiers were walking in twos. The first line of two passed the child; one of the second line, the man on the left, stepped aside and drove his bayonet with both hands into the child's stomach, lifting the child into the air on his bayonet and carrying it away on his bayonet, he and his comrades still singing. I could see the man for about 200 yards, still carrying the child on Then the soldiers were hidden by a curve in the street. The child screamed when the soldier struck it with his bayonet, but not afterwards. The same day we escaped from Malines and went to Ghent, taking train from a village called Rumpst. My husband and children were with me. We stayed at Ghent eight days. From Ghent we went to Melle, about two hours' walk from Ghent. Then I saw five German soldiers enter a house. I had been told that there was an old lady in this house who was sick. Everyone was flying from Melle and I had gone into the house to speak to the woman and to see if I could do anything for her. While I was talking to the old lady in her room, the Germans came in making a lot of noise, I think they were half drunk. One of them went up to the old woman, who was lying on her bed propped up with pillows, and asked her if she was sick. The woman replied, "I am sick, but I should like to see my daughter." He said, "Oh, you are sick," and as he spoke struck her in the chest with the butt end of his rifle. I ran away. I do not know whether the old lady was killed or not, but she was 80 years

Note.—The husband of this witness was examined separately from her and confirmed her account of the killing of the child. See next statement.

HUSBAND OF PREVIOUS WITNESS.

Once at the time when Malines was bombarded on the second occasion I was in Drap Street, Malines, with my wife. We were going to High Street. I saw six or eight German soldiers in Drap Street. They were dressed in grey uniforms. They were drunk. They were singing and dancing. They came along in twos and threes. I saw a child come out of a house to the middle of the street and get in the way of the soldiers. I do not know whether it was a boy or a girl. One of the soldiers drove his bayonet or lance, I don't know which it was, into the child's stomach and carried it off on his weapon. They went down Milan Street. As long as they were in my sight the soldier was carrying the child in the air on his weapon. The child gave one scream when the soldier struck it.

We left Malines the next day, going by train from Rumpst to Ghent.

My wife told me about the old woman who was struck by a German soldier at Melle. I was not with her in the house.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On 25th August last, at Malines, at 6 a.m., as we were resting in a village near to which the Germans had occupied and evacuated, we found in one of the houses a boy, about 17, crouching down as if asking to be spared, quite dead and covered with bayonet wounds in the face, hands and body. In another house the dead body of a girl, about the same age, in the same condition. In a ditch the body of an old woman of the village, who had been killed by the Germans.

d 6

Belgian Soldier.

I saw on the Chaussée de Louvain, i.e., the main road from Malines to Louvain, on leaving Malines, about five minutes walk from it, near the bridge, a woman of 45 or 50 years of age or perhaps more, at the left side of the road on the sand lying dead. We were halted there about 5 minutes. We opened her blouse and chemise and found 12 bayonet wounds on her between the shoulders and waist in front. She had been dead long enough to be cold. This was the 25th of August, the first day we fought at Malines.

d 7

We were going towards Louvain, and when we got 100 yards further on a man came out of a house with a rifle in his hand with a bayonet fixed on it with blood all over it, it had also run over the rifle; and showed that it was the bayonet that had killed the woman. We found two dead Germans in a small field close to where the body was found, and I think whoever killed the woman ran away from our troops and left his rifle behind and the man picked it up, or possibly he was one of the two dead Germans found near.

Belgian Soldier.

At a little village near Malines,* during the month of August, I saw an old agricultural labourer, with a barrow, who had been killed about one hour before. He was going to work, and his wife told us that it was the German cavalry who had killed him, firing upon him at 50 yards. I saw the corpse, and the hole in his head through which the bullet passed. In the same village I saw the burnt body of the butcher's son who tried to escape from the Germans into a house, he being a non-combatant.

d 8

d 9

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

My regiment had an engagement with the German soldiers near Malines, and the Belgian soldiers retreated through the town. I then saw the dead body of an old woman, who had probably been shot. I also saw a young woman, aged between 16 and 20, who had been killed by a bayonet. She was kneeling and her hands were clasped, and the bayonet had pierced both hands. I also saw a young man, a civilian, aged about 16, who had been killed by a bayonet thrust through his mouth. The old woman had been in a house along with the young woman.

Other members of my regiment saw these dead bodies, but I cannot say whether any of

them are at present in England.

All the houses in the village were set on fire by the German soldiers, but I do not know the name of the regiment to which they belonged.

Belgian Soldier.

I was on patrol duty in the neighbourhood of Hofstade. We entered the village in the early afternoon. Very many of the houses were demolished. We were looking for Germans hiding in the houses. In the first house we entered—the first house on our right—we found the dead bodies of a man and two women. The man had been bayonetted in the forehead. One of the women had been bayonetted in the stomach. She was about 45 years of age. The other woman was about 20 years old. She had a bayonet wound in the head and her legs had been cut almost off. The whole room was covered in blood. The bodies of the two women were lying side by side and that of the man a little apart. We entered another house further on, on the same side of the road. In the downstair room was a hanging lamp and a boy of about 10 years of age was hanging to it by a piece of string. The string was round his neck. He had a bayonet wound in the stomach. There was a pool of blood under the body. The blood had dried, I think. I did not touch any of these four bodies.

d 10 Hofstade.

d 11

Belgian Refugee.

Twelve German soldiers came to my farm and fired through the windows at 5 a.m.

I took refuge in the cellar and they set fire to my house and the farm buildings. All the contents of the house were destroyed.

They also burnt two other houses belonging to me close by.

On coming up out of the cellar I found in my garden the dead body of a neighbour of mine, a widow, about 36. She was killed by bayonet thrusts.

The Germans burnt the whole village of Hofstade, more than 50 houses.

A CONTRACTOR OF THE PARTY OF TH

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

d 12 At Hofstade, close to Malines, in a house into which I went to see if there were any wounded wanting help, I saw in a room a little boy about 12 years of age apparently on his knees pleading for help, with his hands clasped, and just at his heart was a bayonet wound. The little fellow was quite dead and cold. The wound was quite visible and undoubtedly caused by a bayonet thrust.

At the same village I saw the German soldiers carrying inflammable liquid in glass

bottles. I saw them throw these into many houses and directly an explosion and a fire took place. The inhabitants were partly in and partly out of their houses at the time; many, I know, were burnt by this means and perished in their houses.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 25th of August we entered Hofstade. We had just driven the Germans out. In a garden behind a house in the main street of the village I saw two bodies of women. They d 13 were women of about 40 or 50. In another house in the same street and on the same side I found a boy of about 16 years old dead, propped up against the wall of the room. He had two bayonet wounds in the chest. I did not touch his body.

Belgian Refugee.

d 14 The German soldiers entered Hofstade on 25th August. They set fire to about 30 houses near the main road. They did this immediately they arrived. There was no firing by civilians or any sort of provocation.

The inhabitants had taken refuge in the cellars.

The Germans forced them to come out and to march hands up to Elewyt, a village a short distance away. There they were placed in a school, I amongst the number.

After we had been in the school some hours the Germans came in and took out from

amongst us a man whom I knew well and who had a house fronting the main road.

The officer in command charged him with having fired from his home on the German troops and said he was to be shot.

He solemnly protested he had done nothing of the kind.

The officer, however, ignored these protestations, heaped abuse on him and ordered his

He was placed against a wall opposite the school and shot with rifles in my presence.

During the march from Hofstade to Elewyt two of our party (civilians-men), getting tired, allowed their arms to drop and thereupon they were wounded with the bayonetpricked, not seriously wounded.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 25th of August, early in the morning, I saw the bodies of two girls between d 15 20 and 25 years at Hofstade near Malines. One had her breasts cut off and the other had been stabbed. They were both together in a backyard of a house in a street, the name of which I do not know.

We were searching all the houses and found these bodies.

The breasts cannot have been cut off accidentally. They were cut off clean. I cannot say with what. These were the only wounds I saw on this body. The other body had a bayonet wound between the breasts. The clothing of both bodies was torn to pieces.

I was wounded shortly afterwards and had no time to report what I had seen.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Hofstade, on the 25th August I saw the body of a young man of 17 years of age in a d 16 café, killed by bayonet thrusts. He was holding his hands together.

On the same day, in the same village, I saw the body of a man with his skull cut open. He appeared to have been killed by a blow from a rifle butt.

BELGIAN NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.

On the 27th of August in a farm in the neighbourhood of Hofstade, I saw the body of d 17 a boy of about 15 years of age who had been killed by a bayonet thrust. He was kneeling down with his hands together as though asking for mercy; I examined the body to see. I was alone.

· Belgian Soldier.

I was in flight, having been wounded by a blow on my face from a German officer, on the d 18 Hofstade road (near Malines), where there is a little stream, the Germans being behind me and firing. I saw lying on the side of the road an old peasant woman dead. She was lying there with her hands, which were empty, crossed upon her breast. She was wearing sabots, a blue, apron, and a red handkerchief on her head. Both her eyes had been gouged out of her head, and her face was covered with blood. On the other side of the road was lying the dead body of a woman, who looked as if she might be about 30, also of the peasant class; her blouse was torn away, and I counted seven bayonet wounds on her breast, which was naked down to the waist. She was lying in a pool of blood, and one could not recognise her features, which were covered with blood,

Belgian Soldier.

I saw the dead body of a woman lying in the road at Hofstade. Her body was partly covered with straw. Some of my comrades uncovered the body, and we saw that there was a bayonet in the woman's stomach.

I was in the hospital at Lierre when it was bombarded by the German soldiers. The first bomb fell on the hospital, and six Belgian soldiers were killed in their beds.

Belgian Soldier.

When we were following the Germans after Liège, near Malines, at the village of Hofstade, we found quite warm the dead body of a young proprietor of a café, lying on the ground, covered with bayonet wounds. There were too many cuts for us to attempt to count them. On the same road I saw---in fact we all saw as we were marching—several bodies on the side of the roadway covered with straw, and amongst them one with a woman's skirts. A workman there told me that the woman, with many others, had been killed by German soldiers with the bayonet.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 25th August, I was at Hofstade, near Malines, with my section. I saw in a café in the main road leading to Malines and Werchter, a civilian lad of about 17 years old with a severe bayonet wound in his stomach and across it, and a bayonet wound through the arm. He was dead. He was unarmed. He was kneeling by the chimney, in an attitude as though he had tried to hide himself.

About 400 yards from the same road, lying on a dungheap, I saw two girls of about 20 years of age, both killed by bayonet wounds in the stomach, one having the entrails protruding. They were clothed.

Non-commissioned Officer, Belgian Army.

When we entered Hofstade in August last, or some village near to it, a girl of about 18 or 19 years of age complained to me and my comrades (four) that she had been violated by several German soldiers for a period of about two hours before we entered the village on the threshold of a house in full daylight and in view of villagers. She had been stripped of all clothing but her chemise and had bled freely from the private parts. When I saw her she was covered only with a chemise and skirt and I did not see any blood. She appeared to be very dejected and was weeping bitterly.

Belgian Soldier.

I saw evidence of German atrocities between Malines and Hofstade, in a house on the high road between these two places. I saw a woman with breasts and hands cut off. body was lying just inside the house, which was an inn. I do not know who the woman was. It was between 24th and 25th August. The Germans had been through this place the week before, but had been beaten back. There were several houses in the neighbourhood. I do not know the name of the place. Everything in the inn appeared to be broken. I also saw the body of a youth, about 20. Both legs were cut off. This body was quite close to that of the woman.

Belgian Refugee.

At the end of August the first engagement between the German and Belgian troops took place, and the Germans retreated. As they did so they burned all the houses in Draes-straat, Hofstade. The church, which was in the same street, was not put on fire, but the Germans shot at the windows. I saw the houses burning.

The Germans on a Tuesday morning at the end of August went into a house in the Chaussée de Tervueren, about 150 metres from the church, and put the house on fire. The inhabitants fled, and the mother of the family, a woman of about 65, was taken out of the house, and was killed by one of the German soldiers with a thrust from a lance. I saw the funeral of this woman, but I did not see the woman killed. Her son told me that his mother had been killed. I was not informed of the name of the regiment to which the German soldiers belonged.

Belgian Soldier.

I was at Hofstade, the Germans were retreating, we were advancing near the headquarters of the Gendarmerie. I saw a woman about 45 years old and a boy of about 9 who had been struck with a bayonet several times, both in the face and in the body, both the boy's hands were cut off at the wrist, he was kneeling on the ground, one hand cut off was on the ground, the other hanging by a bit of skin.

SERGEANT IN BELGIAN ARMY.

I was serving with my regiment at Hofstade on the 25th August. We were driving the Germans out of Hofstade. I went into a house on the left-hand side of the main road from Malines to Brussels. I there saw the body of a woman lying on the floor. Both breasts were d 19

d 20

d 21

d 22

d 23

d 24

d 25

cut off. There was also the body of a child lying close to the other body. Some of the limbs had been cut off. It was either both arms and both legs or both hands and both feet. I do not remember which. On the following day at Elewyt, a village a little further on, in a private house I saw a man and woman lying on the floor who had been bayoneted all over their bodies. The woman was dead and the man still living. I spoke to the man, who told me that the Germans had treated them so because they told a Belgian patrol that there were German soldiers in the garden.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

My company was advancing through Hofstade. In the main street is a big café. As we were passing this café we heard that a boy had been killed there by the Germans. We went in, and in one of the rooms on the ground floor was the body of a boy of about 14. The priest attached to my regiment went in with us. The village priest arrived after we got there. The boy had been bayonetted in the right side. His hands were clasped together and a bayonet had been thrust through both of them. There was a great quantity of blood about—the blood was still wet. We took the body out and put it on a stretcher. Whilst we were doing so the boy's parents came up. I did not speak to them.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the time of the first bombardment of Malines at Hofstade near Malines, I saw two dead men at the side of the road; they each had both hands entirely cut off. This was on the 25th Aug. I wrote down the date in my diary; we were at Hofstade. I wrote that I was at Malines all that day and went to Hofstade in the evening; we were getting some straw to sleep on and found the two bodies behind the house.

Before this, at Liège, on the 5th of August, I saw a child of 8 or 9 with a bullet wound in

the body—it was alive and being taken to the doctor. All my company saw this.

· I saw two women and a peasant lying dead in the road at Wandre, shot.

MARRIED WOMAN.

About the middle of August some German soldiers came to the town (Hofstade), and stayed there, and at first nothing was done by them. Every morning I had to supply 27 Uhlans with coffee, and some of the civilians were compelled to make trenches.

One day in August I was going to the mill to buy some flour and on the way saw a young man, 17 or 18 years old, whom I knew, lying with his two hands cut off. Blood was running from his arms and he was dying I could not bear to remain with him, and I ran away crying. This boy worked with his father, who was a blacksmith at Hofstade, and whom I knew well by sight. I heard that the boy had attempted to run away from the Germans who were entering his house to burn it.

The Germans then ordered all the people to leave their houses at once, and I went to the bridge at Sempst. I then saw two men, father and son (aged 18), who were unarmed, and were on their way to work, shot dead by some German soldiers, who at once threw their bodies into a chalk pit. The men were bricklayers.

I then saw the Germans shoot a man, a sheep shearer, living at Sempst. I saw him a

little later after the Germans had left. He then cried "Oh God! oh God!

I ran over the bridge and took shelter in a house, which was occupied by two families, and there were 13 children in the house. One of the two men was confined to his bed with rheumatism, and the German soldiers bound this man to his bed with his hands behind his back. They then took the second man and shot him in my presence, and in the presence of all the children. I then fled.

I afterwards went back to my house as I wanted to feed the cattle. I hid for a time

behind the Castle of Grisar, and then went into my stable.

On a Monday in August, previous to the atrocities referred to, there had been an engagement between the Belgian and German troops quite close to my house. The Belgians had killed two Uhlans and wounded a third. The wounded man dragged himself to my cabbage field, where I saw him, and he begged me not to cut his head off. I gave him some water and assisted to take him to the hospital.

I left my house, and on the road from Sempst to Brussels I saw some corpses; the majority

of them were all men, all of whom appeared to have been shot.

d 30

The first lot of German soldiers who came to the town of Hofstade were cavalrymen, and had a death's head in front of their helmets; afterwards some infantrymen came, and they were caps.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Hofstade, about the 25th August, I saw a boy of 17 or 18 killed by bayonet wounds in the chest. The body was in a scullery behind the café. A woman, who said she was the aunt of the boy, told me the boy had supplied the Germans with everything they had in the café. The Germans had only just left that morning. There was also the body of a woman about 10 metres from the house. We had come from Antwerp and returned to Antwerp.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 25th August last I saw at Hofstade, near Malines, at the house of the Maréchal (blacksmith), the bodies of a woman and a boy who had been killed by bayonet wounds. There were many wounds on the chests of both. The Germans had arrived at that village in the morning, and we drove them out at midday. Some of the wounds were still bleeding. We were going into houses to search for Germans. All the people had fled except an old woman who had hidden. The boy appeared about 17 years old and the woman of middle age.

d 31

SERGEANT IN BELGIAN ARMY.

I was with my regiment at Hofstade, and at Hofstade I saw the dead body of a blacksmith. He was shot; he had been sitting by the side of his stove when he was shot.

I also saw the dead body of an old woman by the side of the railway bridge, who had

been killed by a bayonet thrust in her back.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On or about the 26th of August I was on patrol duty after the Germans had been repulsed in this neighbourhood between Hofstade and Willebroeck—on a side road. There were several houses near me. On the doorstep of one, which belonged to a farrier, just before the entrance I saw the farrier lying dead. I knew it to be the farrier because he was still wearing his apron. He had a bayonet wound in the stomach. By his side lay a young boy—I should say of five or six years of age—his two hands nearly severed from the arms but still hanging to them. He was dead also. I do not know how long they had been dead, I did not touch either of them. The other two on patrol with me saw the bodies lying there. I do not know their names. I only talk French and they did not speak French.

CAPTAIN IN BELGIAN ARMY.

At our entry into Hofstade from which we drove out the Germans, I saw lying beside the high road at the entrance of the village the dead body of a woman of about 65—of the peasant or farmer class.

She had been killed with the bayonet and it was evident this was done by the German

soldiers who had just left.

A little further on we found the dead body of a farrier in his house. He also had just been killed with the bayonet.

These outrages were apparently committed by the 48th Regiment of Infantry, judging by

the shoulder straps of the German dead who had been abandoned.

The houses in the village showed many traces of attempted incendiarism by means of petrol or other inflammatory liquids. We could see the marks of these liquids sprinkled on the outsides of the windows, the glass in which (in order to assist the conflagration) had been broken in many cases by blows from rifles. There were marks of burning on the woodwork of the windows and in some instances the blinds and curtains had caught fire.

Next day I, for the first time, saw in the village of Elewyt the German inscription (of

which so much has since been heard) on the doors of several houses—

"Good people. Spare this house please."

Then followed the name of the regiment and the initials of some officer.

On September 11 on our arrival at Tremeloo (near Werchter) I noticed close on 200 houses wilfully burned. There had been no fighting here and the damage must have been deliberate. There was no trace of any contest.

The deliberateness of this burning is shown by the fact that the houses were not in blocks or rows but were mostly detached, so that there must have been separate action with regard

to each.

There was no military purpose to be served by this damage and destruction.

In Tremeloo I saw five or six inhabitants who had not fled and they informed me that on the night the Germans had entered the place the soldiers forced the men to leave their beds and took their places beside their wives. I was told this had happened, not in an isolated instance or two, but generally. The houses were mostly what in England would be described as small peasants' farms or holdings.

I believe the outrages I have mentioned occurred in pursuance of deliberate schemes of vengeance for the resistance Belgium has offered to the German advance and in order to intimidate the inhabitants generally. This is my firm conviction as an officer and a gentleman.

I can conceive no other reason for what was done.

Belgian Soldier.

On 25th August 1914 we expelled the Germans from Hofstade, a village near Malines, I went into the house of the village blacksmith and there saw the dead body of a young man who I was told was the son of the blacksmith. He appeared to be 16 or 17 years of age. The body was lying on its side with the hands held up as though he had been struck down when in an attitude of supplication. His hands had been mutilated by a sword or bayonet.

d 32

d 33

d 34

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 36

I was in the fight at Malines and after we had driven the Germans out of Hofstade on August 25th I went with an artilleryman of our army whose name I did not know to find his parents who lived in Hofstade. All the houses were burning except the one in which this man's parents lived.

The door of the house was locked and he tried to open it, but could not and he forced it. There would be quite 50 of us who were standing round, because we were surprised that the

house should not have been burned down like the rest.

On forcing the door we saw lying on the floor of the room into which it opened the dead bodies of a man and woman, a boy and girl whom the artilleryman told us were his father and mother and brother and sister. Each of them had both feet cut off just above the ankle and both hands just above the wrist. The poor boy appeared to be driven mad by the sight because he rushed straight off, took one of the horses from his gun and rode in the direction of the German lines. None of us ever saw him again.

As we advanced through Hofstade my company received an order to search for hidden

Germans in a château in the village the name of which I do not now remember.

In the lodge of the concierge, which we had to force, we found in a small room the dead body of the concierge lying on straw on the floor. The body had but a shirt on it and this was thrown back over the head, leaving the body exposed, on which we found about four bayonet wounds, any one of which would have killed him. He appeared to have been stabbed while in bed, because on going upstairs into a bedroom we found a bed, the clothes of which were saturated with fresh blood, and a track of blood was visible down the staircase into the room in which we found him. We saw no weapon in the house, and from his bedroom the unfortunate man could not have fired at the Germans, because he was on the wrong side of the house and the château itself lay between him and them.

We afterwards passed through Sempst, about a mile past Hofstade, and just after crossing the bridge there (Pont de Sempst) we found the dead body of a woman between 50 and 60 years of age lying by the roadside face downwards. Although fully clothed we could see the places where bayonets had penetrated her clothing and no doubt caused her death. I counted four such places. Her clothing was covered with blood, and after satisfying ourselves that she was dead and beyond help we passed on. She had evidently been struck

down from behind while trying to escape from the Germans.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 37

While going through the Grande Rue of the town (Hofstade) I saw a woman with her body cut open lying in the middle of the street. She had a wound in the breast which was certainly caused by a bayonet. I can tell this because I have seen a great number of such wounds. Some 200 yards further on I saw two children, little girls of from 8 to 10 years of age, lying on the floor of a house with their mother. The brother of these two children is a soldier in the artillery, and happened to be passing the house just as we did. I saw him go into the house to wish his people good-day. Suddenly he rushed out like a madman, and I and my comrades went in to see what had happened, and we there saw the three bodies lying on the ground. I could not bear the sight and went out quickly. They were wounded everywhere and covered with blood, and their bodies lay in pools of blood. I believe, however, that several members of my company remained behind to help to bury them. Do not know the name of the family.

. Corporal in Belgian Army.

d 38

On 25th August we were attacking the Germans in the park of the Château of Schiplacken. We drove them out; they were in the château. I and four others went to the concierge's house in search of water. It was shut up; we opened the shutters and got in. We found the concierge, a man of middle age, with his stomach opened with a bayonet. He had no weapons near him. His private parts were torn off. This was about mid-day. I do not know the names of those with me; they belonged to my company but were not of the same class.

A little later, close to a bridge over the river leading to Hofstade, we found a woman dead and covered with blood. Two peasants and a priest were there. They told us she had been killed with the bayonet; she was pregnant. I did not see the wounds myself. In the afternoon in the village of Hofstade we went into the blacksmith's shop. I was with my company then. The blacksmith was dead, his hands were cut off and lying by the anv His wrists were tied together in front of him; his chest had been thrust through with the bayonet.

Later still the same afternoon we were examining all the lanes of the village (Hofstade). I and two or three others found in one house a child, a boy about ten, on his knees and leaning against the wall. His hands were still joined as if asking for mercy. A bayonet had

been thrust through his chest.

Belgian Soldier.

d 39

On 25th August I was in the park of Schiplacken, the château being in the occupation of the Germans. When they retired we advanced. Corporal D . . . told me of what

he had found in the house of the concierge. I looked through the window; I only had a glance. I saw a man in his shirt with his stomach opened with a bayonet. By the bridge over the river between the park and Hofstade I saw a woman on a stretcher. Some people were with her. She was dead; I saw her. She was pregnant, it was very obvious. The people about told us she had been bayonetted in the stomach.

In the blacksmith's shop in Hofstade I saw the blacksmith dead with his hands cut off and his wrists still tied. He was dead. Our whole company saw him, I should think. In another house I saw a child of 10 to 11 years kneeling; he was dead, a bayonet had been stuck

through his chest.

Belgian Soldier.

At Hofstade, in September,* near Malines, I saw in a villa a concierge who had been absolutely stripped and then killed with bayonets; he was a man of 40. I saw the dead body with the wounds, lying on straw. This was immediately after we had driven the Germans back. I was there with my company; we were returning to Antwerp, we all saw it. The window and the door of the house was open and I saw through it as we passed; the room was on the ground floor.

Belgian Soldier.

When my regiment was following up the Germans in their retreat from Louvain to Malines I saw in different places on the roadside the bodies of two women naked from the waist upwards with one breast hacked off, and the bodies of dead children (about six in number), some with one foot, some with both hacked off.

As we passed a village close to Malines I saw a group of dead bodies of men (civilians), and amongst them five priests—three wearing the Red Cross—all of whom had been shot.

SERGEANT-MAJOR IN BELGIAN ARMY.

About 25th August, during the battle of Hofstade, I saw a boy of about seven nailed

against a door with a German bayonet through the chest. All my company saw this.

At the same time in the burning houses we found people burning. I cannot say if they were killed before burning. They were dead when we arrived. About 10th September, I was doing patrol duty in the village of Wespelaer. We were four together. We entered a house in the street in order to fire on some Germans in a house on the other side of the street about 100 yards off. One of them thrust a child of about 10 months, naked, stuck on the point of his bayonet, through the window of the first storey.

12th September, I was wounded at a battle in Wespelaer. We had to retreat. I lay there for 23 hours. I fell into a ditch with water with a lot of corpses and so escaped. The Germans turned on the wounded and killed them either with the revolver or bayonet as they came back from the pursuit. I myself got a blow with the butt apparently to see if I was

really dead. This was going on all round me.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 25th of August at the battle of Hofstade, I saw bodies of a woman, two young girls, and one child. Both the child's hands were cut off; the hands were lying there. I do not know how it happened. The house was not destroyed by shell fire.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 25th August I saw a woman of 35 and her child lying together dead in the street (at Hofstade). I was told that they had been pierced by bayonet wounds. I did not see them killed. I saw this after the Germans had retreated.

All the houses in the street were burning. I was told by some civilians that the Germans first sprinkled the houses with something like naphtha, and afterwards fired them. The German troops fired at the church at Malines, and afterwards turned it into a stable for their horses.

RAILWAY SERVANT.

About the 25th of August last in Hofstade I saw the dead body of a child about five years of age (I was not near enough to see whether boy or girl) hanging by the neck from a tree near a private house in the Chaussée de Tervueren, Hofstade.

This was between 2 and 3 p.m., and the Germans had been driven out about 11 a.m. the

same day.

Belgian Soldier.

At Hofstade, near Malines, I saw a young man (17 or 18) with an old woman who had been sitting at table. The man had had both hands cut off at the wrist, and had been bayoneted several times; he was quite dead. The old woman had had her head smashed in with blows from the butt end of a rifle. She looked about 60 years of age. They had fallen back from the table. I saw the young man's hands on the ground.

* This should be August 25th.

d 40

d 41

d 42

d 43

d 44

d 45

We had just driven the Germans back. They fired the village before leaving.

On the road near Hofstade I saw a young girl about 16 years old, who had been carrying linen; she had several lance thrusts in her breast, and was only just alive; she could not speak.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 24th August we were billeted at Borsbeck; we left there for Malines, where we arrived on 25th at noon. In the morning Germans bombarded Malines for first time, inhabitants still in town. Same day we left Malines in direction of Hofstade, before reaching there we bivouacked soon after crossing canal; it was wet weather. We were going to move early the next morning about 3 a.m.; as the night was to be so short, I went to look for something to eat. I came to a block of five or six houses; I pushed a door open, a candle was burning on the mantelpiece; I went into room on left, saw straw there and something lying under a sheet; I pulled sheet off, and saw the corpse of a woman lying on back in nightshirt. On her was a bruise, no marks on her neck, but there were a large number of wounds on the chest and the abdomen, apparently inflicted by bayonets. She had apparently been a young woman of about 25, she had no other clothes on, her nightdress was torn but not cut by bayonets; on the side of her chest there were marks like scratches. I thought that she had been outraged before she was killed.

Beside her was an old man of about 70, he was discoloured in the face. and bruises round his neck. He was cold and stiff; he was well covered with clothes, I saw no blood on him or his clothes. I thought he had been strangled.

After seeing this I went back to my bivouac; after seeing this sight I was no more

inclined to look for food, and did not look into the other houses round.

d 47

d 48

d 49

d 50

At 4 in the morning of the 26th, we took part in battle of Hofstade. Germans drove us back, my regiment lost very heavily, Germans again re-occupied the part of the country between Hofstade and Malines.

On night of 10th September, billeted in a field near Werchter; all this country had been occupied by Germans; we passed through Tremeloo, which village was all burnt; we pushed Germans back; informed at Werchter that Germans left there at 11 in morning.

On September 11th, 2 in afternoon, our battalion completely isolated. When it became dark we drove the Germans out of their trenches over railway and canal; being isolated, I was sent by the Major to find the Colonel. I found my Colonel and other officers and got my instructions, and in going back to the battalion, I came across a little house; I knew I had lost my way, as I had not passed the house before. I went into the house, some peasants were weeping at the door. I asked why; they told me the Germans, in retreating the day before, had killed a widower and his two little children. This man had given all he possessed to the Germans, but they were not satisfied, being numerous, whereupon they killed him and his two little children with bayonets.

I saw the man had received a blow in his eye, the eye was lying on the cheek, and I saw about three other wounds in the chest. I asked to see the children, but the peasants said their bodies were so terribly mutilated that they had buried them in the garden behind the house at once.

Belgian Soldier.

Between the 20th and the 25th August I saw in a house at Hofstade, three children with their hands cut off. (This was about 7 o'clock in the morning.) In the same house I saw a woman and a man, whom I supposed to be the parents of the children, hanged upon a beam in the old house in which they lived. At the time I was with soldiers of the 3rd Regiment. The German soldiers had arrived in the village between five and half-past in the morning, and they were driven out about 7 a.m.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was at Hofstade on August 25th; after the Germans had retreated, I and my companions were ordered to search the houses for Germans. In one house I went into I heard cries coming from an outhouse (cabinet). I went to see what it was. I found a woman of about 30 and two children who were down the cabinet. The children were in the woman's arms, one was dead, apparently asphyxiated. Boards had been laid over the hole and bricks placed on the top, a large number of stones and bricks. She could not have got out because of the weight on top, she was buried nearly up to her shoulders. She said the Germans had put her there. The woman's husband was a soldier, she and the children were alone in the house.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 17th of August I was on cyclist patrol near Tirlemont. About seven kilometres from Tirlemont I saw in a wood the corpse of a young girl of from 18 to 20 years of age hung between two trees by the feet, head downwards. Her clothes were torn. In the same wood I came up with a patrol of Uhlans who fired on me without hitting me. On the 25th August at Hofstade near Malines, I saw the body of a vendor of cycles burnt in his shop. They told me that the Germans shut the man up in the house and then set fire to it.

* Privy.

CAPTAIN IN BELGIAN ARMY.

On the 27th of August, entering the village of Hofstade, three miles south of Malines, which had been left the previous day by the Germans, I saw in a house on the west side of the road, in the back room, an old man of about 60 years old, doubled up under a table, killed by two bayonet wounds in the chest.

d 51

d 52

d 53

d 54

d 55

Belgian Soldier.

At the end of August, at Hofstade, near Malines, I saw the dead body of a young man, aged about 20, lying by the side of a house. His hands were closed as if he had begged for mercy, and I saw that his entrails were protruding from his body. He had been hacked with a bayonet.

I also saw the dead body of an old woman in a ditch, but I do not know how she met

At Tremeloo I saw a white flag flying from a house. In this house there were some German soldiers, and when the Belgian troops were within range the Germans fired at them from this house, but none of my comrades were killed.

Belgian Refugee.

Whilst at Waelhem I met a man and his daughter who had given evidence against a German officer upon a charge of violating his daughter, and of murdering her brother and her mother, at the village of Hofstade.

The trial took place at Waelhem, and I was afterwards present at the cemetery when the officer in question was shot by six German soldiers, and I saw the shooting. I do not know

the name of the officer. This happened about five weeks ago.*

Belgian Soldier.

I was marching with my company through Hofstade on August 26th, or about that date. We were resting at the side of the road in the afternoon. There was a dancing saloon at the side of the road with a covered entrance leading to it. I heard from some of the company that there were dead inside. I entered and saw a woman of about 45 and a young man of 19 lying dead, killed by the bayonet. They were clothed and covered with a blanket. I lifted the blanket and saw that the woman had been stabbed through the heart.

Belgian Soldier.

I and a number of others went into a dancing-room in the main street. There was no living person in it, we knew before we went in. We went to get water and to see the bodies of a woman and a young man which I had heard were there. In the dancing-room lying close together in a corner were two bodies. One was the body of a woman of 40 to 50 years old. She had been bayonetted or thrust in the side. I do not remember which side it was. She was fully dressed. Her bodice was undone and torn at the side. Her breasts were cut off. I saw that, but I did not examine the body very closely. I should say the Germans had used a knife. The body of the young man was lying beside her. He was about 17 years old. He had a bayonet thrust in the throat. Both his hands had been cut off at the wrist and were lying on the floor beside the body. He was dressed in ordinary working clothes. The woman's face was covered in blood, but I did not notice blood elsewhere. I only went just in and out. I heard that the Germans had killed the boy because he was carrying water for them and could not do it fast enough. The village was deserted. A large number of us—most of the men in the regiment—saw the bodies. The village was a suburb of Malines.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About the 25th of August last I saw in the town of Hofstade the dead body of ... aged 18, who was a great friend of mine and was employed in a sand quarry in Hofstade. He had not joined the army. The body was lying in the dancing room of a café, and the right arm had been severed at the elbow and the severed part was lying by the body. The left hand had been cut off at the wrist and was also lying by the body. I saw blood on the clothing at the breast which I believe had flowed from a bayonet wound and the face was covered with blood. I was afterwards told he had been caught by the Germans while trying to escape from his home and killed in the way above described. He had never to my knowledge possessed any weapon and all the people of the village had taken such weapons as they had to the Hôtel de Ville 10 days before. My brother F . . . saw the body at the same time as myself.

Note.—This statement was corroborated by the younger brother of the witness.

Belgian Refugee.

On August 28th, I think it was (the same day on which King Albert visited Hofstade), I was on the scene of the fighting at Hofstade after it was over. In the dance hall there I saw the body of a woman between 40 and 50 years of age lying dead in the middle of the room, and alongside her the dead body of a boy about 17 years of age, who, I was told, was her son.

d 57

A friend of mine told me her body had been ripped open, but I made no attempt to verify the statement, as it was too awful for me, but I saw that the boy's hands had been cut off at the wrist, as the stumps were covered with congealed blood, and his lips and nose also had been cut off, and they were covered with congealed blood also. The boy was wearing civilian clothes. This was the next day after the fighting.

Belgian Soldier.

d 58 Near Hofstade I had occasion to enter a house, as there was a fight going on near by. Inside the house I found a woman and a child, both dead. They had been killed by bayonet wounds in the breast. I judged them to be bayonet wounds by the size of the wounds; the wounds were long and of the shape of a bayonet. The woman was a peasant and seemed to be about 30 years old, and the child, who was a girl, seemed to be about 5 or 6 years old. I do not know the name of these people and I had no time to make inquiries, as the fight was still going on. On this day our troops made a sortie from Antwerp and took Hofstade; we were then driven out from it and it was occupied by the Germans, and it was after that it was occupied by the Germans that I went into the house and saw these bodies. They had been driven out of it again when I got there. I believe they again took this place in the evening. The whole house had been wrecked by the Germans.

d 59

d 61

d 62

LIEUTENANT, BELGIAN ARMY.

At the time of the first sortie from Antwerp I was with my machine gun section on the road from Coloma to Hofstade when a Belgian woman about 50 years of age ran towards us from Hofstade, which was burning. Some Germans were coming from Hofstade through the woods in my direction. The woman was alone in the road when one of the Germans jumped on the road and bayonetted the woman in the back and at once fled towards Hofstade, the Belgians advanced and found the woman was dead. When the Belgians entered the village my section searched village and informed me that a man was found killed and hidden in a w.c. and that two children were found burnt to death in a house. The village had about 40 houses and about half were burning at that time.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On 4th September I was in a battle at Hofstade, near Malines. d 60 The Germans entered Hofstade on 2nd September and my regiment arrived about the same time.

I saw the Germans kill with their bayonets six little children (all girls) and a woman who was with them. One of the six had her fingers cut off. I was about 50 yards away.

At the same place I saw the Germans shoot with their ritles two women who were

running away.

In a house in the same street as this I saw the body of a young man (civilian) who had been killed by a bayonet being driven into both his eyes, and in the same house was the body of a lad of 18 (civilian) killed by a bayonet thrust in the body.

Belgian Soldier.

Between the 10th and the 20th of September my company was marching past a farm near Hofstade. We were marching from Hofstade to our camp at Waelken. The farm was actually in Hofstade. It was about 9 a.m. We saw two gendarmes bring out a German cavalry officer from the farm. Many of us stopped to see what was going on. We were about 100 metres off. The gendarmes were taking the German towards Waelken* on a by-road to our right. We were on the main road. Another gendarme came up. We spoke to him. He pointed to the other two gendarmes and the German and told us that the German had shot the woman and killed her two young daughters. He pointed to a group of people about 50 or 60 metres from the farm. This group was carrying something. The gendarme told me that they were carrying the bodies of the woman and her children. Altogether we stayed there for about 5 minutes and then ran on to catch up the We went back to the camp. I was billeted in a convent. Between 5 and 6 o'clock an officer came into the convent and ordered 10 men of the guard to shoot a German officer in the churchyard adjoining the convent. I saw the officer shot. I was on the convent wall. I could not say to what regiment he belonged, but he was about 40 years of age. I was told that he was the officer whom the gendarmes had arrested in the morning. I believe a courtmartial had been held over the officer before he was shot. About a fortnight later we were near Rumpst. My lieutenant ordered us to cross the river Nethe and go and search a farm which lay about 100 metres on the other side. About five of us went. We found nothing in the farmhouse, but in the farmyard was the dead body of a man of about 60 years of age. The body had a big wound in the centre of the forehead. It looked like a bayonet wound. There was blood on the face. I noticed none on the ground round the body.

Belgian Soldier.

Towards the end of August we were coming from Waelhem to Malines. We passed the night at Maines. We slept in a house there. About 3 a.m. we started out again in the direction

* Waelhem (?)

of Hofstade. On the road between there and Malines we—the patrol of which I was part—went into a house on the road, and there on the ground lay the body of an old woman with a bayonet wound in the pit of the stomach. Not far from there we saw, in another house, a little boy lying on the ground still alive; his hands were cut off; he did not speak and scarcely moaned, but was still breathing.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was at Hofstade, 3 or 4 kilometres from Malines, with 9 or 10 other soldiers. We halted for a short rest. We went into a house. It had not been burnt, but others near were still on fire. The Germans were retreating and we were following them. Inside the house on the floor we saw a boy of 15 or 16 years old lying dead. The Germans had left the place about three-quarters of an hour or an hour. He had a wound in his breast caused by the thrust of a sword or bayonet or knife; I think a bayonet. It was 10 or 12 centimetres [i.e., about 4 to 5 inches] long. He was cold, but the blood had not quite ceased to flow, and was not dry. Half an hour afterwards we met six or seven men near the main line of the railway, about 500 yards further on, who told me the Germans had killed him. They did not say why. He had another wound in the left wrist. One of my comrades turned the body over and I then saw it. I think it was probably done by his putting his hand up to ward off the thrust in the breast.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Hofstade on the 24th August in the afternoon I saw the body of a young man of about 14 years of age pierced by bayonet thrusts. He had also his wrists cut with bayonets. An old peasant who was passing through told us that he had been killed, as he was escaping, by the Germans.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I passed by the village the same day. I saw the body of a young man on the threshold of a house whom I believe to be the same of whom last witness speaks. He had his hands pierced by a bayonet thrust. It was the first battle which we fought.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On August 25th the Germans came to Sempst. They came from the direction of Brussels. They were about an army corps. The Belgian troops were between Malines and Sempst. I heard that afterwards. I remained in my house the whole time the Germans were in Sempst. I was not molested, and the Germans did not come to my house. They came in between 4 and 5 a.m. During the morning neighbours told me what was going on—that the Germans had been burning some of the houses and had killed some people. About 4 p.m. I went out. The Germans had all gone. I went straight down the main street. The first thing I saw was a house burnt down on the side of the road opposite my house. Altogether I counted 14 burnt houses. In the shed of one of these houses (No. 2) I saw the charred body of a man. He was a servant in a bicycle shop (No. 3). His trunk alone remained, and it was lying just inside the door of the shed. The shed was at the side of the house (No. 2). In house (No. 4) another man was burnt. I did not see his body, but I saw his house burning and was told afterwards that his body had been found in it. In the stable of house No. 11 was the dead body of a man whom I knew. He had a wound in the side of the neck. He had not been burnt although his house had. His son, aged about 15, had been killed. His body was lying covered with a sack in the yard behind house No. 12. I lifted up the sack and saw the body. I returned home because there was fighting going on just outside the village. At about 5 or 6 o'clock I went to the hospital. There were four civilians in the hospital (names given). They were all Sempst people, and I was told they had all been shot by the Germans. I just went round and spoke to each of them. One died eight days later. Five of the villagers I was told were marched off by the Germans with their hands bound behind their backs and were shot near Vilvorde. About 35 men were marched down the street in this way in the morning.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

Weerde lies to the south-east of Sempst, about a mile distant. The Germans entered Weerde on August 20th and remained in occupation of it till August 25th. They entered Sempst on the evening of August 23rd or the morning of August 24th. On the morning of August 24th, when on my way to my work at Malines, I saw a German patrol, about a dozen mounted German soldiers, on the border of the village of Sempst. I do not pass through Sempst in order to get to Malines from my house. During the first few days of their occupation of Weerde the Germans committed no brutalities as far as I know. I did not hear of any having been committed in those days. In their first days at Eppeghem they dragged a piano from a house on to the Place Communale and they played upon it and made the children shout "Deutschland über Alles!"

On the evening of Monday, August 24th, I was returning from my work at Malines. I had left Malines about 7.30 p.m. I had reached very nearly the border of Malines Commune and of that of Sempst—I was still a little nearer to Malines—when I saw on the road, near a turning, at a spot where there is a large château and there is also a wood, about E

d 63

d 64

d 65

d 66 Sempst.

120 Belgian soldiers in front of me on the road. They were Carabineers on bicycles. They were in front. Just as I came up a patrol of the Chasseurs advanced. They came from behind me as I was walking from Malines. Two Carabineers with bicycles were doing duty as sentinels on either side of the road. The others took up position in a ditch at the side of the road—an ordinary ditch which runs along the road.

The sentinels told me in rather a low voice—a conversational voice—that I could not pass and that I must return to Malines. While I was standing talking to them the patrol of Chasseurs passed me at a soft gallop along the fields by the side of the road, and after they had advanced some distance they fired some shots in the direction of the Germans, and shots

were fired from the German side too. I could not see the Germans.

I returned towards Malines and I spent the night in a café which is situated amongst the first houses that I came to The night was exciting. Belgian soldiers began to pass in great numbers, infantry, cavalry, and artillery. They began passing early in the night, about eight or nine o'clock. They often halted on the road and then moved on. Some soldiers came into the café where I was.

At 3.30 a.m. on the morning of August 25th I left the café. All along the road and in the fields and thickets along the road were portions of the Belgian forces. I got to about the same spot which I had reached the evening before. This time there were two cavalry men doing sentinel duty on the road. They told me that one could not yet pass because the battle was going to begin. The river Senne flows by, about a kilometre off the place where I was stopped. The Senne traverses the commune of Sempst. Only about 15 houses belonging to the village of Sempst are situated on the right bank of the river as the river flows. Thereupon I turned back and, after about 10 minutes walk on the road back, I took a path to the left which leads down to the Senne, and then I took the path to the left which runs along the Senne in the direction of Sempst. I walked along the path for about five minutes when I saw a man and a boy on my right-hand side sitting on the bank of the Senne. They were inhabitants of Sempst. I knew them by sight but I don't know their names. The man asked me if I was going to Sempst. I said "Yes." He said, "You can't go in because "the Germans are gathering the inhabitants together and taking them with them." He told me that he and the boy had also stayed the night at Malines and they had returned as far as the Sempst Bridge, where the high road from Malines crosses the Senne. The pathway by the river leads up to the bridge. The main part of the village of Sempst begins at the far side of the bridge as one comes from Malines. The bank of the Senne is raised about a height of 80 centimetres above the fields, &c. at the side. A path runs right along the top of the bank and there is a path below running alongside of the fields, &c. We all three crept along this latter path on our hands and knees in the direction of Sempst Bridge. While we were creeping along like this we could hear gun shots from both armies and the sound of Belgian "mitrailleuses." We crept up to about 150 metres short of the bridge. We halted

The Belgian forces were on our left-hand side. There was some wood and some shrub between us and them. The Germans were on our right-hand side, on the other side of the Senne in the village itself of Sempst. 1 had known from the sound of the firing that the Germans had been on the Malines side of the bridge on the high road earlier in the morning. But I did not see them there. About 300 yards before the bridge, on the Malines side of it,

there is a road on your left as you come from Malines, going to Hofstade.

The first that I saw of the Germans that day was a little time after we had crept up to the spot of which I had spoken. I should say it was about six o'clock or between six and seven. We were hiding all this time on our knees, but we raised our heads continually to have a look. We looked across the river into the village of Sempst, about 300 or 400 metres. Beyond the bridge there are some houses belonging to the village and there is a space on the road where there are no houses. We could distinctly see German infantry—I should say from their numbers about a company—retiring along the road going from the bridge, that is, along the village street. I saw an officer in the midst of them. I could see his movements. I could see him giving orders with his hands and arms. I knew also by the thing in the front of his helmet—a spiked helmet—that it was an officer. We could see him pointing to the houses on either side, obviously ordering soldiers to enter them. We could see quite clearly the two end houses of the village. I mean those situated where the houses commence again after the short interval in houses of which I have spoken. We could distinctly see the door of that one of these two end houses which was on the left-hand side of the street. After the officer had thus ordered and pointed with his hands, we saw two soldiers go into that house by the door and come out again with a middle-aged man, I should say about 40, who went with them. I did not know the man. About the same moment three soldiers entered the end house on the right-hand side. One could not actually see the door of that house, but one could see that the soldiers went into the house. An instant or two afterwards they came out again, one of them pulling out a man by the sleeve. The two other soldiers came out after them. I could see that the man was speaking; he made gestures and quite obviously was expostulating; he was in his shirt sleeves, without a jacket. The officer pointed his revolver at him and shot him. He fell on the spot. The soldier had

let go his arm before the officer fired at him. There were other burghers of Sempst on the road and about the spot at the time—I should say about 20 men. Nobody came up to the old man for some moments after he fell. After some moments, when the Germans had gone

a bit further up the street, some women and young persons came up to the old man.

Just about the same moment when the soldiers were coming out of the house with the man a young man of about 18 years, the farmer's son—I knew him by sight—escaped from the back of the house, through the garden. We could distinctly see the door at the back by which he came out. He was running in our direction, towards the Senne. He was open to view from the village street, because he was running across that part of the garden which is not shut out by any house from the street. There is a hedge at the end of the garden, about a metre high and constructed with sticks and wire. The youth was just about to cross the hedge when two of the soldiers who had entered the house fired on him with their guns and he fell back in the garden.

I knew the father and son by sight. I used to pass their house every Sunday going to Malines for pleasure. The father was a little stooped, which made him look older than he

was.

When I arrived at the spot of which I have spoken, I saw houses burning in the village. Of the first lot of houses—before the interval—I only saw one just near the bridge, which was burning. But further on there were several. I did not see the Germans actually setting fire to these houses, but I was told by several inhabitants that they had seen them put stuff to

the houses and deliberately set fire to them.

After the Germans had gone some distance and had disappeared from my sight round the turning in the village street, the two others and I came into the village and we stopped at the house where the soldiers had entered; the body of the young man, the son, had already been carried to the side of the house on the road. We saw it quite close. The old man's body had already been carried into the house.* We went into the house and saw it. We saw the old man's wife and daughter. They were crying. We were told that the old man had refused to go with the Germans and had been killed for that reason.

I went on through a part of the village till I came to the turning to Weerde, and I went back to my home along it. I had only to pass about 40 houses more to reach the turning. The greater part of the village lies further up. The Germans must have been still there, because from my house at Weerde I could see the German soldiers filing out of the village.

I saw affixed to the walls at Sempst 10 or 12 days before the Germans came into the neighbourhood an order by the burgomaster of Sempst that all the inhabitants were to give up their arms. An officer of police came round to the houses and demanded the delivery up of all arms. At Weerde the police came to my house for this purpose They did the same at Sempst.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Monday evening, August 24th—I could not at present remember the date, but I know it was about then—a Belgian patrol, of Belgian lancers and chasseurs, came to the Sempst Bridge, in the evening. I cannot say the hour, but it was still daylight. I saw it come. There are two bridges at Sempst. There are some houses before the first bridge as one comes from Malines, then after that there are seven houses; then comes a second bridge, and then there are some houses again; then there is a space of about 200 metres where there are no houses, and then the village houses begin. I live in the houses on the road from Malines before the first bridge. I was in my house when the Belgian patrol came. A German patrol came up about the same time on to the second bridge. I saw it. It consisted of about 20 mounted soldiers—Uhlans—I saw their helmets. They fired at each other. I think they did not hit each other. The Belgian patrol turned and went back in the direction of Malines. The German patrol turned and went through the village in the direction of Brussels. I think the German patrol had been there a day and a half, but I cannot say for certain.

About 9.30 the same evening a detachment of Belgian forces in great number came. I could see them along the road as far as I could see. Carabineers were in front. They only came as far as the first bridge. I was at home and went to bed, and the night passed off

quietly enough. No Belgian soldiers came into my house.

At half-past four the next morning, the Tuesday morning, firing began. I awoke and got up. My wife and children and I went into the sitting-room. Bullets came in through the windows, and we went upstairs and stood in the passage. The bullets also came in there; so we all went down into the cellar. While we were there we heard German soldiers in the back-yard. We knew they were German from the foreign language. From the cellar we could only see their legs. They fired into the cellar. We made our way up from the cellar to the stairs between the cellar and the kitchen, and stood there. About seven or ten minutes later the soldiers smashed in the front door. I could not see how many came in, but they banged their guns on the floors and fired them straight through the ceilings, and they smashed the stairs from the kitchen to the first floor. Then they saw us and called "Come out! Arms up! Hold up your arms!" We came out, and the soldiers cried "On!

^{*} The last witness saw the bodies in the stable of house No. 11 and the yard of house No. 12.

Forward!" They drove us out of the house in front of them, with the butts of their guns. When we were all outside the house the soldiers held their guns in front of us all. My eldest daughter, 15 years of age, fell down from fright. I raised her up. They brought us then 100 metres towards the Sempst Bridge. About 80 women and children were standing on the

road before the first bridge. There were no men there.

There they left my wife and other children standing there and took me and my two sons --- one 18 years and one 16 years—across the first bridge. Between the two bridges houses were burning, on the right-hand side. There between two burning houses there stood four men. We were put standing with them. It was very hot. We stood there half-an-hour, and because it was so hot we were put standing on the other side. The whole time we were lolding up our arms. Then they brought a lot of other men of the village, nearly all old or elderly men. They kept bringing up others. The first young man whom I saw them bring was a man about 20 years of age. He was holding a young brother of 10 or 11 years in his arms, who had been run over by a motor three months before the war and could not walk. The soldiers told the man to hold up his arms. He said he could not, as he must hold his brother, who could not walk. Then a German soldier hit him on the head with a revolver and he let the brother fall. Soldiers lifted the latter up and put him with the women and children. The elder brother came and stead with up. I saw the bladen with the women and children. The elder brother came and stood with us. I saw the blood coming from the elder brother's head—from the blow. They tied his hands behind his back. Then came five other burghers to us, all with hands tied behind their backs. soldiers held the barrels of their guns right under the noses of these five the whole time they stood with us. On the second bridge lay the body of a Belgian soldier. Each time the German soldiers passed they stuck their bayonets into the body. We stood there till There were German cannons placed on the Malines side of the first 10.30 that morning. bridge. On the Sempst side of the second bridge there were also cannons. I cannot say in what direction they were placed—whether in that of Malines or of Eppeghem. I cannot say that burghers were actually standing before the cannons. I can only say that there were cannons both on the Malines and Eppeghem sides of the bridge. X.... stood between the two bridges amongst the other men. I lived on the same side of the same street as X..., about 15 metres away. I saw X... standing amongst the other men with his arms up. I am quite sure of that. The soldiers told us they were going to shoot us all.

While we were standing there I saw German soldiers go into a house on the right-hand side between the two bridges. They were looking for Belgian soldiers. It was a house belonging to some people I knew; the father, a man between 40 and 50 years of age, I should say, came out of the back of his house. The soldiers followed him immediately and seized hold of him and took him round by the house towards the street and shot him. The son ran out of the back of the house across the yard. There is a hedge at the end of the yard. There is an open space beyond it. The son had got across the hedge when he was shot by German soldiers. I saw German soldiers set fire to the house afterwards. That was the only house I saw them actually setting fire to, but I saw others burning.

About half-past ten that morning the Germans cleared off because the Belgians were coming. They took the five burghers whose hands were tied with them. They let the others

My wife and children and I then went home. We saw a woman, the wife of a neighbour of mine, standing outside her house, which is the first of the houses before the first bridge on the left-hand side as one comes from Malines. She asked us if we knew where her husband and son were. We said we did not know. My eldest son had noticed bloodstains between the yards of two houses where the pit was. I went there. We got a spade. I opened the pit myself, and I saw in it the bodies of two German soldiers on one side and on the other side the body of the father. I did not look more. I did not see the body of the son. I went back and told the wife that the Red Cross had taken her husband with them. I wanted not to give her a fright. The dead man's house was not burned.

I saw the house of the butcher further up, beyond the two bridges, which was burned

down, the walls were standing. The house was still smoking when I saw it. I did not see any burned body. I heard that the young man of the house had been burned. Both father and son were butchers. The father and family had left a week before. The son was alone in the house. I heard that this man had had his head arms, and legs cut off by Germans. I heard that from burghers in Sempst. I know nothing of it myself. It was between 11

and 12 that morning when I saw that house.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the night of August 24th to 25th we made a sortie back in the direction of Malines, and in the forenoon of the 25th we reached Sempst. The Germans were advancing in the direction of Antwerp. They had occupied Sempst during four or five days before that date, and they withdrew from it, the early morning of August 25th, only a few hours before we reached it. We learned this from the inhabitants of Sempst on our reaching it. I saw one German wounded soldier still at the hospital at Sempst.

As we entered the village we saw a mass of inhabitants in great distress. Many were crying. At the part of the village where we entered there were at least about 30 houses burning, and further on there were still more. The inhabitants told us that the Germans had set fire to the houses that morning before their withdrawal. There had not been any bombardment. There would have been no army to bombard but ours and we did not bombard. They told us that the Germans had taken about 40 of the male inhabitants of the village with them.

We halted for half an hour within the part of the village where we had entered to rest ourselves, and during that time us soldiers could go and wander about. I strolled off with two or three other soldiers of my company. Some of the inhabitants told us that there was an old man outside near a house about 30 metres off. It was in the street we were in. We walked up to the house; it was on the left hand side. There was a small space in front of the house, belonging to it. There was a little straw shed at the side of the house, open in front. There was also straw on the ground within the shed. On the straw lay the body of an old man. He was lying on his stomach. His head was turned a little to one side. While he was lying down I could not see his face well. There was a good deal of blood on the straw. Several of the inhabitants had come with us. Some persons lifted up the old man a little from the ground. I then saw that he had a great gash right across his throat, about four fingers wide from above to below. The old man was dead. A young woman stood close by, crying. She was his daughter. She and others told us that the old man had been killed by the Germans. I did not hear them say under what circumstances. The young woman also told us that the Germans had taken her brother away with them.

Opposite this house there was a bicycle shop which was burning. Bicycle wheels and other things lay about in a burned condition. My comrades and I went over to look at it. The house was still burning. The window on the ground floor was burned out. Through it we could see a burned and fallen mass, parts of the ceiling, bricks, &c. Amongst the débris, not covered by it, we could distinctly see a human corpse, quite charred. I could distinctly see that it was a human form. I could see the form of the head and the trunk of the body and the tops of the legs. It was all charred. I could see no clothing and I could not say

whether it was the body of a man or of a woman.

I did not hear anything from the inhabitants as to how this had happened. I did not learn the name of the owner of the shop.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the time of our arrival at Sempst on the morning of August 25th I saw houses burning in the village. At the commencement of the village, where we first halted, I should say there were about 25 houses burning. Amongst them was a kind of château, a house more luxurious than the others.

I went myself alone to see the burning bicycle shop. I saw the burning house and I found the smell of burned rubber. I saw the burned corpse. It was distinctly recognisable as a human form. I did not see the form of the head well. I saw the trunk of the body. It looked to me as if it had probably come through the ceiling from the floor above. It was stretched on the top of the débris.

Belgian Soldier.

I was on reconnaisance duty on bicycles; we were five, four and a corporal, at Sempst. The Germans had left about an hour when we got there. They had then retreated 4 or 5 kilometres. They had set fire to many of the houses. It is a large village, almost a small town. We visited all the houses as we went along. We went into one which was burning, a small house inhabited by peasants. The neighbours told me the Germans had taken the husband prisoner. The corpse of the wife was on the floor. One could not see the flesh, it was so badly burnt, one could only see the skeleton. There were also on the floor the remains of the two children completely burnt. I cannot say whether she was killed first, or whether she could have escaped, I only saw the bodies. The house had been burnt, not damaged by shell fire. The neighbours told us that the women and children had not got out, and I went to see if they were there. A hundred metres further on there was a large bicycle shop. There was a young man's body lying inside, he was apparently about 20. The neighbours told me the Germans, before they fired the shop, had shot him through the window as he was working. They took away all the bicycles for their own use.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I fled with my family, and took refuge in a brewery. About 50 or 60 of us villagers hid there in the cellars from 5 a.m. until about 11 a.m. By 11 o'clock we knew that the Germans were burning houses near by, so we decided to flee out of the brewery. I went, with all the rest of us, to an asylum for old people which is 10 minutes away. We remained in the asylum for two hours and then seeing that the neighbourhood was clear we all went back to our houses. On my way home I saw nothing extraordinary, but I went out again to look round almost immediately after I got home. All of the

d 70

d 71

houses on the main road had been burnt and were still burning. In the butcher's shop I saw the half-burnt body of the butcher's son. The body was lying on the top of the debris of the house. In the next house, which was a bicycle shop, I saw the burnt trunk of the body of an apprentice whose name I do not know. It was lying on the top of a lot of bicycles; I saw these bodies from the road. On the opposite side of the road I saw the dead body of a man I knew. He had been shot in the head and a bayonet wound was in his neck. The body was beside a bicycle in the road. His wife told me afterwards that the Germans had told him to get off his bicycle and shot him before he could do so. Further down the road behind a burnt house I found the bodies of a man and his son. The body of the man was in a stable and that of the son in the yard. The father had been bayonetted in neck and the son in the side. The son's bowels were all out. I went round with a number of neighbours. So far as I know the villagers had done nothing to arouse the Germans.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was at Sempst on the 25th August. I was there when the Germans entered. I do not remember the exact date. German patrols came into the village first. They were Uhlans. They were there four or five days and did no harm at all. Afterwards a big force of Germans entered, consisting of cavalry, infantry, and artillery. They passed my house when they made their entry. As they passed through I saw them set fire to an empty house. The main body of the force had passed and the rear guard threw some inflammable liquid at the house and then fired it. The main body started fighting with the Belgian forces, and during this fighting I saw other houses on fire. I saw a young peasant and his wife running out of their house in the main road from Brussels to Antwerp, when they were shot by German soldiers of the main body. The man died but the woman recovered. I saw a father and son (peasants) bayonetted. They were outside their house in the main street. They (the Germans) took the peasant's horse which was standing outside the door in the street. I saw the peasant protesting just before he was bayonetted. I saw two peasants going along the main street on their way to feed their cattle, when they were shot by a patrol of German soldiers. The Germans occupied Sempst on two occasions. On the first occasion when they were compelled to retire they took 40 civilians with them. I do not know why they were taken or what has become of them. Six were set free later on. Before the Germans occupied the town the burgomaster collected all the arms. No civilians fired on the German soldiers. I was at Sempst on both occasions when the Germans came.

Belgian Soldier.

At the entrance of the village of Sempst we were close to a farm. It was about 2 p.m. The farmhouse was on fire. The body of the farmer, an old man, was lying there, the head severed from his body and lying some distance, 3 metres or so off. Two sons, aged about 35 to 40, were lying dead also of gunshot wounds. The wife of one had her whole left breast cut away and was covered with blood, but was still alive. Leaning against the wall on some straw, she told us that the German Uhlans, six of them, had come into the house, and one of them said, "You have some Belgian soldiers hidden here," and she naturally replied "No, there are none." Instantly he struck her, cutting off the whole of the left breast. She did not say it was a blow of a sword, but I think it was. She spoke Flemish which I understand a little. She was very faint, having lost much blood, which was still flowing. She also said that they had sent up her little son, of some eight years old, to look in the loft, to see if there were any Belgians hidden in the straw, and pulled away the ladder and set the house on fire. It was about 22 to 25 feet from the door or window of the loft to the ground, and too high for him to jump down, and he must have been burned to death in the straw which was there. The building had a thatched roof. There was a stable or cowshed under the loft. The woman also said that they had ordered the old man, her father-in-law, her husband and her brother-in-law to accompany them as hostages, and shot the two younger men and beheaded the old man because they refused. She was terribly wounded but perfectly sensible, and appeared to be speaking the truth in spite of her sufferings. We were a party of about 40 men under an officer, but the latter could not bear to look at such things, and sent us to see what was the matter. We had met some peasants on the way who had reported to the officer that this had been done. There were amongst the 40 many who spoke Flemish as well as French, and who understood all that passed.

Belgian Soldier.

At Sempst I was with three other soldiers on patrol searching the houses. In a public-house I saw the body of a man of about 60 years of age pierced with a bayonet wound. Round him stood a woman and some children. Our corporal, whose name I forget, asked the woman if the man had been killed by the Germans. She replied that the Germans were taking away all the men from the village and that this man, who was her father-in-law, having refused to obey the orders of the Germans, they killed him.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On August 26th I was between Malines and Hofstade, on the main road across the canal, about quarter of an hour's walk, on the side remote from Malines. The Belgian troops were retreating. I saw a woman lying on her back inside a house; her skirt was pulled up over her head. There were no clothes on the lower part of the body. She had a wound extending from between her legs (private parts) to her breast. In the same house was a boy about 13 years old. I could not see his wounds, but by the blood I could see through his clothes, one on each side of chest and one in abdomen.

The Germans were at the place in question the day before which the Belgians advanced and drove the Germans out of this part of the country. It was when retiring on the 26th that I saw the woman and boy. My company were in reserve at that place. Nearly all the soldiers in my company saw too. The commandant's soldier servant was with me at the time.

No strangers were in the village, only the inhabitants, and firstly Germans, and after, the

Belgians.

BELGIAN OFFICER.

About the time of the first sortie from Antwerp in August, I was riding through Sempst with my battery, and I saw a skeleton in a house which had been fired and quite burnt out. Sempst had not at that time been shelled by artillery. I saw two houses burnt out there, and three or four more close to the railway also burnt out. The villagers told me that the skeleton I saw was that of a young man, the owner of the house, that he tried to escape from his burning house, but the Germans drove him back with bayonets. This happened the day before or early on the same day that we entered Sempst. We entered it between 10 and 11 a.m.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At about the end of August at Sempst I saw a house which had been burned, and also the charred body of a man. The inhabitants told me that this man had had his hands and feet bound by German soldiers, and that he had been thrown into the house which was set on fire; and that he had given no provocation whatever.

I also saw the dead body of another man on a barrow. He had been strangled and afterwards bayonetted in the neck. I saw the mark of the bayonet in the neck. This man's

wife told me that he had first been strangled.

I do not know the names of either of the above.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 25th of August we were passing through the village of Sempst in order to get in touch with the enemy, who were retreating in the direction of Vilvorde after the battle of Malines. We were stopping for an hour or so in the village of Sempst. In a little street near the beginning of the village I saw the body of a man of about 55 years of age lying on a barrow in a shed, the head almost severed from the body, but still adhering to it. There had been no engagement in the village previously. We had been given an hour's rest with the order to reassemble at a given place. I had wandered off with my friend E. . le C. . , that is how we came to be in the little street. A number of the villagers stood round crying. It was about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon. I asked the people standing by what had happened, they replied that the man was a peasant who, when asked by the German soldiers to give them money, had refused, and that they thereupon cut off his head. A little further on in the same village lay a young man whose hands had been cut off. The hands were right off and they were not there. My friend saw this too. The body of the young man was quite cold, and the villagers said that he had been killed that morning. Still further on in the village lay in the midst of the ruins of a house, a man whom I took to be the owner and a vendor of bicycles. The body was completely burnt. I was told that German soldiers had first bound him and then set fire to the house. The people of the village told me that it was done merely to terrorise. Besides this I saw in the same house two burnt bodies.

Belgian Soldier.

We were in the village of Sempst, from which the Germans had retired, and it was my duty as being the leader of the patrol to go into the houses to see that there were no Germans left behind. I and one of my soldiers went into one of the village houses. On entering there was nothing to be remarked nor did I notice anything upstairs. I continued my researches into the back yard, meaning to look through the stables. On opening the back door of the house I saw four Germans climbing over the wall and trying to escape. Three got away and the fourth I shot dead. Lying on the ground I found four children, three little girls and a boy. Each had its hands cut. They were dying but not quite dead. Their hands still hung to their arms by the skin. There was blood all round on the ground. There was no one with the children either in the yard or in the house. We left the house, it was impossible to do anything for the children. That all took place in the last to was a folds between weeds. We could see a

Over a kilometre further on we were crossing some fields between woods. We could see a woman in flight coming towards us in a donkey cart. About the same moment I fired at an Uhlan who was trying to escape from us. The Uhlan and the woman were on the same track.

d 76

d 78

d 77

d 79

There was not room for both to pass, and the Uhlan struck the woman who was still in the cart with his lance. Pulling out the lance he shot at her and killed her with his carbine, the bullet entering her chest. I fired at the Uhlan but missed him, and I saw him killed later by the machine gun. I went up to the cart and satisfied myself that the woman was dead. I took the body out of the cart and put it on the roadside in the straw in the neighbouring cornfield and unharnessed the donkey and went on.

Belgian Soldier.

I was at Sempst early in September about five minutes' march from the village. I saw several bodies of civilians. I looked at two bodies. One—a woman—had her throat d 81 cut, I could not say whether it was done with a bayonet or sabre or knife. She was 45 or 50, I should say. The man, of about the same age, was shot in the head. It must have been done in the night, because the neighbours said the Germans had been there the night before and had retreated in the morning. They also said that the man and woman had been killed because they would not give the Germans horses. The man was a miller and had a farm also. The farm and mill were side by side. The man's body was in the mill and the woman's outside the farmhouse. I do not know myself how long they had been dead. I did not touch the bodies. I was on patrol duty with a corporal and four others.

Belgian Refugee,

At the commencement of the war I was attached to the Red Cross, stationed at Brussels. d 82 I was passing with an ambulance at Sempst, between Malines and Eppeghem. There were in all 15 carriages (i.e., ambulances). The German soldiers shot on the first carriage, but nobody was hurt. The Germans were cyclists, but I do not know the name of their regiment. I was driving the last carriage at the time.

I was shortly afterwards taken prisoner with all the other Belgians, and our ambulances were detained. At the end of about two hours we were set free, with the exception of

30 wounded Belgian soldiers, whom the Germans took away with them.

At Sempst a man and his son who kept a small estaminet or café. He was asked by the German soldiers as to where the Belgian troops were. He refused to say where the troops were, and both he and his son were at once shot by the Germans. I was informed of this when I shortly afterwards passed on my ambulance, and I then saw the corpses of the two men. I placed a sheet over their bodies. The man's wife fainted when she saw me covering the bodies, and she afterwards told me how the men met their death.

BELGIAN OFFICER.

I was at Sempst about the end of August. The Germans were retiring and we were pressing on them. We entered about mid-day. A young girl about 17 came up to me crying in the village; she was dressed only in a chemise: she told me that 17 girls, including herself, had been dragged into a field and stripped quite naked and violated, and that twelve of them had been killed by being ripped up across the stomach with a bayonet. She told me that there were a great number of soldiers. I could not leave my battery to go and see the corpses: the girl told me it was 10 minutes walk. In the same village on the same day I saw a man in a barn (dead); the corpse was burnt and his legs cut off. The village people told us that his legs had been cut off, and he had been thrown alive into the fire. I also saw a man lying shot against a wall; his wife told me that he had refused to give up his horse, and the Germans had then taken it and shot him.

LABOURER.

d 84 Weerde.

d 83

At the commencement of the war and before the Germans arrived at Malines, there was an engagement at Sempst between the Belgian and some German troops. The Germans were repulsed and came to Weerde. I was informed that the Germans niet a man who belonged to Sempst, who had a horse. The Germans wanted the horse, but the man said he wanted to use the horse himself. A German soldier then cut the man's throat. I afterwards saw this man. He was dead, and his head was almost severed from his body, but I do not know what weapon had been used against him. This man's neighbour told me of the above, and also that his house had been burned and that the animals inside the place had also been killed. I saw them lying dead. I was also told that this man's son, aged 18, who had been made a prisoner, attempted to run away and was shot dead by the Germans. I saw his dead body, shot through his chest,

I saw four corpses lying in the road close to my house. The bodies were covered with

sheets and I did not look at them. I was told that they were four civilians who lived near by at Sempst (and whom I knew by sight) and that the Germans alleged that the men had shot upon the German soldiers. This was quite untrue, because the civilians had all

given up their weapons a week previously.

During the whole of the time the Germans were at the town the burgomaster and the chief clergymen were made prisoners. I afterwards saw the burgomaster at Ostend when I was waiting to leave there for England.

Post Office Official.

Before the war I lived at Malines. I was taken prisoner by the German soldiers early in

September. They compelled me to march (with other refugees) with the troops.

In passing through a village near Sempst, the name of which I do not know, I saw several old men (Belgian civilians) beside the road wounded. I saw a private German soldier go up to one of these wounded old men (he was bleeding in the face) and strike him in the back with the butt end of his rifle. He fell down and was struck heavily again several times whilst on the ground. I believe he was killed.

He had given no sort of provocation. Several other civilians were struck at the same time by the Germans but I did not think seriously hurt. There were non-commissioned

officers present, but I think no commissioned officer.

In the same village I saw two little children (girls), three or four years old, standing beside the road with a woman who appeared to be their mother. As the Germans came up, two of them drove their bayonets through the bodies of these two children, killing them.

Close beside the road there was a small farm homestead burning and the bodies of the two children were pitched into the flames by the soldiers who killed them; they tossed them in with their bayonets. It was a different soldier who killed each child. The same thing was done-by each, one killing one child and one the other. I saw no commissioned officer present. The mother was crying—the soldiers pushing her away. I did not think she was hurt. Other people saw this happen, but they are strangers to me and I cannot give their names. This village was about half an hour's walk from Sempst—on the east of it.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (ELECTRICAL ENGINEER BY PROFESSION).

On the 9th September at Weerde, a village south of Malines, about 8 kilometres, I was on special service in plain clothes. I met another man from another regiment in the same capacity. I do not know his name, but I should recognise him if I saw him. We saw the corpse of a man and a woman. We inquired of the neighbours and they told us that the woman was enceinte. She had been violated by German soldiers and had had her womb cut open by them in her husband's presence. He had been previously bound to the bannisters. They had removed the unborn child. We saw the latter half burnt. The flesh was grilled more than burnt. They had beheaded the husband. We saw the very place where they beheaded him covered with blood. They took the man's head and thrust it into the woman's womb after tearing out the child. We saw the two corpses in this state after it had been done. There were many neighbours round, at least a dozen, from the houses quite near. I asked if any of the soldiers who did it were drunk and they said they were not. We who were on special service were a short way in front of the patrols and the Germans had just left when we got there. I had met my companion only a few yards from where we found them. The bodies were in the front room, the kitchen was behind. Several of the neighbours said they saw the whole thing through the windows. There were six soldiers together in the house, one was a non-commissioned officer. We were there about 9 a.m. The child's body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the fireplace, and some paper put under it and burnt. I do body had been thrown down in the firepl

At Londerzeel I was with my regiment and we had driven out the Germans. We found several houses where there was blood on the floor, and in one house we found a young girl of 14 years about, it was in a house quite near a notary's house, I think there would be only one notary in a village of that size. She was half mad when we found her. Her mother was there, and told us that seven German Red Cross men had violated her one after another. They were peasants. It had been done quite recently, just before the Germans were driven out. At Lebbeke, not far from Antwerp, near the outer third line of fortifications, I was making a reconnaissance about a kilometre in front of the regiment. There was a house which had been partly demolished and burnt, in the neighbourhood of the cemetery. Some women who lived there told us that in the morning—we were there in the afternoon—the Germans had buried some of their dead in the cemetery. To avenge themselves for their death, they had searched for the most recently married in the village and had taken 12 couples. They made the husbands dig graves for themselves. They then shot the whole 24 and buried them there. It was a place of about 3,000 inhabitants, I should say, and when we were there, there was not a single man left. The Germans had taken them all away. There were about 40 women there. They also told me that the Germans captured three of our chasseurs à pied, and bound their hands together and tied them to the stirrups, and then galloped through the streets. The chasseurs could not keep up with the horses and were dragged along the paved

streets and wounded.

d 86

Belgian Soldier.

d 87 Eppeghem.

I joined my regiment at Ghent. My regiment went from Duffel to Malines and took part in the battle at Malines when the town was first bombarded. This was the 23rd of August.* I was on this day taken on by the Red Cross service as a stretcher-bearer, as I had passed an examination for such work when I served before. I was sent with a doctor towards Eppeghem. We had to hide in a dry ditch so as to avoid being hit by the artillery. I was then ordered to take some wounded Belgians to a small convent in Eppeghem where there was accommodation for the wounded. At the convent I found a woman who had been pierced by a bayonet. The woman was in a dying condition. The ambulance I was with was then told off to take this woman to a Red Cross station at Malines, as the Germans were coming very close to Eppeghem and it was necessary to get the wounded away. The woman was placed in this Red Cross station, which was in the Rue de Bruxelles at Malines. She was attended by two doctors and I looked on while the bandages were taken off. The woman's stomach had been cut open right across, the wound being some foot or more long. The woman was with child as could clearly be seen from her size. The doctor who examined was not sure that the child as could clearly be seen from her size. The doctor who examined was not sure that the womb had been pierced by the bayonet cut. The woman was in a dying condition when I saw her, so the doctors told me, but I did not actually see her die. I did not hear the names of the two doctors nor the name of the woman.

On the same day between Malines and Eppeghem I saw six dead bodies of Belgian civilians—they were labourers. Three of them were lying altogether and one had been killed with a bayonet as far as I could judge. He had three or four wounds in his stomach and blood was oozing out of them. His clothes had been cut by the bayonet. After this date

I went to a hospital at Antwerp, and from there eventually came over to England.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 88

On 28th August I was serving with my regiment near the village of Eppeghen, near Hofstade. I was patrolling the village for a way of escape as we were surrounded by Germans. I heard cries of women and children. I passed through the German lines. As I passed through the village I saw on the outskirts a lot of men, women and children lying dead. They had been shot. There were about 20 bodies altogether. On another occasion I was at Muissen† after the German patrols had been driven out. I went into a house on the high road. It was the first house on the right-hand side going towards Louvain. I then saw at the foot of the stairs the body of a man with his head smashed in. The stairs were marked with blood all the way as if he had been thrown down. The man was a civilian. He had been shot. There were marks of German bullets everywhere in the house. I examined the bullets. Upstairs I saw a woman lying on a bed with her throat cut. There were broken wine bottles lying about everywhere.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 89

At Eppeghem, in the middle of September (I cannot remember the date because I have lost my field note-book), I saw the dead body of a child of about two years of age outside the village near the road to Vilvorde. A German lance, similar to those used by Uhlans and other German cavalry, was in the child's body and was stuck into the ground through the body. The wound was still bleeding. The Germans had vacated the village about half-an-hour earlier, falling back before strong Belgian patrols, cavalry and foot. I removed the lance from the child's body and gave it to a cavalry patrol attached to our First Division who had lost his weapon. The patrol was also advancing to Vilvorde. I saw none of the civil population near where the child was, but people around the church told us earlier that the Germans had been in the village about four days and that all requisitions had been complied with, but that some persons had been murdered. The church was not very far, about 10 minutes, from where I saw the child, but it took us some time to get to that place because we were searching houses. I made no inquiries for the parents of the child because I found it after I had left the village and I was excited, having been advancing under fire for two Whilst advancing from Eppeghem with the same three men on the same day along the Brussels route towards Vilvorde and shortly after passing the station of Weerde, we met a woman whose blouse or dress was torn open in front and she was all covered with blood. Her breasts had been cut off, the edges of the wounds being torn and rough. We spoke to the woman. She was with us for 10 minutes, but it was impossible to understand what she was saying as she was "folle." She went along the road towards Eppeghem. There were other troops patrolling to our left and right but not advancing along the road. We proceeded towards Vilvorde and were driven back along the railway line past Weerde. It was not possible to get into the village of Weerde as it was not safe and our only route was along the railway line.

Both these incidents were reported to officers of my company on the same evening by me.

† Muysen.

^{*} This should be the 25th.

[†] Muysen.

† Note by Examining Barrister.—Witness told me that by "folle" he thought she was delirious with pain. I asked him why they did nothing. He said they could do nothing except fasten up her dress. They were in the middle of fighting, but that she was so bad that one of their party proposed to put her out of pain, as she seemed dying, but that he objected.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On August 25th my division was going to Elewyt, near Malines. We were attacking the Germans, who were retiring. We entered the village about 10 a.m. on the morning of the 25th. While we were coming in I saw, in a yard behind a house on the right-hand side, a man, quite naked, who was tied to a ring in the wall, used for fastening up horses. His hands were tied behind his back to the ring and his body was bent forward. I was one of a patrol of four men of my company. We entered the yard in order to make sure that there were no Germans about the house. I went up to the body. I undid it. It was I alone, who went in alone, and I did it alone. I rested the body against my shoulder and held the body up while I was untying it. It was tied with a horse bridle. I should say that the man was about 32 years of age. I was just letting the body drop to the ground when other men of my company came in and they saw him too. We all examined the man. The head was so riddled with bullets that one could hardly say that he had any longer a face. We found one ball which had passed through the head into the wall behind him. In the centre of the chest we saw a fine mark of piercing with a bayonet, as if the latter had been laid on quite gently and shoved through. The hole was not large. It came out at the other side and there the hole was still smaller but a little more rugged. I should think the mark behind might have come from the saw-like reverse of a German bayonet. His private parts appeared to have been slashed off. The mark left in the middle of the body showed this. It looked as if there had been rather a hacking off than a cutting off The organ itself lay on the ground. There was still hair about the middle of the body. There was a great deal of blood on the ground. The blood was coagulated. The body was cold, but there was absolutely no sign of decomposition.

In the same yard, in the stable itself, my comrade found the body of a woman lying on her back on straw upon the floor, quite naked. It bore clear marks of violation. We examined the body. There was a great deal of blood, bluish in colour. The private parts were torn. I could not say if by any instrument. It was a woman of middle height, about 30 years of age. On her left arm she was tattooed with the letters "H.B." in the centre of a crown. There was the same mark of a bayonet thrust as we had seen in the case of the man. On the breasts themselves there were absolutely no marks. She was not tied. We turned over the body and saw at the back exactly the same mark as we had noticed on the man. The eyes were widely opened, and bore an expression of some

agony; they were blue underneath.

A young child, a boy of about three or four years, lay partly in the manger and partly over it. His two hands and feet were cut off. We did not find them. There were no marks on the body. One arm and one leg stretched beyond the manger and the other leg within it.

OFFICER, BELGIAN ARMY.

At Elewyt I have seen a woman and three children with their hands and heads cut off by the Germans. In the month of September in the evening (150 metres away from me) they were setting fire to the farms before my eyes, forcing out the inhabitants and firing at them.

Belgian Soldier.

I am a soldier of the Belgian Army, and was wounded at Dixmude on 23rd October.

I was engaged in patrol duty at Vilvorde one day in the month of August, and on entering a house there I found the dead bodies of three men killed by bayonet wounds.

They were civilians and had their ordinary clothes on.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Sunday evening, the 23rd of August, at about 5 o'clock, I saw nine Belgian cyclists, forming part of a patrol, at Humbeek-sas. They placed me and some other civilians behind them upon the approach of four Uhlans. The Belgian soldiers then hid and on the Uhlans coming near they shot at them and the Uhlans retreated. The Belgian soldiers then left the

village.

At about 8 o'clock the same night I was standing outside the door of my house (at Vilvorde) when the alarm was given that the Germans were coming. My wife and I went into our back garden, and I climbed a tree. I could hear the crying of men and women in the streets and I saw the "fire" coming from the rifles of the German soldiers. I saw a man named de W. . . . who was trying to escape from his house two doors from mine. He was a good man and was obviously trying to reach the public house, where there were more people and more protection. He was shot in the hip by a German soldier who was close by and I heard him screaming. The Germans took him to a public house in the street. (I was afterwards informed that the Germans poured some cognac into the wound and made a splint for the wound.) While I was still in the tree I saw the Germans place the man on a cart on which

d 90 Elewyt.

d 91

d 92 Vilvorde.

there was some hay, on which he was taken away with about 20 other civilians on the way to Vilvorde. I also saw some soldiers going from house to house searching for civilians, but they did not observe me on the tree or my wife among the shruks

did not observe me on the tree or my wife among the shrubs.

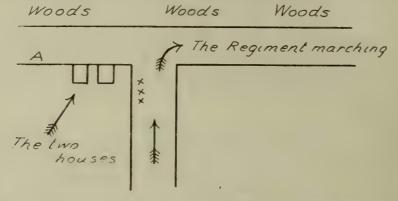
A neighbour of mine who drove the cart on which the man had been placed told me that he went in the cart to Vilvorde, and that a soldier held a revolver close to him all the way. He was allowed to return in the cart, but the man was kept at Vilvorde. The soldiers said that the man was going to be shot, because he had hit a German soldier, which was untrue.

All the civilians about 20 to 22 who lived near me were captured on the same day, but I

was not captured, and left the next day, 24th August.

Belgian Soldier.

d 94 Boort-Meerbeek. On the 25th of August at Boort Meerbeek I was behind the regiment, for I could scarcely walk and rested from time to time, two other soldiers being with me. The road forked at a certain spot, the regiment taking the right-hand road. On the left, close to the corner, were two small houses and straight ahead were woods, thus:



I and my two comrades were at the spot where the three crosses are marked. We saw a German soldier come out of the wood and fire three separate times at a little girl of from 4 to 6 years of age who was at the point marked A. Seeing that he failed to hit the child by firing at her and that she stood quite still, he ran at her and bayonetted her in the stomach. At the sight of this we rushed up and the German soldier threw up his hands as a sign of surrender, but I killed him with the butt end of my rifle. With the exception of the little girl there was no one in the neighbourhood.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 95 Herent. About the 22nd or 23rd of August last, after we had driven the Germans out of Herent, near Louvain, we found there the charred body of a man, whose age it was impossible to guess, in what was left of a butcher's shop which had evidently been set on fire by the Germans. The head and lower limbs were missing, suggesting previous mutilation.

About 20 metres away we saw in a hand-cart the dead body of a civilian who, by his clothing appeared to have been a labourer. By the appearance of the face he had been

strangled by hand.

There was no weapon of any kind by him. He seemed to be about 65 years of age.

After the battle of Sempst, I saw the Germans bayonet about 30 wounded Belgian soldiers lying on the field. I was hiding in a trench (having been separated from my company) when I saw this.

Afterwards the same wounded soldiers were taken away by the German ambulance corps.

RAILWAY SERVANT.

d 96

At Louvain I was taken with my wife and two children by the Germans into a brickfield. There we found 16 other men—civilians. On the way, my son aged 16 was wounded in the body by the bayonet of one of the German soldiers accompanying us, and on arriving at the brickfield the boy fainted from loss of blood. After we arrived, another man, also a civilian, was brought into the brickfield, and I saw the Germans kill him—they shot him with a revolver.

Afterwards the Germans tied our hands behind our backs, and having selected five, including myself, we were made to march in front of the German troops, and were directed by one of the officers to guide the troops to Herent. The officer told us that he did this so that if the troops were fired on we should be the first to fall. We were pushed along at the point of the bayonet.

On the way I saw four or five civilians lying dead by the roadside, one of whom appeared to have been shot in the face. I was unable to see how the others had been put to death.

They had no weapons with them.

At Herent the officer told us that our company had not been fired upon, but the other company had, so they had shot all the men left in the brickfield, among whom was my son.

I never saw my wife or daughter after we arrived at the brickfield, though I have since

heard they are safe.

We arrived at Bueken, eight or nine miles from Louvain. On the way we were joined by 300 to 400 other civilian prisoners—men, women and children. At Bueken a large fire was lighted by the Germans in a field, and we five were ordered to walk through it. I was the first of the five, and on approaching the fire I saw a plank which had not been burned, and so I stepped on that and was able to jump through without being burned myself. The other four men were then allowed to walk round instead of through the fire to the other side where I was.

We were then taken back to the other prisoners, the men being separated from the women and children.

It was between 6 and 7 a.m. that I had been taken to the brickfield, and at about 11 p.m. the men were taken to a field close to a burning farmhouse—more than a hundred of us. We were made to kneel in two lines, our hands still tied behind us, and we were made to bite the earth.

After this we were forced into a small farmhouse which was not large enough to hold us, but those behind were pushed in by the German soldiers with the butt ends of their rifles. There we were left without food until 9 or 10 o'clock next morning, and were almost stifled for want of air.

Belgian Refugee.

I used to live in Herent, near Louvain. The Germans arrived at the end of August. At first they did nothing. After 11 days they went on to Malines, but were repulsed by the

Belgians and then began to ill-treat the civilians.

Two days later I saw the Germans shoot a civilian of 35 or so; he was standing by his door at the time. I and my wife were then prisoners, I had my hands tied behind my back; we saw it as we were being taken out of a house—150 yards off. I also saw the Germans throw the body of a young man into a burning house. I was 100 yards off. I cannot say whether he was alive or dead. I saw at Winxele Delle (Brabant) a German soldier shoot at a civilian who was running away, and when he fell the soldier stabbed him with his bayonet many times and came back to us—the prisoners—and put up his bayonet saying, "Smell, smell; it is the blood of a Belgian pig."

At Bueken (Brabant) I saw a priest ill-treated; he was an old man of 75 or 80 years of age. He was brought up with the other prisoners, he could not walk fast enough; he was driven on with blows from butt ends of rifles and knocked down. He cried out, "I can go no farther," and a soldier thrust his bayonet into his neck at the back—the blood flowed down in quantities. The old man begged to be shot, but the officer said, "That's too good for

you!" He was taken off behind a house and we heard shots. He did not return.

WIFE OF PREVIOUS WITNESS.

I also saw the Germans shoot the civilian at his door, and I saw the soldiers throwing the body of a young man into the flames of a burning house. I think he was alive; I saw him wriggle. I think we were only 10 yards or so away, but I cannot remember exactly. It was 11 houses away. I also saw the civilian shot and bayonetted and the soldier who did it came back and said, "Smell, smell; it is the blood of a Belgian pig." I was made to smell

the bayonet.

There were children with us (two of mine and others); they were driven along with blows; I saw one child bayonetted three times because it could not walk fast enough. I think it was a girl of seven or eight years of age. I also saw the old priest ill-treated. I saw four burnt bodies in Herent and Bueken. We were all driven up by the Germans close to them so that we could see them. The Germans took them out of a burnt house and laid them in the street. We saw them dragging out the bodies; my husband had known one of the dead men; he was a carpenter.

Belgian Refugee—Youth.

On the 20th or 21st of September I was in the village of Aanbosch, which is about a quarter of an hour from Herent. Herent is about 20 or 25 minutes from Rotselaer. I had fled to Aanbosch from Rotselaer because the Germans had come to Rotselaer and had taken all the men and boys. There was a fight between the Belgians and the Germans at Aanbosch. The German soldiers said that some Belgian soldiers were concealed in two farmhouses at Aanbosch. This was not true, as there were no soldiers there. I saw the Germans firing at these houses; I was hiding in an asparagus bed and was concealed by the tall plants. The occupants of the two houses came outside and all of them were bayonetted by the Germans. There were 13 altogether, four men and nine women. The women were some of them young girls of about 16 or 17. The German soldiers then set on fire the two houses and threw the dead bodies into the fire. The men who were killed were all civilians, there were no soldiers there. (Thirteen names given.) I knew both families well. There was another boy with me in the asparagus bed and he saw these people killed, too. This boy came from Wygmael, which is near Herent. There were also three others, young boys, in the asparagus bed. They also

d 97

d 98

saw the killing of these people. The Germans never saw any of us as we were well hidden in the asparagus. We were there for about three hours. I told what I had seen to the priest at Aerschot because he was with us when we fled.

Later on I was taken prisoner by the Germans, but was released at Boort Meerbeek. I eventually reached Ghent on foot and from there went to Ostend and so came to England.

I hid in the asparagus bed with my companions because we saw the Germans coming and we were afraid.

AGRICULTURAL LABOURER.

d 100 Haecht. I am an agricultural labourer and live at Haecht, near Louvain. The Germans first came to Haecht about the 14th or 15th of August. They passed through the village. They came continually after that in small and large numbers—some staying and some passing through. First of all the artillery came, then cavalry and then infantry. About the 28th August, five cavalrymen came into the village. I saw five men go into an estaminet with the son of the landlord. (Six names given.) The estaminet was on the opposite side of the village from which the cavalrymen had come in. I was standing in the road 150 metres from the public house. When I saw the men go into the estaminet, the cavalrymen were about 100 metres beyond the estaminet. The Belgians each had a bicycle except one man. The cavalrymen came up to the estaminet. The Belgians were in the yard. The five Belgians appeared to be forced to go in front of the cavalrymen. The landlord's son was not among them. He had fled into a wood near by before the Germans came up to the estaminet. The Germans took these Belgians about 100 metres across a field and across the main road from Aerschot to Brussels. There the Germans dismounted. One of them held the horses and the other four forced the Belgians about 200 metres further over another field. They went behind some bushes and were lost to view. A man I knew, from Haecht, told me that he saw the men lined up and shot by the Germans, and that all were killed, and that he saw this from a window of his house which is 100 metres away from the spot. Six hours after the shooting I went to the spot and saw four dead bodies in a heap. They were the bodies of (four names given). I saw no more of the Germans myself after I saw them return to their horses on the road and ride off towards Brussels. I saw the fifth man in a Red Cross hospital at Haecht in the afternoon of the next day. He was wounded in the left knee. I spoke to him, but he was too weak to answer. I do not know anything about his wound except that the man told me that he had been bayonetted in two places after the shooting. In the Red Cross hospital was a man whom I knew. He told me that he was walking in a field and was shot by the Germans in the foot. It must have been the same day, but he did not give me any details. The man's father took him to Louvain Hospital that same evening on a donkey cart. None of the villagers carried arms.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 101

At the end of August on the day before the battle of Haecht, I was scouting with six other men in the direction of Haecht. It was about 4 p.m. We had got up to within 500 yards or so of the Haecht Brewery when I heard firing. We advanced in the direction of the brewery. Almost immediately we saw a number of German cavalrymen. There were about 30 and they came from behind a wall. We opened fire and three of the Germans fell. The rest of them galloped off. We went back to tell the commanding officer of the battalion—about 300 metres away—what had happened. The whole battalion then advanced to the brewery. We marched along the road and passed the end of the brewery wall. On the far side were the bodies of about 10 men, all civilians. They were all lying in a row lined along the wall. As I belonged to the patrol I was marching at the head of the battalion. At the brewery we found two civilians who came with us to show which way the Germans had gone. They told me that they had been lined up to be shot, but the Germans had not had time to shoot all; that the men shot were the brewery hands.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 102

Before the war I lived at Haecht, in Brabant; I was a labourer. About the middle of August the German soldiers entered Haecht. They seized a number of civilians and drove them in front of them. They were all men. Amongst them were myself, my father and several of our neighbours. Five of these neighbours were placed against a wall and shot by the Germans with their rifles. Four were killed outright, another was wounded; he escaped being killed by pretending he was dead. After he had been shot and wounded he was stabbed with a bayonet in the abdomen. I helped to put him into a cart. The four dead men I helped to bury. There was no reason for what was done. The men were standing outside their doors. The Germans said they were spies, but they were not. Afterwards I and six other men (neighbours) were stripped of our clothes by the Germans, placed naked against a wall and threatened with the bayonets, but they eventually let us go, we assuring them we were not spies. After we had got our clothes on again the Germans forced us to march in front of them towards Malines, where the Belgian troops were in force. There were many people besides me and my neighbours—at least 2,000—all men. We were fired on by our own countrymen from the Malines forts. None of us were killed.

I returned to my home and there found the dead bodies of my wife's sister and her brother at the mortuary. Neighbours told me they had been taken out of the river, where the Germans had thrown them after shooting them. There was a bullet wound in the brother's forehead. He was a civilian.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I am 28 years of age, and live at Brussels.

d 103

On the 26th of August I was wounded; on the same day I was in Haecht, and there saw a round well behind a brewery. On the surface of the well I saw the bodies of a woman and a man. The people who lived near told me that the man and woman and their seven children had been put in this well. I saw some feet beside the bodies of the man and woman. There was some water in the well, and the stench was awful.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 26th August there was an engagement between the Belgian and the German troops, which lasted for two days. I was wounded and was taken prisoner by the Germans (who belonged to the 86th Regiment of Infantry). At the end of four days the Germans retreated and I was left behind with about 100 other wounded Belgian soldiers. During the time I was with the German soldiers they attended to my wound, but I was not given any food.

d 104

I was taken in a Red Cross motor car with five other wounded soldiers. Between Malines and Louvain, we went through a little village called Haecht, and I saw a labourer's house in which all the windows and door were smashed. I went in the house with a comrade, and there saw the dead body of a woman of about 30–35 years of age. Her head had been severed from her body, and one arm and one leg had also been cut off. The clothes were saturated with blood. I do not know the name of the woman.

At a place called Duffel I saw the body of a child about seven years of age whose head had been severed from her body. The head lay about three yards away. The child was dressed. I was in the Red Cross motor car at the time, and did not then get out of it, but

I saw the child quite easily from the car. My companions also saw it.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 105

After the Belgian troops had been fighting at Haecht on the 26th August I saw the body of a little child aged about three years, whose stomach had been cut open by a bayonet near a place called Boort Meerbeek, lying close to a house. The people at the village told me that the child had been killed in its mother's arms. I did not see the mother. The Germans had previously been in occupation of the village.

Two or three of my comrades were with me at the time, but I do not know whether any

of them are at present in England.

Belgian Soldier.

In the village of Haecht, between Louvain and Malines, I counted certainly five or six open wells in which petrol had been put. There is no water supply and the wells are for drinking. There were about 1,600 soldiers there of my regiment alone and all drinking water had to be fetched for them to drink by wagons from Keerbergen at least five kilometres away. I could not be certain that the Germans did it. But the inhabitants had fled without taking anything, and I do not think they would have had time to do it. The Germans had occupied it for 15 days from about the 20th of August to the 11th September, when we drove them out and I found the wells in this condition.

d 106

Belgian Soldier.

On September 10th we came to the village of Haecht, and I and some others were sent out as a patrol: we passed a river and came to a farm-house. On the door of the farm I saw a child—two or three years old—nailed to the door by its hands and feet. It was clothed and quite dead. There was no wound of any sort on the body; the face was horribly drawn with pain. In the garden of the same house I saw the body of another child—a little girl of five or six; she had been shot in the forehead.

d 107

All the villagers had fled, and had not yet returned, although the Germans had been driven back.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About 13th or 14th September we captured the village of Haecht from the Germans. We had, however, to retreat again. While resting we found a woman lying in the road naked to the waist. The breasts were cut right off—both of them. Lieutenant D... ordered us to cover the woman with a small German "tent" we found close by in the haversack of a German, and we afterwards buried her. My section was with me at the time.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was in command of a patrol on the 9th or 10th of September, in the neighbourhood of Haecht. About 6 p.m. I had got my men in extended order and we were going thus in the direction of Louvain and we were about a kilometre and a half from Haecht, when I came upon a number of corpses in the middle of a field. I passed quite close to them. The first one of them I noticed was the corpse of a German marine. Altogether there were three of them. The fourth corpse was that of a boy of 4 or 5 years old. His body was lying in the middle of the marines' bodies. His hands and feet had been cut off. I did not see the hands or feet lying near by. There were four patches of blood where the stumps of the arms and legs were lying. The blood was dry. There was no blood round the bodies of the marines. When I saw the bodies I was only 30 metres from the nearest Belgian in my patrol. I did not call his attention to the bodies, because we were under shrapnel fire. The bodies were about 50 metres from the nearest house—a small farm.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 110 Werchter The 26th August there was a battle in Malines and we drove the Germans back. By about 5 in the afternoon we had advanced as far as Werchter. We entered a house there and found a man and a woman and four younger people. One of them was a young girl with all her garments torn. All were dead. We could not stop to examine the wounds or how they were caused.—We were told by the people there that the family was shot because the girl would not give herself up to the Germans and the family helped her.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 111

My regiment was cantoned near Antwerp, and from there we made a sortie about the beginning of September. On the second day we captured Werchter, which lies between Malines and Louvain, from the Germans. I formed part of a patrol consisting of four men of my company and a sergeant. About 4 or 5 p.m. on the second day day we came into Werchter. At the bottom of the street as we entered we saw about 30 German marines, who were in a position of being about to fire. They were about 200 metres off us. Beside the soldiers stood village women—six of them—at one side of the road, and on the opposite side stood six men. We heard the salvo, and saw the men fall. After that we fired from the side on which the men had stood and we made a turning movement, and the Germans went into a house and out of it into their trenches which were in a field some little distance away. We came back into the village to continue our patrolling, and in another part of the village, near a field, we met the six women. They told us that they had buried their husbands in a dry ditch and thrown a little earth over them. They told us that the six men were their husbands. There were some children with them. It was difficult to get them to speak, they were crying so much. They were about the only families left in the village.

MEDICAL STUDENT; VOLUNTEER IN BELGIAN ARMY.

d 112 Capelle-au-Bois

At the end of August I was on patrol duty with a corporal and three others exploring a wood by Capelle-au-Bois. At the moment the Belgian army was advancing. One of the soldiers was about 50 yards from me. He called out to me that there were two young girls hanging in a tree with their breasts cut. I looked round; I saw the girls hanging about two feet from the ground, their hair hung down over their backs. They were naked; their backs were towards me. I did not see any wounds myself in consequence.

BELGIAN SOLDIER,

d 113

At Capelle-au-Bois we had driven the Germans from the village. After we had entered we saw, near a house, a peasant woman dead, as if she had been killed in coming from the yard at the back of the house. She was dressed as if going to leave the place and there were things packed up in the house. Close by, before the same house, we saw the body of a young girl of seventeen or nineteen. The blood was trickling down her arm. We had driven the Germans out that day. The house I speak of was one of several beyond the village where the Germans had passed in their retreat and where there had been no bombardment.

On the road from Malines, towards the forts of Antwerp, on one occasion I saw a large number of country people being driven in front of the Germans. I was taking part in a patrol when I saw this. I was only about 80 metres off.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 114

In the early part of September last as my regiment was following the railway line on the outskirts of a wood at Capelle au Bois, we met a woman who ran out of her house to us, and she told me in the presence of my comrades that German soldiers had on that day entered her house and had seized her daughter whose age she did not tell us—the mother herself being between 40 and 50—and had forced the girl to undress, and several of the soldiers had then violated her one after the other, and while this was going on upstairs four soldiers had held the mother down by force to prevent her from going to her daughter's assistance, nearly

strangling her in doing so. Then she cried out "Belgians" and the Germans took fright and ran away. I saw the mother afterwards telling her story to my officers though I could not hear her.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I saw, when we were guarding the railway at Capelle-au-Bois, a carriage arriving at a gallop, the inside covered with blood, containing the two bodies, still warm, of small boys; one could not say exactly what age, but almost eight years. The head of one of them was entirely smashed. A young man of about seventeen explained to me, in answer to my questions, that some German soldiers found the carriage which he was driving, and that they without saying a single word, or even requiring any explanation, fired upon the two little boys inside. He himself hid beneath the box, after having whipped up his horse which escaped at full gallop.

MUSICIAN IN BELGIAN ARMY.

Between the 10th and 15th of September I saw a boy's corpse in a carriage drawn by a horse which was carrying fugitives from Capelle-au-Bois towards Willebroeck. This was at Ramsdonck near Willebroeck. There was another child's corpse in the carriage, covered by a rug. I did not see this second corpse, but one of my comrades, who speaks Flemish, spoke to the man driving the carriage, and told me afterwards that the man had informed him that there was another corpse in the carriage, and that both had been killed by the Germans at Capelle-au-Bois. I was told that there was an autopsy on the corpses at the military hospital at Willebroeck. For myself, I saw a bullet wound in the forehead of the corpse which I saw. Other musicians saw the corpse or corpses, but I cannot say their names.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the middle of September I was at Capelle-au-Bois. My battalion was on outpost duty. I saw a fire in an adjoining village, and heard a cart coming along the road about 800 metres away. I saw a German officer go forward and stop the cart. We were few in number, so could not go close, the Germans being in greater force. In this cart there was a manservant and two children—boy about seven and girl about six—behind this cart was another cart in which was a lady and about four children. The first cart not stopping at once, the Germans shot the horse. The two children in the first cart stood up, the Germans then stopped the second cart. The boy got down from the first cart, the mother (?) got down from the second cart and spoke to the officer. He pushed her away. The soldiers shot the boy—five or six shots fired together. The little girl in the cart was killed by the same shots. The mother picked up the dead bodies, put them in the second cart, and drove into the Belgian lines. I saw the bodies in the cart in our lines.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

In the beginning of September, about 11 a.m., I was in command of a small post about 200 yards in advance of my company. This was close to Nieuwenrode. The civilian inhabitants were turned out of there by the Germans. We saw them going off in carts. One cart came towards us with a man, a woman, and two children, a boy and a girl. The Germans fired on them; I mean a small advance post did so. The boy was shot through the head; he was about 10 years old. The little girl was shot in the cheek. The Germans (i.e., the outpost) came out of the building they were in and one pulled the girl by the hair from the cart and threw her on the ground. The man in charge stamped on the child's face, and as the parents told us after, called her a "Belgian brute." The child was killed. The parents brought both children into our lines. There were two other carts (with civilians) in the road at the same time, and I believe two others were wounded, two men, but I did not see them close. When the Germans fired we were about 800 yards away. The girl was about 9 years old. I don't know the names of the men with me. The children were taken to the Civil Hospital of Willebroeck, where all the company saw them.

Belgian Soldier.

One day in the first days of the latter half of September, my regiment was at Ramsdonck, near Malines, and I was with my regiment there. We were encamped there during two days, and on one of those days—I think it was September 17th—I saw two children, one I should say about 8 years and one about 12—they were a little boy and a little girl—I forget which was the elder, lying in a carriage which was driven along the road. When I saw it, it had stopped. It was like a car used for carrying stuff and it was open, but a covering was thrown across it.

I saw the Belgian military doctor go up to the car and he undid the covering. I went over to look out of curiosity. Several other bandsmen went over to look too. There are 38 of us, and I should say that certainly 15 of us went to look, but I cannot now remember the name of any particular one. I saw lying at the bottom of the car the two children. Their heads were covered with blood. They were dead. They were two peasant children. The driver

d 115

d 116

d 117

d 118

d 119

, , a . 1 m

told us that he had found the car with the two dead children in it on the road. My idea is

that there had been other persons in the car and that they had fled.

The Germans were still in the neighbourhood, I did not see any that day. We drove them some distance off the following day. The driver told us that he was taking the children to Willebroeck for a post-mortem.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

d 120

On Thursday, the 24th September, there had been an engagement at Willebroeck between the Germans and a few Belgian troops, and I afterwards assisted to bury some German

soldiers who had been killed. I went along the canal to look for further corpses.

At about 2.30, I saw a man put a pig on to a cart. As he was doing this, about eight or 10 Uhlans came along the road towards him. The Germans shot at the man, and he jumped off the cart and ran away, and as he ran he made signs to his wife to follow him. In the cart there were two children aged 11 and 15 respectively, a girl and a boy, and both of them were shot dead by the Germans. There was no fighting going on at this time. At the sound of the firing the horse took fright and bolted with the cart. The horse was afterwards stopped by some civilians, and the bodies of the two children were taken to the town hall and were there photographed. I saw the bodies at the town hall. I did not hear whose children they were. I was told that the photographs were to be sent to America. I did not see either the father or the mother again. I cannot say whether there was an officer with the Uhlans. Shortly after this the Belgian soldiers came to the town.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

d 121

My husband and I remained in Willebroeck until September 29th, when we came to England. From the 1st of September onwards we had large numbers of refugees coming through. One afternoon in the first week of September I saw a woman with blood all down her dress. She was crying. I spoke to her. She told me that she came from Hanbeck*; that she was fleeing from the Germans; that she had a small baby in her arms; that a German came up to her and told her not to flee: that she continued and that the German then bayonetted her baby and tossed it up on the point of his bayonet; that this had occurred the same morning I saw her. She was a peasant woman and I am sure she was telling the truth. She said she had brought the baby's body to Willebroeck, but I did not see it. About the 18th of September a carriage was brought to our house. The carriage contained two bodies. One was that of a girl aged about eight and the other of a boy aged eight. Both had been shot in the head and both their heads were almost blown to pieces. The carriage was streaming with blood. The uncle of the two children, who lived at Humbeck, brought the bodies to make a declaration as to how the children died and to get a burial license. He said that he and the children's mother were taking the two children and five others were fleeing in the carriage; that a German or Germans came up, put the muzzles of their rifles close to the two children's heads and killed them: that neither he, the mother, or the five other children were touched; that the father of the children was a prisoner and compelled by the Germans to dig trenches.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 122

On a day in the middle of September at Capelle-au-Bois, I saw in the front of a house, in the main road of the village along which was regiment my marching, the body of a girl of about 18 years of age. The body was quite naked except for some strips of clothing about her shoulder. Her clothing was all torn off her. She had been stabbed in the breasts with bayonet or sword and had evidently been ravished before she was killed. The Germans had left three hours before. They were retiring at this point before us. The whole regiment and the captain saw the dead girl.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

d 123 Boisschot. On or about the 17th August, while I was with my regiment passing through Boisschot, close to Aerscot, we were informed by some refugees that a young man (aged 20) and his father, who lived in Boisschot, had been shot by German soldiers (Uhlans) in the presence of the man's wife. I then saw the dead bodies of the young man and his father. I did not see the mother. I do not know the names of the people, but I was informed that they were civilians and had given no provocation whatever.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

d 124

About three weeks after the beginning of the war the Germans came to Boisschot. It was a patrol of about 15 mounted German soldiers. These were the first Germans who came there. They were followed by a number of infantry. Our house is at the commencement of the village as one comes from the east side. I was standing before the door of my house when the Germans came; I stood there about half-an-hour. I saw German soldiers going into the houses and dragging out all the men. The men did not refuse; the Germans did not point a revolver at them. They dragged out all the men old and young. The old men

they only took as far as Aerschot, two hours from Boisschot, and they shut them up there in the church. They came back the next day. One old man I knew told me this. The young

men did not come back.

Later on, the same day, I was in the Groen Straat in Boisschot. I was running to the station by myself, when I saw an old man standing in the yard before his house. I told him to run away with me. He said "I cannot come yet"; he was standing alone in his yard, I knew him well. I was running past his house when I said this to him. I had told him a German patrol was coming up the street; I could hear the horses. It was about 300 mètres behind me, I think. The house is at the end of the village; open country is beside it. There is a great about 25 mètres beyond it on the same side of the read as his beside it. There is a wood about 25 mètres beyond it on the same side of the road as his house. I ran into the wood and hid there. I saw the old man running across the road to the side opposite to that on which I was, and in the direction of the station. I heard two shots fired. After the second shot he fell backwards on the street. Half-a-minute afterwards the patrol rode by towards the station. They passed by the old man lying on the ground, but none of them dismounted or did anything to help him. Each of them had a gun.

After they had passed, I crept out of the wood. I went up to the old man and stood a bit

beside him. I spoke to him, but he could not speak. I went back across the fields home. The house was empty. But there were two houses in the street in which there were still people. One of the houses belonged to a peasant woman. I went and told her and her husband what had happened to the old man. They came with a small cart drawn by a dog and we went to the spot where he lay, and we brought him on the cart to the station at Heyst-op-den Berg. That is the station in the direction of which I had started

running.

When I had seen the German infantry soldiers earlier that day taking the burghers with them, they were taking them up to Kievit Straat towards the station of Boisschot on the road to Aerschot. I only saw five, they were walking in front of the soldiers. But I was told by the old men who came back the next day that 200 had been taken off that day. Since that day I have not seen my father. He is an agricultural labourer. He came home to dinner that day. We used to have dinner at 11.30. He went out again. The old men who came back told us that they had seen him in the church at Aerschot. He did not come back with them. Men between 16 and 50 or 55 were taken away and not let back.

I saw my mother, brother and sister again at the station of Heyst-op-den-Berg. I saw the old man lying in a room there. He died while we were there, I saw blood on his shirt, in the lower part of the chest on the left-hand side. I did not see the actual wound.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

From the 23rd of August during this week I saw the dead body of a baby a few weeks old, hanging by its neck to the handle of the front door of a cottage outside Hever. I do not know the name of the people. I was told by others that the Germans had taken the child from the mother's arms and hung it there, forcing her to watch till the baby was dead.

On August 31st, I was in Hever one evening, and I saw a large band (150) of women and girls, and little children from two different communes; they told me they had been driven by the Germans from Haecht and Wespelaer—a distance of many miles—arriving at Hever in the

evening in an exhausted condition.

There had been fighting all round our house for some days. I did not see the bodies of any civilians during the week I was at home.

Young Civilian.

On September 4th, 1914, I was in the village of Humbeek, a prisoner in the hands of the Germans. It was an infantry regiment, but I did not notice the number. It was about 8 p.m., the sentry in charge of me came with three other soldiers. Three of the four held me while the fourth tore my right forearm with a rusty nail. Much blood came from the wound. On the following morning I managed to escape to Grimberghen, then to Laeken, and finally reached Brussels.

The soldiers were in drink, but quite understood what they were doing. They laughed and appeared to think it was great pleasure. It was not pleasure for me. My arm was not treated at all by the Germans. I went into the Laeken Hospital. A doctor looked after me. He is a Brussels doctor. Laeken is a suburb of Brussels. The doctor did my arm up, and I went away in my cousin's automobile. My cousin is a doctor too. I left the same night for

Antwerp.

Note.—The barrister taking this deposition has made a note that he examined the arm and found a scar about six inches in length and also a smaller one beside it.

Belgian Refugee.

On September 5th, 1914, I saw my cousin.* I saw his right forearm. It was bandaged. I took bandages off. The arm had been dressed with Iode Tintura. The forearm was There was a yellow suppuration. There were two cuts joined by suppuration.

d 125 Hever.

d 126 Humbeek.

I could see that the two cuts were not made by a knife, but had been torn. The cuts were not parallel. The external of the two cuts was about seven inches in length, the second was between four and five inches. My cousin's shirt was stuck to the wound by the suppuration. He told me how the wound had been caused. He said a German soldier had torn his arm with a rusty nail. The soldier had said "Let me see your arm," and then used the nail. I washed the forearm with alcohol to remove the excess of iodine and applied boracic acid lint and a bandage. I did not see the arm again.

PEASANT PROPRIETOR.

d 128 Schrieck. Three weeks before we left our home the German soldiers came to Heyst. They kept passing through—different regiments—none of them stayed there. I know nothing of any house-burning or shooting being done by the Germans in Heyst. Three or four days before we fled I went to a house beyond the village of Schrieck, which is about half an hour from Guur, to fetch apples from a tree behind the house. On the way to the house I passed along a brick road. On the side of the road—the right-hand side—lay the body of a woman. I did not go up to it, but I could see it distinctly. I knew the woman—her name was de B... I know the husband. The people of the district told me the same day that she had been shot that day by German soldiers. I did not hear them say why. Her son took her body to the churchyard on his cart.

MARRIED WOMAN.

d 129 Wilsele. I live at Wilsele, near Louvain. I remember Germans coming to our village first about three weeks after war broke out. There were about 200 of them, and they were passing through. I know a man named F...; he had fits nearly every day. One day there were about 200 infantry passing through. I saw F... a few yards from my house; I had gone to a well to fetch some water. All the men were being taken to Louvain. F... was being taken along by about six Germans. He had his hands in his trouser pockets. I was about 20 metres away from him. About five minutes after I had first noticed F... He had a fit. He had then been taken by the Germans about 40 metres from the place where I first saw him. The Germans pushed him in the back with the butts of their rifles to make him get on. One of them said, "You have to go on." He answered that he could go no further, as he was exhausted. He was ordered to sit down in a ditch; but he had hardly sat down when they said, "Are you going on, yes or no?" He again said he could not. They pulled him to force him to get up—pushed him a few yards further into a field. He was standing up. One of the soldiers put his revolver to F...'s forehead, and shot him. The other Germans stood round and laughed. I was then about 40 metres away. The soldiers went away immediately, and I went to the spot and found the man dead.

PLASTERER.

d 130 Exact locality unidentifiable. On the 23rd August I went out with two friends (names given) to see what we could see. About three hours out of Malines we were taken prisoners by a German patrol—an officer and six men—and marched off into a little wood of saplings where was a house. The officer spoke Flemish. He knocked at the door; the peasant did not come. The officer ordered the soldiers to break down the door, which two of them did. The peasant came and asked what they were doing. The officer said he had not come quickly enough and that they had "trained up" plenty of others. His hands were tied behind his back and he was shot at once without a moment's delay. The wife came out with a little sucking child. She put the child down and sprang at the Germans like a lioness. She clawed their faces. One of the soldiers took his rifle and struck her a tremendous blow with the butt on the head. She fell dead. Another took out his bayonet and fixed it and thrust it through the child. He then put his rifle across his shoulder with the child upon it. Its little arms stretched out once or twice. The officer ordered the house to be set on fire and straw was obtained and it was done. The man and his wife and the child were thrown on the top of the straw.

There were about 40 other peasant prisoners there also and the officer said, "I am doing "this as a lesson and example to you. When a German tells you to do something the next "time you will move more quickly." The regiment of Germans was the regiment of Hussars with cross bones and a death's head on the cap.

ENGINEER.

d 131

I am an engineer by profession, but when the war started I volunteered for active service and became a "corporal mitrailleur" (corporal of a machine gun), and was attached to an armoured automobile.

In the course of my duties I motored with the car through numerous villages in Belgium through which the German Army had passed. Most Belgian villages have wells for the water supply, and I and my companions in the car looked into the wells in the villages we passed through.

In numerous instances we saw dead bodies of Belgian civilians in the wells—men, women, and children. I remember particularly seeing dead bodies in the villages of Schrieck, Linden, Tremeloo, and in the environs of Betecom. All the villages in which we saw dead

bodies in the wells showed many signs of the enemy's presence and very many houses were burnt.

I cannot say how many dead bodies we found in the wells, because we were on active service and if we saw four or five we did not stop to count. We only stopped long enough in

a village to ascertain that there were dead bodies in the well.

I cannot say whether these people were thrown in alive, but I noticed one dead bodythat of a man—with his watch still in his pocket. I also saw dead bodies of women with children in their arms.

Belgian Soldier.

My regiment was going from Waelhem to Hofstade. We were going to engage the Germans. We left Waelhem on August 25th. The same morning I saw on the road a woman lying on the ground dead, with a bayonet stab in her right breast. There were houses quite near. The Germans had been on that road that morning. They had been driven back by our Carabiniers. An old woman on the spot said that the woman had been killed by a German soldier's bayonet as she was running away.

Note.—Spoken to by four other witnesses.

Belgian Soldier.

Between Malines and Louvain we saw a woman 30 to 35 years of age standing up to her neck in a cesspool of filth into which she told us she had been thrown by German soldiersfor what reason she did not say. She was unable to extricate herself and we (I and one other) helped her out. She was in a pitiable condition and told us she had been violated by five or six German soldiers immediately before being thrown into the pool—a full hour she had remained in the pool. There were 10 men in the patrol, all of whom saw the woman and heard her story. In the same district I saw the dead body of a child about eight months old with both hands cut off, and it must have been recently done because the stumps were covered with congealed blood.

Belgian Soldier.

During a battle which was taking place between Malines and Louvain, about the 20th to 25th of August, I was going with my regiment along the main route. We halted to rest for a few minutes by the side of the road, after making a détour on leaving Malines. We stayed there about half an hour in all, and I went to a house at the side of the road to look for some water to drink. The house had been burnt, only the walls standing—it was not detached. There was the remains of a table there; it had been partly burnt. On it was the body of a dead child of 2 or 3 years old; it was partly burnt. Both hands and both feet had been cut off; the hands at the wrist and the feet at the ankle. I only saw it for a moment because an officer came to fetch me and told me not to drink any water for fear it was poisoned. A hundred metres further on there was the body of an old woman. I do not know how she was killed, but the neighbours said it was done by German soldiers because she would not let them enter her house. I cannot tell whether the child's hands and feet were cut off before or after it had been burnt, or whether it had been burnt to death. Nor can I say whether it had been born with or without hands or feet.

Belgian Soldier.

At Schepelaer on 24th or 25th of August last I was doing patrol duty for my regiment, the Germans being in possession of the village, and I was sent to see what they were doing. I got to within 50 yards of the German troops, and I and my comrades (12 in all) opened fire on them. They replied and my regiment coming up drove them out of the village which we then occupied for three days.

Five or six girls in the village complained to me that they had themselves been outraged by German soldiers. I do not know their names or where they lived, but Corporal vd. . . E

of my company wrote their names down in a book. I left him fighting when I was wounded. The girls were being outraged by German soldiers on the roadside as we came up. I knew this because immediately we surprised the Germans I saw girls run away from among the German soldiers towards Malines passing through our lines, and as they passed they told me what had happened. I saw blood on their skirts and legs for they wore short skirts, being apparently from 14 to 16 years of age, and their blouses were torn, exposing the bosom. The outrages must have been witnessed by men of the village who were held prisoners by the German soldiers, and were standing among the Germans who used them as shields, firing from behind them, the villagers being themselves unarmed.

The girls complained that they were outraged successively by the Germans—one coming

forward as soon as another had left her.

Belgian Soldier.

I was at Malines on the 26th of August. Early in the morning I was making a reconnaissance, searching the houses to see if there were any Germans there. I had four private soldiers with me. On the road from Haecht to Malines we entered a house outside

d 136

A 28740

d 134

d 132

d 133

Malines, i.e., after having passed the town of Malines. We found a peasant woman of 60 to 70 years of age, dead. She was cold, and a boy of 15 or 16. The woman had her breast cut off. There was a very large quantity of blood on the floor and she had evidently bled to death. She was nude from head to waist. There were no other wounds that I could see. I did not move the body; I only touched it to see if it was warm or cold. From the nature of the wound I should say it was done by a bayonet and not by a sabre. It was a house standing by itself, and the nearest house was about 10 metres away. The boy had a bayonet wound in or near to his breast. The blood had flowed out over his waistcoat. The house was on a side road, 40 or 50 yards from the main road, and I reported the occurrence to a gendarme at the corner of the main road. There was no one else at the house and I do not know if there were any other people living there or whether they had taken any men from the house prisoners.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I do not remember the date, but I think it was at the end of August or beginning of September. I was in the rear guard, endeavouring to hinder the advance of the Germans while the Belgian army retreated. It was near Aerschot. The Germans had been there some days and had opened the sluices and inundated the ground. To escape we had to go through the water and make a detour. While doing so and crawling along a ditch we came across five, six, or seven women. I did not stop to count them. They were in the ditch. We had to climb over them. They were dead. Their clothes had been torn, partly torn off, and pulled up over their bodies, as if they had been violated. I cannot say how they had been all killed, but one or two had their throats cut and one or two had their breasts half cut off. The breasts were hanging. It was easy to see—the front was all open, and someone had pulled down the petticoat a little off the head as if to see what had happened.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

It was between Hofstade and Sempst. I was on patrol. I saw a young woman crying at the door of a house. I asked her what was the matter. She said that five Germans had taken her husband and her brother-in-law prisoners to Brussels. Going out of the town, I took with me the young woman, and we found the bodies of the husband and brother-in-law, still warm, lying on the road near the town. They were both quite dead. Three Germans ran away from the spot. I shot one of the Germans.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On or about the 6th September we left Antwerp for Aerschot, and on the road near Aerschot I saw a round well. I saw that the bodies of four people were in the well, namely, those of a man, a woman, and two children; and on the well there had been chalked some German words, which I was informed meant that the people in the well were being washed, and had to be left there.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Between Aerschot and Putte I was shown the place where a girl of 17 had been interred after having been violated before her parents' eyes. I was with my company and the brother of the girl, a boy of 14 or 15, pointed it out to several of my comrades. The village was completely burnt except the church. Nearly all the inhabitants had gone. He told me they had placed the father and mother and seven children against the wall and some of the soldiers kept them there with their revolvers while it was done. I did not know whether they were Uhlans or infantry; they said "Germans." He did not say how many German soldiers there were. But he said three of them raped her and then killed her and buried her. I am pretty sure he was speaking the truth. My lieutenant told the whole company the same story the same evening, and I told him I had seen the place.

In the same village a young woman of, I should think, 23 or 24 told several of us that evening that three Germans had raped her and that she thought she was very fortunate to have escaped with her life. I had a note-book in which I had written down all these incidents with the dates, but I lost my note-book at the Yser, between Dixmude and Ramscapelle.

LOUVAIN.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The Germans pillaged empty houses while in occupation of Louvain, but did nothing worse than that up to 25th August. They had taken up their quarters in private houses in the centre of the town where they massed their forces. Some of their men had bayonets with

e 1

one saw edge, and were able by means of them to get into the houses by sawing panels out of the street door.

On Tuesday, the 25th August, at 4 o'clock in the afternoon, the alarm was sounded all through the town, and the German troops left their cantonments in great haste. Meanwhile the German Police Guard, which was composed of 21 men, and had been stationed at the Convent of the Pères Pie, No. 119, Rue de la Station, as well as a few men lodging in the houses of some private residents in the same street, remained at their post. Guns were booming in the neighbourhood, and the noise of mitrailleuse and rifle firing were plainly audible. In the direction of Herent the light of fires could be seen. About 8 o'clock the Rue de la Station was the scene of a stampede of horses and baggage wagons, some of which were overturned. A smart burst of rifle fire occurred at this moment. This came from the German police guard in the Rue de la Station, who, seeing troops arrive in disorder, thought that it was the enemy. (Another proof of their mistake is that later during the same night a group of German soldiers under the command of an officer got into a shop belonging to the F...'s and under the guard of their nephew, B..., and told him, pointing their revolvers at him, to hide them in the cellar. A few hours afterwards, hearing troops passing, they compelled him to go to see if it was the French or the Germans, and when they learnt that it was the Germans, they called out: "Then we are safe," and rejoined their compatriots.) I took refuge in my cellar with my mother and my servants. My cellars look out on to my garden, and I could not tell from this point what was going on in the street. Shortly afterwards fires lighted up in the direction of the Law Courts and the St. Martin Barracks. I could see them from my garden. About 10 o'clock in the evening Place de la Station and several houses on the odd side of the rue de la Station took fire as well. The fires were lit up afresh by explosions caused by incendiary bombs thrown into the houses by the soldiers. Meanwhile an incessant rifle fire was kept up on the windows of the houses and on people trying to escape from their burning houses. (This was actually seen by a friend and myself in the Rue de la Station and the Rue de la Cuiller.) In their efforts to escape the flames the inhabitants climbed the walls. I, my mother and my servants had to do the same, and we took refuge at A . . . 's, whose cellars are vaulted and therefore afforded us a better protection than mine. A little later we withdrew to A . . .'s stables, where about 30 people, who had got there by climbing the garden walls, were to be found. Some of these poor wretches had had to climb 20 walls. A ring came at the bell. We opened the door. Several civilians flung themselves under the porch. The Germans were firing upon them from the street.

From time to time the fires in the Rue de la Station spread and approached one another, and we were compelled to put on woollen wraps soaked in water to prevent ourselves from being burnt by the sparks. Things went on like this all the night. Every moment new fires were lighting up, accompanied by explosions. About the middle of the night I heard a knock at the outer door of the stable which led into a little street, and I heard a woman's voice crying for help. I opened the door, and just as I was going to let her in a rifle shot fired from the street by a German soldier rang out, and the woman fell dead at my feet. About 9 o'clock in the morning things got quieter, and we took the opportunity of venturing into the street. A German soldier, who was carrying a silver pyx and any number of boxes of cigars, told us that we were to go to the station, where trains would be waiting for us. When we got to the Place de la Station we saw in the Square seven or eight dead bodies of murdered civilians. Not a single house in the place was standing. The whole row of houses behind the station at Blauwput was burned. After being driven hither and thither interminably by officers who treated us roughly and insulted us throughout, we were brutally divided, I from my mother, G... and his two elder sons from his wife and his two younger children, by an officer who threatened us with his revolver. My manservant, who was carrying my bag and his own, was compelled to leave them in the charge of an officer. This officer searched him, and finding on him shares, money, and a savings bank book to the total value of 7,805 francs, took them away from him in my presence, giving him a receipt for 7,700 francs, signed "Von Frischow, Commanding the 90th Regiment of Infantry." I hold this receipt, and it is at the disposal of the authorities. We were then distributed between different bodies of troops, who marched off in the direction of Herent. We marched in line in front of my mother and Madame G. . . . and other ladies from the town, who were standing in a group in the tramway shelter, crying and stretching out their hands towards us. We were forbidden to approach them.

From this time forth the German soldiers, and especially their officers, never ceased to maltreat us and annoy us in every possible way. We were in their power to the number of 77 inhabitants of Louvain—amongst us were [a number of names given of persons of good standing]. The officers and soldiers told us that we had been taken prisoners because civilians had fired upon the troops. Monsieur G... was sent on a quarter of an hour ahead to warn the people of the villages that if a shot was fired we should all be shot ourselves. We found the village of Herent in flames, so much so that we had to quicken up to prevent ourselves from being suffocated and burnt up by the flames in the middle of the road. Half-burnt corpses of civilians were lying in front of the houses. We were taken into a meadow beyond the village, and there the troops regaled themselves with soup, but offered us none. It was between 12 and 1 o'clock. During

the halt the soldiers stole cattle and slaughtered them where they stood. They put the carcases on their camp kitchens and took them off. Firing started on our left, and we were told that it was civilians firing, and that we were going to be shot. The truth is that it was the Germans themselves who were firing to frighten us. There was not a single civilian in the neighbourhood. Shortly afterwards we proceeded on our march to Malines. We were insulted and threatened by all the troops who were blocking up the road from Louvain to Campenhout. We were called "droves of pigs" (Schweinebande), "traitors," "murderers," "cowardly soldiers in civilian clothes," &c., and the officers were worse than the men. They all avowed that civilians had fired on the troops—it seemed as if they had been ordered to say so—and that 3,000 rifles had been found in a church at Louvain, and that shots had been fired from Red Cross ambulances on the Germans.

We were next taken into another meadow, and there the troops rested. Our hands were tied behind our backs. Monsieur († . . ., who had not understood what the Germans wished him to do, was compelled to kneel by an officer threatening him with his revolver. We then had to walk behind the German flag between files of soldiers who were said to be the execution squad. We got to Campenhout about 7, and there we were locked into the church with all the male population of the village. Some priests had joined our number. We had had nothing to eat nor drink since the evening of the day before. A few compassionate soldiers gave us water to drink, but no officer took the trouble to see that we were fed. We spent the

night on chairs, under the guard of an infantry picket.

In the morning a priest was sent up to the altar, and we were told that if we wished to confess we could do so, because the hour of our execution had come. By 5 o'clock a list was taken of the 77 inhabitants of Louvain, and I received a safe conduct allowing us to return there. I was the only one who could speak German, and it is for this reason that the said conduct was entrusted to me. We had hardly started before we were stopped by some sentinels, who took us into the presence of the Brigade General. He handed us over to some other soldiers, who were told to take us to the next post. While we were going there a military butcher hit me a violent blow in the back with the flat of his knife; a wagon man hit one of the prisoners with his whip, and Monsieur G... was hit by a stone in the back. When we got to the post we were greeted by two officers whose brutality was incredible. They accused us of being soldiers out of uniform. When I told them that we were decent people, and that amongst us were two Belgian officers on the retired list, and that one of these had a son serving in the Belgian cavalry, he told us that all three of them were just as big swine as I was myself. We were told that we could not go on to Louvain because the town was going to be razed to the ground, but that we should be taken to Antwerp; so we retraced our steps, always under the escort of a group of soldiers. Men, women and children had joined our number from the neighbouring villages, and we formed a group of more than 200 people.

We were taken to the advanced posts of the German Army in the direction of Malines, and there we were left to our fate, being told that we had better get into Malines as quickly as possible and keep together, because if not, those who separated from the mass would be fired on. Four hours after we arrived at Malines the bombardment of the town began. During the whole time of our detention we had nothing to eat but a crust of bread which was

given us by a compassionate soldier.

Our rate of travelling was throughout extremely fast, and was accelerated by blows from the butt end of a rifle, and that, although we had amongst us elderly men, such as Monsieur M..., who is 75.

Belgian Refugee.

I remained in Louvain because I knew Germany well, and I must confess I was a friend of German Kultur. I thought it was impossible that we should experience any harm from German soldiers. We might have to pay, and to give Einquartierung; but matters would be conducted in an orderly fashion, because everything in Germany goes by rule. And also, I believed in the theories of international law, that non-combatants had to be respected. But

my experience was just the contrary.

When the Germans came to Louvain, the very day of the battle, the Belgian Artillery ceased to fire at the moment it became dangerous for the town, and then, some minutes afterwards, the first German patrol entered the city. No resistance was offered. The Germans went to the town hall, and I think an hour later, the whole army went through the city in order, and continued to pass the whole afternoon. But in the evening there came other troops and they had to sleep in the city. And yet, that same evening, those troops plundered a number of houses. To be precise the house of Professor G..., a very prominent neurologist, known and esteemed in every German university, where his papers and instruments were, was entered. His papers were actually torn to shreds and his scientific instruments broken to pieces, an act of sheer wantonness.

Similar things happened at other houses. Pictures were slashed with bayonets; and furniture destroyed; acts which would have disgraced a brute beast were performed. Other things happened the same night, near to Louvain, in a little farm. A girl was violated, having been forcibly torn from her father and mother. Upon her resisting she was twice bayonetted. I saw the girl with my own eyes.

Berryer 89

The whole week German troops passed through Louvain, and plundered the cellars systematically. They made requisitions in such proportions that it became impossible for the citizens to get anything to eat. The great question, then, is whether the citizens of Louvain did or did not shoot on the German troops, and so provoke reprisals. For my part, I know; first, that the Minister, Beriyer, wrote in the first week of the war to every Belgian municipality exposing very clearly the principle that only soldiers were allowed to fight. The "Vingtième Siècle," known as "organe officieux" of the Government, stated that, if anyone wished to defend his country, he had to join the army. Every act of hostility on the part of isolated individuals was useless and would have the worst consequences.

Secondly, the day before the Germans entered Louvain, the municipality reminded the citizens of those principles, by way of notices posted in the town; and ordered that all weapons

should be given up.

Thirdly, the bourgeoisie was very anxious, and hoped that nobody would give a pretext for the use of force. On the evening of the 25th August, I know certainly that from my own house nobody indulged in any provocative action. We were actually taking our dinner in the greatest peace, and never thinking of the things which were about to happen, and I know that the same is true of many other houses in our neighbourhood. Nevertheless, some minutes after 8 o'clock, as we were taking our coffee after dinner, there suddenly began a fusillade in the street. Soon after, the bullets began to rain against our house. As far as I could tell by the sound, artillery was being used. We took refuge in a room looking on the back garden and remained there the whole night. Three times the firing started afresh, and meanwhile we saw on every side the reflection of the fire that was devastating the city.

The German fury continued on the following day, with only short intervals. I was able to speak with some serious persons of Louvain that day. Nobody knew of definite facts of hostility on the part of the people, but it is certain that a great number of innocent citizens were shot while flying from the burning houses, or smothered in the cellars by the smoke of

the burning.

The houses were set on fire with highly inflammable substances which had been prepared beforehand. The whole day the soldiers went and came through the streets, saying, "Man* hat geschossen," but it seems that the shots came from the soldiers themselves. I myself saw a soldier going through the streets shooting peacefully in the air.

At certain spots citizens were arrested, compelled to go with the troops. A number were shot, others were taken as prisoners; others were released—everything without the least

reason.

The soldiers were especially enraged against the priests. They accused them of inciting the people to resistance; while, as a matter of fact, none of us did anything of the kind. On the contrary, the parish priests had counselled their parishioners to respect the orders given by

the Minister of the Municipality.

On the morning of the 27th, orders came that everyone had to leave the city, which was to be razed to the ground. So we went, first to the station, to which we had been ordered to go. But, when we reached the station, we were ordered afresh to take the road to Tirlemont. Soldiers lined the road, their muskets aimed at us, and we were obliged to hold our hands up. I was accompanied by my aged mother. At half an hour's journey from Louvain we came upon a German encampment. A soldier came up to me, calling me "Schwartzer Teufel," and seizing me roughly by the arm, pushed me into a dirty little stable. Here I found some twenty other priests and persons in the service of the Church from Louvain. We were told by the soldiers that we were to be shot. Some immediately began to make their last confessions to their compares. I could scarcely realise what had happened. In the meantime my mother had sought out a German officer and prayed him that he should at least not allow me to be put to death without any enquiry. The officer came to the stable and repeated the accusation that we had been inciting the population—I need hardly say, a groundless charge. I told him I was a professor of the University, and in my whole life had never said a word to any one of the Louvain "population." Also I said I knew personally a number of professors in German Universities, and I gave him the names of some of them with whom I was friendly. I told him that these gentlemen would perhaps be somewhat astonished when they should hear of my death. Nevertheless, I said, "Do as you like."

The officer seemed to reflect a moment, and then suddenly said, "Alle frei." There was still a moment of difficulty, because the soldiers apparently did not wish to understand this order, but at length, we were allowed to go. The officer had still to intervene, until we had

quitted the camp.

The worst was over. We—my mother and I—had still to walk this and the following day about twenty miles before we could find a peasant cart. We had to carry the few belongings we were able to take away, and to walk in the heavy rain. We could find nothing to eat, but other people were yet more unfortunate than we. I saw ladies of the best society walking in the same plight, without hats and almost in their night-dresses. Sick persons, too, dragged themselves along, or were carried in wheelbarrows. Thousands of people were obliged to sleep in Tirlemont on the church pavements. We found a little room to sleep in.

I could give other and more circumstantial details with regard to my friends and colleagues still in Belgium, but it would be indiscreet in the circumstances as it might expose

them to the attentions of the Germans.

Only one fact I think must be recorded. An old man of ninety, a figure in the world of Art, respected by all, and a personal friend of my own, had lain dangerously ill for some months in his house on the outskirts of Louvain. Surely no provocation came from him or his old wife who was nursing him. Nevertheless, his house was set on fire, and the soldiers took the poor old man on his mattress and pitched him into the garden. They left him lying there all night. Only on the following day could a friend bring him to the hospital, where he died soon afterwards.

Belgian Refugee—Man of Independent Means.

On or about the 19th August the Germans entered Louvain. I had some German soldiers in my house, and none of them had done anything that was wrong. They were with me a week. A German officer (I do not know his name or regiment) who had received hospitality from me told me that on the route to Louvain he had seen things done by German soldiers which had made his heart bleed. He said, "I saw a poor woman with two little "children in her arms and watching her own house burning. I am a father myself, and I "cannot bear this. It is not war; it is butchery." The officer spoke of the happenings at Aerschot, which is about three miles from Louvain.*

On the 25th August I had come to my house from Station Street when I heard the cry "Alarm, two soldiers on horseback." A new regiment had come to the town, and had taken

possession of the houses. When I heard this cry I went indoors.

Between 6.30 and 7 p.m. I heard the sound of shooting. I then said to my wife, "Let us make ourselves ready and go into the garden. Get a mattress down." The shooting was so loud that I concluded that the French soldiers had arrived. We then went into our garden. I afterwards went back to the house, and saw that the houses on the opposite side of the road were in flames. I then saw a very bright light; this came from a chateau. hour the whole chateau was in flames, and the light was so great that one could read a newspaper in the garden.

I went into the pigeon loft in my back garden, and remained there with my wife until the next morning. I did not hear any cries during the night. My garden is a long way from the

street.

• 3

Next morning (27th August) I went into my house and then heard the moans and cries of a young woman, one of my neighbours, and she cried, "Oh, come and save me."

answered, "I cannot save myself, go and hide."

Between 12 and 1 o'clock I saw people getting over the walls, fleeing from burning houses, and trying to get to my garden. At that moment four German soldiers and an under-officer, belonging to the 165th Regiment, came and arrested me, and a revolver was placed against my cheek. I had no arms, never having possessed any. I was informed that the Burgomaster had been taken as hostage, and that we were not to do anything. I was then taken to the Station Place, which is near my house. I only had slippers on, and no hat or waistcoat. On the way there soldiers kicked me and hit me with the butt ends of their rifles, and shouted, "Oh, you swine; another one that shot at us; you swine." My hands were tied behind my back with a cord, and when I cried, "My God, you are hurting me," a soldier spat at me.

An officer came up and went through my pockets. He took my purse and put it in his pocket, also my keys; and a little silver pen knife which was attached to the keys. He also took out my watch, and seeing that it bore some initials (my own) he put it back in my pocket. I could quite easily recognise a German officer, his dress is quite different from that of a soldier, and he does not wear a helmet. He is rather dressed like an English officer.

The cord on my wrist hurt me very much, and each time I turned my head in pain the soldiers hissed at me. I was then placed on the top of an ammunition wagon. As they were putting me on the wagon I slipped off, and one of the soldiers then struck me a terrific blow in my private parts, and I fainted.

My wife was kept a prisoner on the other side of the station, and as I was being taken away on the wagon she waved her hand to me. The women had been separated from the men. I was taken in the wagon by the canal to the Chaussée de Malines. I there saw that

my own house was on fire. I did not see any shooting at that time.

When we get a little further along the Chaussée de Malines I was told to come down from the wagon; and the cord on my wrists was cut, and I was placed with the other There were about 500 prisoners. We were made to walk through fields until midnight. The villages of Herent, Thildonck, and Campenhout were all on fire, and the flames could be seen 10,000 yards away. We were made to sleep in a field; it was raining all the time. At 3 o'clock we were again made to march, and we continued to march until 3 p.m. without having anything to eat or drink. I had had nothing to eat since I left Louvain. At 4 o'clock we reached the church at Rotselaer, and were sent inside. Inside the church there were about 1,500 prisoners. There were some children only a month old. There was also an old man aged 75 on crutches. We were all placed together. There we were given a drop of water, but nothing to eat. We were given buckets of water, and had to use our hands to drink from.

I understood from the prisoners in the church that all the people of Rotselaer were made to leave their houses on the pretext that they were in danger of bombardment, and the Germans stated that they were placed in the church for security. While all these people were in the church the Germans robbed the houses and then burned the villages. The Germans have something shaped like a pear with a four-cornered end like aluminium, which is thrown inside a house, and it explodes, and the house catches fire. I saw one of these in the hands of a German soldier, and saw him throw it into a house on the way from Rotselaer to Wespelaer. In less than a minute the house took fire. Between Rotselaer and Wespelaer I saw, in the space of about 3,000 metres, about 50 bodies mingled with bodies of dead animals; of the 50 bodies some were naked and carbonised and unrecognisable and some had been shot.

Twenty thousand of the prisoners were then taken by the Chaussée d'Aerschot on the way to Aerschot, and from there we were taken back to Louvain on foot. On the way we rested a moment. The old clergyman of Rotselaer, a man 86 years of age, spoke to the officer of the regiment: "Mr. Officer, what you are doing now is a cowardly act. My people did no harm, "and if you want a victim, kill me. I have received my soul from God, and I give up my soul to God's keeping." The German soldiers then took hold of the clergyman by the neck, and took him away. Some Germans picked mud from the ground and threw it in his face. I never saw him again.

We then went to Louvain, and had to cross the Rue du Canal where there nad been no fighting. The Fish Market, the Place Marguerite, the Cathedral of St. Peters, and other places were on fire. We were then made to stand in the Grand' Place, at Louvain. The heat of the burning houses was so great that the prisoners huddled together to get away from it.

We were then made to cross Station Street, which is about 1,000 yards long. The houses were all burning, and there were even flames in the street, which we had to jump across. During all this time we were closely guarded by German soldiers, who threatened to kill us if

we looked from side to side. I did not see any persons being killed then.

All the prisoners were then taken to the station and placed in horse trucks, in which the horse dung had not been taken away. We were crowded together, there being nearly a hundred persons, men, women and children, in each wagon. We were kept there from 9 p.m. 6 a.m. the following day, and then we left for Cologne. In my wagon there was an elderly to woman and her husband and eight children. We arrived at Aix la Chapelle. There the German people shouted at us. At Durren, between Aix la Chapelle and Cologne, 4,000 German people crowded round. I turned round to the old woman with eight children, and said: "Do these people think we are prisoners? Show them one of your little children at the window." This child was a month old, and naked. When the child was shown at the window a hush came over the crowd. We went to Cologne and then returned to Durren; then back to Cologne and remained for one night. We had nothing to eat-not even the child one month old. We were put into the wagons at 8 o'clock in the evening and remained in the same wagons until midnight of the following day, when we arrived at Cologne. We were not allowed to get out of the wagons and had to obey the calls of nature in the wagons; and they were all covered with dirt and filth. We were crushed together, and had no lights. We left Cologne, and then were made to get out at a place called German Cologne and were put in an amusement place called Luna Park. We were there put in different places, and I slept in the joy wheel. There the soldiers did all they could to frighten us—they loaded their guns and pointed them at us; they put out the lights. The men, women and children were all together and two men went mad. One, a baker from Louvain, living in front of St. Joseph's Church, the other a shoemaker, who committed suicide. On the following day we were given a loaf of bread among every 10 persons, and a bucket of water. Some of the people even put their heads in the water. We had then been $2\frac{1}{2}$ days without food.

On the following day we were taken to the station. There we were told that food would be given to the women and children, and that the men could drink as much water as possible. We were placed in a train composed of third and fourth classes, and the train started on its journey to Belgium. On the whole of the way I only saw about 50 people; the whole country

was deserted.

On the outside of the wagons of the train which took us to Germany were chalked the words: "Antwerp taken; Belfort taken; 20,000 prisoners." The 20,000 prisoners were the men, women and children taken from the various towns, and were all unarmed civilians. We were not actually exhibited in Cologne. We did not return in the horse wagons, but were placed in open third and fourth class carriages. The journey to Brussels occupied three days, and we had nothing to eat during the whole of that time. At Liège, however, the Belgians threw bread, cakes, and biscuits to the people in the train.

threw bread, cakes, and biscuits to the people in the train.

When I arrived at Brussels I asked some Germans if it was not possible to give some bread to the women who were almost dying of hunger. Some bread was then fetched, but

this was blue moulded and dirty, as if taken from some refuse heap.

When at St. Just I asked a man who was standing near the train for some food, and the

police then brought some food and drink.

We were in all travelling for eight days in the train. During all this time we had only

been given one loaf to each 10 persons.

The Germans announced that the women and children were going to be separated from the men, and that the people were not to be anxious about it. The women stopped at Brussels,

and the men were taken to Schaerbeek, a suburb of Brussels. There we had to come out of the train. We were then taken to Herent, Vilvorde, and then to Sempst. There we were told that we were at liberty. After a march of about half an hour I and the other men were again captured by the Germans, and kept for about an hour. It was then about midnight. We were then told to go back to our own houses. I asked if I might go back to Louvain, and was informed that "If you go back that way we will kill you. You have to go that way"—and the soldier pointed towards Malines. This was the night after the bombardment of Malines.

MARRIED WOMAN, WIFE OF PREVIOUS WITNESS.

On the 26th August I was in my house. At 8 p.m. the German soldiers arrived and commenced firing. I saw the soldiers, but could not tell what regiment they belonged to. I then went into the cellar. After a little time I looked out of the window, and then I heard some moans. The sound came from the street, and were caused by people (civilians) who had been shot. As it was dark I could not see the people who were on the ground.

I then saw that the houses opposite had been put on fire. I went upstairs with my husband, and maid, and each of us took a mattress. We then went into our back garden,

where there was a pigeon cote. I stayed all night in this place.

On the next day (Wednesday) some German soldiers broke open the door of our house, and threw something into it, and the house at once caught fire. Five German soldiers then came into my garden, and one of them levelled his rifle at me. I begged him not to shoot. He did not shoot me. I was then taken prisoner, with my husband and my maid. Other people were also taken prisoners, and the men were separated from the women, and we had to go in front of the soldiers, holding our hands above our heads. All the ladies who lived in the Boulevard—both ill and well—were taken prisoners. One of them, an old lady of 85, who could scarcely walk, was dragged from her cellar, with her maid.

We were all taken to a place in front of the station, and had to stand in a group. At first I could not see my husband, but I afterwards saw a wagon on the other side of the Station Place, and saw my husband, who was bound to it by cords. (The traces of the cord

on his wrists can be seen even now.)

e 4

I then asked four superior officers in German if they would permit me to speak a word to my husband, because he had all our keys and papers. Every officer refused to allow me to do so.

The men, who held their hands above their heads, were searched, and the men who had pen knives in their pockets were shot in front of me. One of these men was a slater belonging to Louvain. This man had a German bullet in his pocket which he had picked up. He was shot down, and two of his comrades had to make a pit and bury him just where he was shot down. This I also saw.

My husband was then taken away still bound to the wagon. All the women and children were then put into the station, but under no cover, although it was raining very hard. The old lady of 85 was with us. After a time we were each given a small piece of bread and half a glass of water. We remained in the station all night. At 8 o'clock on the tollowing morning (Thursday) we were set free.

We had only been free for half an hour when there was an alarm raised by the German soldiers, who said that all the people must leave the town. We were told that we were all to go to Aix la Chapelle, in Germany. The Germans then changed their mind, and we were

all sent to Tirlemont on foot, about 3½ to 4 hours' walk from Louvain.

On the 27th August I saw the dead bodies of seven people on the road; their faces were towards the ground. One of them was a man who had been burned to death, outside his own house, which had also been burned. He was quite unrecognisable. I do not know the name of this man.

On the 28th August as we were being taken along the road I saw the corpses of three young men, and then a little further on the dead body of another young man, all dressed as civilians, all with their faces downwards. They must have been shot as they were walking along the road, and they lay just as they had fallen. I also saw the bodies of a man and a child of about seven years old. I saw the child who appeared to have been shot through the head. The father was also shot through the head. These people had both little packages, showing that they were travelling on the road when they were shot. Their hands were not tied. This was at some distance from the town (Louvain).

On the way the sentinels became scarcer and scarcer. At first there were soldiers on

each side of us, and they also had ammunition wagons.

Seeing a favourable opportunity of doing so, I ran into a field, and went on to a farm. I stayed there until the following morning (29th August). I then went on to the road again,

and saw that the man and child were still lying in the road.

On the way to Tirlemont I asked the soldiers if I might have a drink of water. The soldiers were drinking at streams on the way, but they refused to give any of the prisoners a drop of water. At the house of a farmer, who also kept an inn, I asked for some milk. This man was serving out milk to some of the poor old women when the German soldiers came, and pushing the women away drank the milk themselves. I had just lifted the glass of milk

to my lips when it was taken from me. There were thousands of prisoners. I could not see the beginning of the prisoners, nor the end of them, on the road from Louvain. There were sick and aged people who had to be placed on carts, because they could not walk. I saw one woman with her baby. I was informed by her companion, who held the baby, that the woman had been confined the previous day in her own house.

The pretext for firing on the houses of the people at Louvain was that the civilians had shot at the German soldiers. This was quite untrue. I had no arms in my house, and in fact

these civilians had been unarmed eight days before the arrival of the Germans.

After leaving the farm I went back to my own house. The house had been burned. I went into the pigeon cote in the back garden, where I had hidden my money. I did not,

however, get my money then, because there were a lot of Germans about.

I went back to the farm, and returned to my house three days later. A German officer then told me that I was forbidden to go there. I showed him my passport to show that it was my own house, and that I had every right to go in. I then went in and got my money (the officer had then left) and a parcel of shares from the pigeon cote, and some linen from my wine cellar. The wine had all been drunk. On the previous Sunday I had seen the German soldiers taking the wine away from my house and from neighbours' houses. They got into the cellar with a ladder, and brought out the wine and placed it on their wagons.

I went with my money in shares and linen to a farm at Louvain. I there had to lay on

straw as there were no more beds in the place.

On the way back to my house on the second occasion I saw the corpses of some people who had been burned to death close by their houses which were also burned. I could not go near the bodies because the stench was so great.

Belgian Refugee.

On the 26th of August my wife and child and I were taken prisoners by the Germans. Everybody in Louvain were taken prisoners; there were at least 2,500 of us. We were put on the train in cattle trucks. When we got to the frontier at Aix la Chapelle we were all made to get out of the trucks, the women were placed on one side and the men on the other. The Germans then took every fourth man from the men and placed them on one side and were about to shoot them, but another officer intervened and said that the prisoners were innocent and ought not to be shot. I was one of the men who were picked out in this way. I understand a little German and knew what they were saying. I asked for some water for my child at Aix la Chapelle and it was refused. It was soldiers that I asked and they spat at me when

they refused the water. The soldiers also took all money that I had upon me.

We had to change trucks at Aix la Chapelle and we were marched through the streets. As we went the German women and children spat at us. We were then taken by another train to a place about 20 minutes from Aix-la-Chapelle. We were then made to get out and put into an open space surrounded by a wooden paling. We were kept in this place for a day and a night and we were not allowed to lie down. There was a gun placed in the middle of this pen. We were then put into a train again and into cattle trucks and eventually reached Munsterlager on the fifth day after we had been taken prisoners. During the whole time that we were being taken from Louvain to Munsterlager we had nothing to eat or drink. We could not sit down in our truck and had to stand the whole time. There were some benches in the other trucks but not in ours. My wife was suckling her child, but her milk came to an end. My wife was crying nearly all the time. The baby was dreadfully ill and nearly died. When we got to Munsterlager the men and the women were separated, the children being put with the women. I did not see my wife and child again until the 6th of December when we were released, that is to say, my wife and I were released.

When we arrived at Munsterlager we got something to eat and drink for the first time. They gave us water and some rice and some hard and stale bread. This was the diet throughout the whole time we were there. We got water, rice and stale bread served out to us once a day at noon; the water was given us in a glass and was about a litre; it had some sugar in it. It was a good big portion of rice and the bread was about half a pound. It was black bread made of rye. We never had any coffee or tea or butter or anything but

the water, rice and bread.

We were confined in big sheds, each of which had a big sort of a barn attached to it. In the barn we slept and had straw to sleep on and each of us had one blanket. There was no water supply in the shed or in the barn and it was six weeks before I was able to wash myself. The only water we had was that given us in the glass to drink. Many of the people in my shed got ill, and those who got ill were taken away to Magdeburg. There were English, French and Belgian soldiers also in my shed.

During the whole time I was there, that is, until a few days before I left, I had no news of my wife and child. I was in a very miserable state about this and begged the German soldiers to kill me. After the six weeks without water to wash in we were allowed one basin of water every day, but we never got any soap. We could not buy soap, as we had no money, and, moreover, during the whole time we were imprisoned we were never allowed outside

our sheds.

In the course of the journey from Louvain to the frontier two men who were in a passengers coach, which formed part of the train, tried to escape and broke the windows.

The German sentinels bayonetted these two men and killed them. I did not myself see them killed, but I saw their dead bodies and I was told by their companions how they had been killed.

About the 6th of December I heard that three members of the Civil Guard of Louvain who were old men, were going to be allowed to go back to Belgium. I then begged a German officer who came into our shed to allow me to leave with my wife and child. I knew that my wife and child were well enough by this time to make the journey, because I had been able to see them for about a quarter of an hour a few days before. A German sentinel had done this for me. The officer to whom I spoke said that we might leave. We went to Louvain and eventually crossed the Dutch frontier and so made our way to England.

While we were imprisoned we were never allowed to smoke or sing. We had nothing to

read either. An officer used to come in every day and inspect our shed.

I have never been a soldier. The reason they gave for taking us all prisoners were that the inhabitants of Louvain had fired on the Germans. I myself know that the Germans fired on each other on the 25th of August. On this day at about eight in the evening I was in the Rue de Bruxelles in Louvain. I was hidden in a house. There was one party of German soldiers at one end of the street firing on another party at the other end. I could see that this happened myself. On the next day I spoke to a German soldier called Hermann Otto, he was a private in a Bavarian regiment. He told me that he himself was in the Rue de Bruxelles the evening before and that the two parties firing on each other were Bavarians and Poles, he being among the Bavarians. Louvain was burnt and sacked on the night of the 25th and the day of the 26th.

Before the Germans entered Louvain an order had been given to everybody to give up

their arms.

e 6

e 7

MARRIED WOMAN.

I was with my father in Louvain in August. The Germans behaved well for a fortnight. Suddenly one day they changed. They galloped through the street shooting on the civilians and upon one another. My father told me this at the time. He looked out of the window occasionally. We were in the salon—afterwards we entered the cellar. My father the day before had been a hostage. The atrocities began on Tuesday and continued on Wednesday. We entered the cellar at 8 p.m. and came out at 5 a.m. on Wednesday. I went out of the door and looked into the street. I had walked a few yards to the end of the street—Germans were posted at either end—one of them shot at me. The bullet passed by my head. I ran home. We left Louvain next day. I saw corpses everywhere—men, women, and children lying in the streets—a man and a woman lying together with a blood-stained handkerchief in one of their hands. The firing lasted from Tuesday evening till 5 in the morning and began again an hour later and lasted intermittently till 4 p.m.

BRICKLAYER.

At the time of the burning of Louvain I was taken by the Germans, with other civilians, on a Thursday at mid-day. The Germans had come to Louvain and told everyone to flee as they were going to bombard the town; I went towards Aerschot and in a village called Rotselaer I was taken prisoner with others, men, women, and children, 2,800 in all. The Germans counted us in the train and it was understood that was the number; I heard it from one of the prisoners who spoke German. These people were all from Louvain. Germans separated women and children from the men and put the men into a large field on which there were guns-that was on the main road to Aerschot. The German officers told us we were to be taken to Germany to be shot there and we were not to be shot in Belgium. Many of the prisoners understood German and told us this and the German soldiers who spoke Flemish also explained it. After this they turned us out of the field and sent us back to Louvain station. I do not know what became of the women and children after we were put into the field. We were kept in the station all night in the rain without shelter or food and in the morning we were put into cattle trucks -80 were put into a waggon that would only hold 30 and we were knee-deep in dung. We left Louvain on a Friday morning and arrived at Cologne on the Monday afternoon following; we had nothing to eat or drink during this time and were never allowed out of the waggons to obey the calls of nature. I know this was so in the waggon I was in and I heard from others in other waggons they suffered in the same way. The train was a long one with three engines; we lay on top of each other—making what room we could for those who were ill. They took everything from us, money, papers, jewellery, umbrellas, and overcoats. Those who had the presence of mind to put their letters or papers in their socks saved them.

When we reached Cologne a crowd came round the waggons, jeering at us and as we marched out they prodded us with umbrellas and pelted us and shouted "Shoot them dead,"

"Shoot them dead" and drew their fingers across their throats.

We had still nothing to eat or drink.

During this journey one man in the second waggon went mad, two in the same waggon tried to commit suicide and about 20 of the men there, urinated blood. I was told this after we reached Cologne by other Belgians in that waggon and I saw some of these 20 men and spoke with them and they were ill and drawn and haggard.

In my waggon one man tore out the lining of his coat and chewed it up and removing his shoe used it as a vessel to drink his own water. Only one of us attempted to prevent him doing this, but he would not be prevented. This was after two days from Louvain. The man lived in the same street as I did, in the next door house; the man who tried to stop him was a well-to-do man, but I do not know his name.

When we were marched away, some limped and some were bent down and all were

filthily dirty and terribly exhausted.

We were taken to an "Exhibition" and placed in ranks facing officers and soldiers; the soldiers levelled rifles at us. One of the officers said, after a pause, "We will put off the shooting until to-morrow." Then we were put to sleep on planks laid on the ground, and in

the open. There was no covering over us and it was raining.

The next day, Tuesday, a soldier told one of the Belgians, who spoke German, that the officer in charge had received a communication from the American Ambassador that we were not soldiers and must be set free. On that evening at 7 o'clock we were each given a small piece of new bread and some very, very dirty-looking water. That night we were put into a train, in passenger coaches, but 25 were put into my compartment and I believe the others also; we were crushed together, some slept on the racks and some got under the seats. Then we were sent to Belgium, to Schaerbeek, Brussels, and we got there the next forenoon. We had nothing more to eat or drink during the whole of the time we were out of Belgium.

When we arrived M. Max, the Burgomaster, and a lot of gentlemen with him came to

meet the train.

We were got out of the train—M. Max and the people with him were crying when they saw the condition our poor fellows were in-M. Max sent for food and drink and people brought to us bread and meat, wine and coffee; we could not wait—we tore it to pieces and snatched it in pieces from them—they brought us cigarettes and tobacco. The Germans were there, they would not give us up; they marched us on foot to Vilvorde, for eight hours we walked. At Schaerbeek 20 or more of us were so exhausted they had to be left behind and M. Max was allowed to keep them. On the way to Vilvorde one man sprang into the water, a canal—he was mad then—the German soldiers threw empty bottles at this man in the water, they were bottles they got from the houses as they passed and drunk from on the way.

Towards evening the soldiers ordered us to get out and disperse, saying they were sick of us; there were hundreds of soldiers. We began to run away; fear gave us wings and we ran very fast, but after a little the soldiers fired a few shots after us and one man was wounded in

the arm.

We went towards Malines and came to a bridge on the other side of which were Belgian soldiers. They challenged us and we told them we were Belgians who had been prisoners and had been released by the Germans. They told us to go into the woods for the night, as the bridge had been mined and was unsafe. The next morning the Belgian soldiers showed us another way. I went to Ghent, then to Bruges on foot and then to Ostend, always on foot, and then I took the boat to England.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was in Louvain with my wife and daughter from the time that the Germans entered it until the 26th August. The Germans entered the town on the 19th August. My house was situated near the Place de la Station, and I had a good opportunity of seeing what happened. The first thing that alarmed me was a notice they put on the wall in French and in German—not in Flemish—saying that all arms were to be brought, and that in case of shooting on a German soldier, or molesting them, all the civilians would be shot without distinction,

men, women and children, and the town completely destroyed.

On the morning of the 26th I heard a gun, artillery, from the direction of Malines, and in the afternoon the firing became nearer and the Germans were routed. The Germans at this time were very numerous, and ammunition carts were just in front of my house. At about 7 o'clock in the evening I noticed smoke coming from the centre of the town, and I drew the attention of a friend of mine to it, and we decided to go and see what it wasbut put it off for a short while. Just before eight we heard one shot from a rifle, followed immediately after by two others, and then began a general firing. I went at once to my garden, the bullets were passing quite close to me and I went back to the house and to the balcony, and there I saw the Germans, not fighting Belgians, but fighting each other at a distance of 200 or 300 yards. At 8 o'clock it begins to be dark, but I am perfectly certain it was Germans fighting Germans. The firing on both sides passed right in front of my house and from the other side of the railway. I was low down on the balcony, quite flat, and watched it all. They fought hard for about an hour. The officers whistled and shouted out orders; there was terrible confusion until each side found out they were fighting each other and then the firing ceased. About half an hour, on the other side of the railway, I heard a machine gun. I was told afterwards that the Germans were killing civilians with it. It went on certainly for at least five or six minutes, stopping every now and then for a few seconds. By this time the fire which I had first noticed had grown very much and the sky was red with the burning of a cluster of houses. Just before I heard the machine gun the Germans took the horses out of a Belgian Red Cross car, frightened them so that they ran down the street, and

then shot three of them. Two fell quite close to my house. They then took a Belgian Artillery helmet and put it on the ground, so as to prepare a mise-en-scène to pretend that the Belgians had been fighting in the street. After that there was a little lull and then they began to burn the houses in the Rue Marie Thérèse and the Place de la Station, and they put up a barricade across the road with three machine guns pointing towards the direction of Boulevard de Diest. Shortly after 10 shots very numerous were heard coming from all quarters, but not as if there was fighting. At 12 o'clock midnight my friends (names given) knocked at my door, telling me that the Germans were destroying the town, that it was all on fire and that the fighting had been amongst the Germans themselves by mistake. I have very good cellars in my house and I invited many of my neighbours to come and take shelter. They had to climb over the walls of the gardens and by 1 o'clock on the afternoon of August 27th there were about 36 of us altogether. I could see German soldiers in the bedroom of a lady who was taking refuge with us. The Germans picked up the little toilet ornaments and silver things and put them in their pocket and threw others down or out of the window, and I could see the Germans examining the value of them before taking or throwing them away. At least six or eight of my friends saw this going on and afterwards the Germans set fire to the houses from top to bottom at the same time. They did this in bodies of about 15. Then they passed to the next house, and so on, doing just the same thing. When we saw that the Germans had entered the house of our neighbour, we decided to escape over the garden walls. When we were crossing a particularly high wall my wife was on the top of the wall and I was helping her to get down when a party of 15 Germans came up with rifles and revolvers. They pointed their weapons at us telling us to stop. I told them not to shoot my wife, but to shoot me. They did not shoot. They told us to come down, which we did. My wife did not follow as quickly as they wished. One of them made a lunge at her with his bayonet. I seized the blade of the bayonet and stopped the lunge. The German soldier then tried to stab me in the face with his bayonet, but I ducked and he hit my hat with his bayonet, and I only got a scratch on the scalp. I then seized the German's rifle with my two hands and appealed to a non-commissioned officer who was present, asking him if the German had orders to kill us. This man gave some order to the soldiers and they fell back. We were ordered to put our hands up. They kept hitting us with the butt ends of their rifles, the women and children as well as the men. There were 36 of us in the garden. They struck us on the elbows because they said our arms were not raised high enough. I was carrying some parcels containing, amongst other things, jewellery, and they made me drop my parcels. They knocked the parcels out of my hands three times, and on the third occasion I was not able to pick them up again. I had bruises all over from their maltreatment, and so had my wife. We were driven in this way through a burning house to the Place de la Station. There were a number of prisoners already there. In front of the station entrance there were the corpses of three civilians killed by rifle fire. The women and the children were separated. The women were put on one side and the men on the other. One of the German soldiers pushed my wife with the butt end of his rifle, so that she was compelled to walk on the three corpses. Her shoes were full of blood. The men were drawn up in the square in front of the Place de Diest. The women and children were confined behind barbed wire in the station yard. Two or three German officers, one of whom was very big, and another thin and very young, came and told us many times that we were going to be shot. They came not only to the group of men but to the women and children also. Other prisoners were continually being brought in from all parts of the town and were brutally ill-treated. One young woman on passing by the three corpses had a fit of hysterics, whereupon the German soldiers struck her most brutally with the butt ends of their rifles. I saw one prisoner with a bayonet wound behind his ear. A boy of 15 had a bayonet wound in his throat in front. A German soldier (the same who had tried to bayonet my wife) came to me and spoke to me in German. I said I did not understand, whereupon he said: "Here is something you will understand," and struck me several blows with his fists in the face and elsewhere. I saw the Germans use violence towards an idiot and also towards an old paralytic man. It is fair to say that one German soldier did help the paralytic at last by giving him a sack to sit down on. It is also fair to say that the big German officer, of whom I spoke, told the soldiers that they were using more violence than they ought. The officers next said that they were going to use us, that is to say the men, of whom there were 500 or 600, as a screen, because there was going to be fighting between French and Belgian soldiers. Behind us there was a barricade with three machine guns. Certain orders were given. The bulk of the German troops began to retreat, and those who were immediatly round us posted themselves behind lamp posts, in the doorways of the houses, and behind the posts of the electric tramways, as skirmishers. They actually fired, but not in our direction. This was all arranged to frighten us. An officer came out of the station and fired his revolver twice into one of the corpses for pure amusement. We were then told that we were all going to be shot at once. I asked permission to kiss my wife, but this was refused. We were then divided into two groups. One was taken off by the Boulevard de Diest and the other remained in the station yard. I was with the latter group. The Germans took us by fives, beginning at the head of the group. They put them on carts in the station yard. Shots were fired all the time in the station yard,

but I do not know if these men were killed. The priests were treated more brutally than the rest. I saw one belaboured with the butt ends of rifles. Some German soldiers came up to me sniggering, and said that all the women were going to be raped, that is to say, they spoke and I did not understand what they meant. When they saw that I did not understand, they explained themselves by gestures. We were afterwards told we were not going to be shot but were going to be sent to Germany. I spoke to a German officer asking him to be merciful to an old man who was a prisoner with us, whose wife was paralysed at home. The officer asked me to speak in French which he said he spoke perfectly. I asked him about the horrible acts committed by the soldiers. He told me that he was merely executing orders and that he himself would be shot if be did not execute them. The old man was released and shortly afterwards we were all allowed to go, that is to say the 40 of us who remained. My wife and daughter were released at the same time. As I was going home with my wife and child, I had to cross a barricade just at the beginning of the Boulevard de Tirlemont. A German soldier posted there pointed out a house on the boulevard from which he said the civilians had fired and killed a German officer. The house in question was the house of a man whom I knew and was empty. The streets were full of empty wine bottles. We saw many bodies of men, women, and children, in the street all of them lying face downwards. None of them had any arms beside them, only packages. The latter had been ransacked. I saw B... and his wife, the latter was wounded. On the road I saw some nuns who had been driven from their convent. One of them was old and at the point of death, and was being carried by the others in an armchair with the help of a priest. I also saw many patients whom the Germans had turned out of the hospitals in order to burn the hospitals. At Tervueren, I spoke to a German officer who told me that the inhabitants of Louvain had burnt Louvain themselves because they did not wish to supply food and quarters for the German army. My wife told me that a German non-commissioned officer said, while they were prisoners, that he was executing his orders, and that he was executing them with great unwillingness.

University Student.

I left Louvain at 8 a.m. on the 26th August, and as I was leaving I saw at the corner of Rue Louis Melsen the carbonised body of a dead civilian, and on a lawn round the statue of Van der Weyer about 50 corpses of civilians who had been shot lying on the flower beds, and German soldiers walking about among the bodies pushing them aside with their feet. At that time all the hotels in front of the station were on fire, and also the nearest houses in the Rue de la Station and Boulevard de Diest.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 19th August, I was arrested by the Germans in Louvain and ordered to stop as I was on the road trying to escape, with my mother, my father-in-law, my mother-in-law, my wife and my little child. This was on the road going to Aerschot. The men were ordered to go to one side of the road, the women and the children to the other. While I was standing there I saw in front of me a German officer of high rank who some three days before had taken a bath at the establishment of which I was manager, living there with my wife and child. This officer had made himself very pleasant to us, and had even played with my little child for more than half an hour, and had given him sweets. I spoke to this officer in French, which he understood. I reminded him that he was the gentleman who had taken a bath at my establishment and played with my child, and I asked him if I might request a favour from him. He replied "All right, what is it?" I asked him if I and my family might go on along the road. He did not answer, but began to laugh and jeer at me (rire au nez) and struck me a blow with his fist on my face, and called me "Schweineluder" (filthy pig). He then went away laughing. After being made to wait for three hours, as described in my statement, we were placed in a cattle truck which was 18 inches deep in dung. There were between 40 and 50 of us in the truck. The truck was a closed one and we were in the truck the whole night. In the morning the train started. Three sentries came in then and they stood by the door, which they opened. During the journey, passing the different places in Germany, the people made signs at us by drawing their hands across their throats, and even the children threatened us with sticks. Arrived at Cologne we were placed in a public park, where we had to sleep on the ground in the open air without any covering. We had had no food up to this time and had had no chance to buy any. They gave us bread in the morning at nine o'clock. We had been without food for two days and nights, and nothing to drink till we got to Cologne, except that one of my fellow-prisoners had a bottle of water from which we just wet our lips. At noon of the same day we were put into a train again, into a third or fourth class compartment. In my compartment there were 18 prisoners—there was only room for about eight people—or ten seated close together; we were 48 hours in this train. About 10.30 p.m. on the second day, we arrived at Brussels, when for the first time on the journey we were given board by some civilians. We had had water given us three times on the journey. In the course of the journey the train stopped at Henne, a village on the frontier. Here, at about 3.30 o'clock in the morning of the 22nd August, when it was dawn and already light, I saw one of the prisoners who had left his е 9

carriage and was standing by the line about 10 or 12 yards from me. I was looking through the closed window. The people who were in the carriage which the man had left, told me afterwards that the man had gone out to satisfy nature. I have forgotten the man's name, which I knew. He belonged to the village of Wygmaël. He was going towards the side of the line to make water when three German soldiers approached him. One of them caught hold of him and threw him on the ground and he was bayoneted by one or other of them in his left side. The man cried out; then the German soldier withdrew his bayonet and showed his comrades how far his bayonet had gone in. He then wiped the blood off the bayonet by drawing it through his hand. I do not know to what regiment the soldiers belonged, they wore a pickelhaube helmet with a number on it, but I cannot remember the number. I think it was either 15 or 115, but I am not sure. The three soldiers had got out of the train to go after the man. There was an officer in command of the soldiers on the train. I heard an order given, but I did not grasp the meaning of it. The order was given as the soldiers were going towards the man.

After the soldier had wiped his bayonet he and his comrades turned the man over on his face. About half an hour later four civilians came with a barrow and took the dead man away. A few minutes after the German soldier had wiped his bayonet he put his hand in his pocket and took out some bread, which he ate. After this incident we were allowed

to get out of the train three times in 48 hours to relieve ourselves.

At Liège the train stopped. I got out on the platform of the carriage to try and get some water. I saw a man from one of the front carriages (as I afterwards heard) run over by the train. I was on the platform at the end of the coach in which I was riding, and I felt and saw the coach go over his body. The train was stopped. I heard a German officer say, "See whether it is a German or a prisoner." His body was taken away. I heard afterwards from a fellow villager of this man that he had killed himself on purpose. The name of the man's village was Thildonck. When I was at Cologne there were about 120 of us, and three of them certainly had gone out of their minds.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was in the same train which came from Cologne to Brussels. I remember the train stopping at Henne. I was sitting facing the window. I heard that two men left the train. I only saw one. Three German soldiers went after him. I heard shouting, but I do not know whether it came from an officer. The soldiers approached the man, one of them threw him down on his back and one of them drove his bayonet through the man's chest. The man screamed out, and put his arms out and was dead. The Germans then turned him over on his face. Later on four civilians came with a wheelbarrow and took away the body. This happened in the morning at dawn about 3.30 on the 27th August. I am sure of the date, and I think last witness must be mistaken as to the date. The man was about 10 or 15 yards from where I was. I do not know the man's name or his village. After the man was killed the German soldier withdrew his bayonet, he started cleaning it with his hands and showing to his comrades the depth that his bayonet had entered the man's body. The German soldiers wore helmets with a number on them, but no spike. I do not know what the number was. It was after the soldier had wiped his bayonet that they turned the man over on his face. Almost immediately after the soldier had wiped his bayonet he started eating some bread and butter.

All the journey from Louvain to Cologne we had had nothing to eat, only a little water when we got into Germany. We got to Cologne about half-an-hour after midnight, and were taken to a place where there had been a fair, and I slept on a sort of joy-wheel. We first got some food about half past ten the next morning—when they gave us some bread—12 loaves for 120 people.

At Liège I saw a man taken from under the train, which had run over him. The train had run over his stomach, and I saw and recall the contractions of his mouth when he was taken out. I do not know whether the man was trying to escape or whether he was trying to commit suicide. I think he must have jumped out before the train stopped at Liège. I heard

people say who he was and where he came from, but I cannot remember now.

We went from Louvain to Cologne in cattle trucks. There was about a foot of manure in the trucks. From Cologne to Brussels there were about 18 of us in a compartment for 10.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the bombardment of Louvain I was on patrol duty with 14 other Belgian soldiers. Just outside Louvain, on the road to Lierre, I saw a civilian hanging to a tree. On the ground beside the tree there were a woman, aged about 35, and a child, about two years, bound together. The mother was lying on her back; she had no skirt on, and merely had her chemise, which was torn open. The body was cut from the neck to the stomach. It seemed that a knife had been used. The child was naked, and I saw that her head was severed from her body, and her clothes were scattered around.

The man hanging to the tree was fully dressed, and had apparently been shot.

d)

e 12

SINGLE WOMAN.

On Tuesday the 25th August at about 4 p.m. there was great agitation in the town, the Germans having announced that the French were at the gates of the town. I heard firing which appeared to be outside the town. The people hid in their own houses. At about 8 o'clock I heard a lot of firing and also heard the working of the mitrailleuse which was at the station and also at the town hall. In Station Street the Germans cut down the tram wires, and all the windows of the houses were broken. Many soldiers and horses were killed. The German soldiers were drunk, both cavalry and infantrymen, and were firing upon each other in the streets.

On the same evening the Germans fired the four corners of the town by means of naphtha, with which they sprinkled the houses. In the group of soldiers there was a company of incendiaries, whom I saw. They had a broad belt, and in front of it were the words "God is with us" in German, and opposite were the words "Company of Incendiaries." Some of these belts were afterwards found in the street, worn by soldiers who had been killed or wounded, by their comrades and not by civilians, who were all unarmed. On these belts were all the materials for putting houses on fire, namely, a hatchet, a syringe, a small shovel, and also a revolver. The light caused by the fire was very great. I spent the night in the cellar with my grandmother.

The German soldiers broke the doors of the houses with the butt ends of their rifles. The soldiers knew that the people were in the cellars. They, however, shot through the gratings into the cellars. The persons who opened the door in response to the knocking of the German soldiers were shot upon opening the door; and the people who tried to escape were also shot. On that night about 100 people were killed, men, women, and children, who tried to escape. I saw their corpses the very next day, when trying to flee from the Germans. Some of them were in pools of blood. I also saw some children (I cannot say how many) who

had been killed by bayonet thrusts.

On the 26th August at 3 a.m. went into the yard of my uncle's house. He lived next door to my grandmother; and I got over the garden wall by the aid of a ladder. The firing still continued, and the houses were still burning. I then went over three walls into the garden of a gentleman named X..., into which he had also fled, because the houses at the corner of the street had caught fire, and soon after the next house caught fire. While I was with X..., a German officer who knew him and had dined at the house, called and said that we were not to go, but to remain where we were. I do not know the name of this officer's regiment; he was a big man, of about 45 years of age, and nearly grey. He also said, "I will bring you here two wounded Germans, and then in that way your house will be safe." Half an hour afterwards another officer came and said that we and every other person were to leave, if we desired to save our lives, and to go in the direction of the station, to go to Liège. Everybody then left the house. I saw the fire and ruins about us, and heaps of corpses of men and horses along the road. Many civilians were killed in rows. I also saw some German soldiers lying dead. There were no Belgian soldiers. At the station my grandmother and I were made prisoners by an officer, who told me that we were to go to Liège. Soon afterwards, however, he left us.

A simple soldier then approached me, struck me on the shoulder with his fist, and then kicked me and said, "Look at the corpses of the civilians who shot our soldiers, and whom we have butchered." There were six corpses lying next to each other, in a little public garden near the station. The men were placed in rows of five, and the fifth person was taken and shot in my presence. If the fifth man happened to be old, his place was taken by the sixth man if he happened to be younger. This was also witnessed by my grandmother, my uncle and his wife, and my cousin, and our servant. My aunt was taken prisoner when standing next to me. She was taken to the station with my cousin (her baby) and kept there until the morning. It rained all the night, and she wrapped the baby in her skirt. The baby cried for food and a German soldier gave the child a little water, and took my aunt and the child to an empty railway carriage. Some other women got into the carriage with her, but during the

whole night the Germans for amusement fired at the carriage.

My uncle was taken prisoner with 74 men, and taken to the trenches and made to stand in front of the German soldiers when fighting the Belgians. My uncle and the other prisoners had their hands tied behind their backs. They were afterwards told to confess to a priest

who was with them, as they were about to die.

My grandmother, myself, and our servant fled from the station towards the country. A troop of Germans arrived at the bridge from a place called Blauwput, and they had big hatchets in their hands, and they were setting fire to the last houses on the Boulevard de Diest. By the canal, some days later, I saw the dead body of a priest who belonged to one of the churches in the town. I was told that the hands and legs of several persons were cut off and exhibited in the road, but I did not see this.

We then fled towards Oost Cappel, where we passed the night in a big brewery;

100 people had already taken refuge there. We slept on the stones.

On the 27th August I heard firing from the direction of the country side. At about 10 o'clock we left for Wilsele and spent the night there with a friend. In the afternoon many German soldiers passed, with several prisoners—the women and children in carts, and the

I we

men on foot—who had been taken from the villages. The prisoners were taken to the station. The same night I slept round a table with the people of the house.

On Friday, the 28th August, large numbers of soldiers passed on their way to Louvain, taking with them men, women, and children. I saw a man shot dead, and his body thrown

into a potato field; he had attempted to escape.

About mid-day another crowd of fugitives from Louvain arrived; they had come from the outskirts of the town. I heard that they had been warned to go to a distance of 3 kilometres from the town to avoid a further bombardment, and that this was a trap in order to capture them on their way. At 4 o'clock I returned to Louvain because I dare not remain on the country side for fear of being shot. I saw three German soldiers by the railway firing at the people, and, to escape from them, I and other people went into a little house close to a foundry. After about 30 minutes we went to Louvain by way of the bridge. There a German soldier compelled 25 persons, nearly all women and children, of whom I was one, to go down on our knees, with our stomachs nearly on the ground, and put out our hands for half an hour. The soldier levelled his rifle all the time at us to prevent us from getting up. Then I saw a wagon full of German soldiers going to the canal, and they passed us. They then set the foundry on fire. I heard the sound of explosions, and I think they used explosives at the foundry. The heat was so great on the bridge that we begged to be allowed to go away, but this was refused. After waiting a long time we were allowed to pass, and got into Louvain, where we saw fire everywhere. At Canal Street we were taken prisoners by four German soldiers, and taken to the garrison, where there were about 1,000 prisoners. An officer took my grandmother, myself, and our servant into the drawing room of a house connecting with the garrison. This officer was named Hearnts, and he behaved very well towards my grandmother and myself. One of the German soldiers told me to leave the door of our room shut, and said, "If you open this door you will be shot." On Saturday (29th August) Commander Hearnts gave us a cup of coffee, and at 3 o'clock we were allowed to go free. By order of the commander three soldiers took our luggage to the house of a friend of ours. We stayed there three days All the other prisoners were taken to Germany.

I asked the Commander why we had been spared, and he said "We will not hurt you

any more. Stay in Louvain. All is finished.'

On Sunday, the 30th August, I heard the sound of cannon in the distance.

On Tuesday, the 1st September, we left the house of our friend and went to the house of an aunt of mine. In the morning I went to Kessel Loo for meat, as I could not obtain any in Louvain. In the afternoon I went to Herent for some milk. I went into one of the houses there and saw the corpses of a woman and her son, lying in pools of blood. I was informed that they had been dead a week. A sheet had been placed over their heads, because there were thousands of flies about.

On the 8th September many German soldiers came into the town, and many of the houses which had not then been burned were pillaged by these soldiers, along with some

prostitutes whom the soldiers had picked up.

As my house was still standing I went to see it. I had to go with a soldier, and had to have a passport. When I got there four soldiers came out of the cellar. One of them held a revolver at my head, but the soldier who accompanied me presented my passport, and I was allowed to go in. I went to the house a second time, and there saw 20 soldiers in the house. Everything in the place had been ransacked, and the place looked like a pigstye. I went to, the house a third time, and the soldier who accompanied me tried to kiss me, but I resented and he pushed me down the stairs, and afterwards got hold of me and kissed me. He did not interfere with me in any other way.

In the street I saw a young girl about 16, running away from a drunken soldier, who told me he wished to violate her. She ran to an officer, and complained to him, and he shot

the soldier on the spot.

e 14

WIDOW.

When the Germans occupied Louvain, a German General, whose name I cannot recollect, was billeted at No. . . Rue de la Station. The General left about two days before the 25th of August, 1914, and gave my master a certificate to the effect that he had been well treated, and said that we might show it to any other German officers who came there and that it would be a protection to us. When the German General left two other officers were billeted in my master's house.

On the 25th of August, 1914, we had supper as usual in my master's house at about 8 p.m., but the two German officers did not come in to supper on this evening. At about 9 p.m. my master went to bed. His son, who slept in the same room with his father, also went to bed. The other servants in the house and I went to bed about 9.30 p.m. By orders of the German soldiers all doors of the said house were left open and all lights lit.

Very soon after I had gone to my bedroom I saw flames out of my room from some burning house near by. I therefore went and roused my master and his son. As my master and his son came down the stairs they were seized by German soldiers and both were tied up and led out, my master being tied with a rope and his son with a chain.

My said master and his son were dragged outside. I did not actually see what happened outside, as by this time I had gone into the kitchen, but a man I knew told me that my master and his son went on their knees outside their door and that the German soldiers killed both of them. My master was both bayonetted and shot and his said son was shot. I heard shots in my kitchen at the time this murder was committed. I was present at the burial of both my master and his son, which took place 13 days after they were murdered as aforesaid. They could not be buried before because a house near by had fallen down after the fire referred to in the next paragraph and the bodies could not be got at.

After my master and his son were taken outside German soldiers came back into the house and poured some form of inflammable liquid over the floors of the lower rooms and set fire to the house. I escaped from the house by another staircase to that by which my master and his son had descended. I got into the garden, climbed a wall by the aid of a

ladder, and so escaped.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I was in Louvain when the German soldiers burnt the town. I am a civilian, and am not, and was not, at the date of the occurrences hereinafter mentioned in the Belgian

During the fire I saw some German soldiers tie a man's hand behind his back. They then made the man run along the street and shot him as he ran. This man was a civilian, but I do not know his name.

In another street in Louvain at the time when the town was burnt I came across 19 dead Belgians lying on the ground with their hands stretched out. They had all been killed by bullet wounds, and apparently had been shot while holding up their hands. All these men were civilians.

I was myself made to kneel down in a street in Louvain and hold up my hands. There were many other Belgian civilians made to do the same thing along with me. I managed to get up and run away, and as I ran I saw nine of these civilians shot and killed by German soldiers.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

Prisoners, consisting of civilians, civic guards, and soldiers, were marched round the town on the Wednesday in batches of two or three hundred, German soldiers in front, at the side and behind. They broke the windows of the ground floor of houses with their rifles and bayonets. They selected certain houses because they said people had fired from them.

The Rue de la Station is the principal street leading from the Hôtel de Ville to the station and is about a kilometre in length. I was walking behind soldiers who were breaking windows there. Then they threw a white powder in and also on windows and shutters.

They then threw in straw bottle covers which blazed as if they were soaked in paraffin. They lit them and threw them in. The powder made the house on fire in "no time." They carried it in a box and threw it in with little shovels. I can't say whether they intended to burn the whole street down. This was going on for five days. They chose fresh houses every We were prisoners in the station and were marched round as I have described for three There are about 500 houses burnt in and near the square, and two principal streets, the Rue de Diest and Rue de la Station. The excuse always was that shots were fired at soldiers. People were ordered to give up their arms to the Burgomaster. All the Civic Guard did so. If any one had shot a German he could easily have been caught.

Six men were coming back from work in company; there was fighting going on between Germans and Belgians at the time. They were going along the Rue de Malines; our troops were firing from a hill towards Malines. A German patrol were standing in a café belonging to my mother and ran at and caught them and took them prisoners about six o'clock; when it was dark they made them walk in front of the soldiers. Our soldiers had retired and ceased fighting then. This was on the Tuesday night. They were told to say "Gy most op de Soldaten niet schieten"—Flemish for "Don't fire on the soldiers" and they had to hold their hands up. They marched them to the Louvain Canal. They were shot by the German patrol from behind. I could find people in Louvain who saw it, and I know where they are buried. It is covered with lime.

We were told at the hospital there was a young girl brought in wounded. Her father and mother told me the story themselves, they came to the hospital when the ambulance brought her. About five or six soldiers put her father and mother out of the house, they searched the house and found the girl in bed. The mother herself told me at the hospital that all of them had raped her. She was crying, but gave me the impression that she was speaking the truth. This was one of the ordinary hospitals at Louvain. It is the University hospital; in war time, a Red Cross Hospital. I feel sure that the father and mother could be found; they were middle class people I should think. The girl died a few hours afterwards. The mother told me she (the daughter) had three bayonet wounds in the breast.

The railway station was full of prisoners, some were taken to Germany. I went in one of the first trains—about 4 p.m. in broad daylight. They consisted of cattle trucks ventilated only by four small square holes about a foot and a quarter square. In three days we got to Cologne. They only gave us a few biscuits each. We were not allowed to get out to drink

e 15

water and they gave us none. Three were dead when we were taken out. There was written on the wagon in German "Civilians who shot at the soldiers at Louvain." I did not notice it when we started. I do not think any of them had, because they were too frightened of the Germans, but of course there may have been some who did. I asked to have my eye treated. A soldier put his hand on his bayonet and asked if I would like it out. I thought he was going to poke my eye out. He started laughing, and said, "Anywayit won't matter, you'll soon be hanged or shot." I was paraded with about 300 others before some officers the day after I arrived at Cologne. They chose apparently every sixth man. I was not chosen. They shot about 60 there and then, we all saw them shot. A day or two afterwards we were marched through the town for the people to see. About 100 of us were kept in wagons. Not even straw to sleep on—30 or 40 were together. A day or two after the 60 were shot we were all paraded on the drilling ground. Ropes were put round the necks of a certain number, I can't say how many but I got one. They said they were going to hang us. After about 10 minutes an order came to shoot and not hang us. They had a firing squad ready at once and put five or six up, but did not shoot them. We stayed at Cologne a good week and then they took us back to the Belgian frontier in the same trucks, but only about 30 or 40 this time. When we went to Cologne we were pushed in "like sardines in a box," about 100 in each truck. We were escorted by Bavarians, who opened the carriage doors and let us all go at Limburg.

I made my way round Diest, avoiding towns until I got to Antwerp, and came to England

in a refugee ship.

MECHANIC.

On a Tuesday in August (I think it was the 25th) I saw some German soldiers break open the cellars of the houses in Louvain. The soldiers belonged to the 120th Regiment of Infantry. One of the soldiers (who was drunk) began to shout at some of his colleagues. An officer came along shortly afterwards and said that the civilians had shot at the soldiers (which was not true), and then the soldiers commenced to shoot at the civilians. I saw 20 civilians shot; none of them had any arms. My father was killed in the Rue de Bruxelles on that day. I did not see any women shot, but I saw one woman lying in the street who had been cut in two with a bayonet; a child, who was not killed, was beside her. I saw another soldier dragging a woman along the street by the hair. I also saw a soldier carrying a man's head on the end of his bayonet.

I hid during the night with my mother and my little sister and my brother in the cellar

of a brewery. The Germans then ordered all the civilians to leave the town.

I walked along the canal and there saw the corpses of about 20 men, all civilians, who had been shot. I did not know any of them. One of the men had a grey beard, and I noticed that some of them had wedding rings on their fingers. I saw four men bound together. Two of them were dead and the other two still living. The two latter begged me

to unbind them, but I dare not stop as the Germans were pressing us.

With a lot of other civilians I went to the gate of the canal, and when I was about eight kilometres from the town I was made prisoner by some German soldiers, who belonged to the 127th Regiment of Infantry, along with a large number of civilians. The women were separated from the men and set free. The men were taken into a big field and an hour later we were taken to Louvain Station. At 9 o'clock we were placed in large cattle trucks in which I was placed. The men were strangers to me. We then went on our way to Cologne and were kept for 24 hours in the truck; the truck itself was in darkness, but there was a light at one side where the sentinels were. At Liège we had one wine bottle of water amongst the whole of the persons in the truck. We received no food. The train arrived at Cologne at 2.30 a.m. We had not been allowed to leave the train to obey the calls of nature, and all of us had retained ourselves until we got to Cologne, where we went on our knees and begged the soldiers to allow us to get down.

We were then taken to a park at Cologne and placed on a "joy wheel." There were in

all about 2,000 prisoners.

While we were at the "fair" I saw a Belgian priest, who belonged to Kessel Loo (I do not know his name), being beaten by six German soldiers. This priest was one of five who had

accompanied us from Louvain.

After being three hours at the "fair" we were taken to another place and were made to stand in rows of three, and the soldiers stood in front of us ready to fire. A German soldier arrived on horseback and brought a despatch to the officer in command. I then heard the officer say in German, "It is the Kaiser's will." We were then again put on the "joy wheel" and a loaf of bread was then given for each 10 men. This was the first piece of food we had had, but the bread was hard, sour and blue moulded. It was like Belgian bread but of German make, and it had the number "11" upon it. (It was about 10 by 5 by 3 inches.) I was very faint from want of food. Many of the prisoners were nearly mad with hunger.

I slept for four hours on the "joy wheel," on which I noticed the name of "Hachenrad."

We were then given a glass of water each.

We were then placed in a fourth class compartment of another train and the train left Cologne. On the way children in the roads threw stones at us. We then went to Verviers, where some of the inhabitants gave us food, but this the soldiers took from us. The train then went to Liège. There I asked one of the sentinels in the train where the priest of

Kessel Loo was, and he replied in French that the priest was shot.

We were then taken to Brussels. There the burgomaster, M. Max, was on the station and gave us some new white bread. The train then went to Schaerbeck, and we got out of the train. We had some loaves thrown to us by the soldiers there, but they were very sour and we could not eat them. We were then marched to Vilvorde in rows of six. I was in the last row. We were made to run quickly, and the soldiers struck us in the back with their rifles and on the arms with the bayonets. At Vilvorde we were told we were free, after being prisoners for five days and five nights. I there met my little brother for the first time. He had been a prisoner, but not with me. Germans told us that the Belgians were massed at Sempst. We went on the way to Sempst, but on the way were again made prisoner. Some of the Germans there spoke Flemish, and I told them we had been to Germany and we were

I arrived at Sempst and there was again made prisoner with my brother (aged 12) and two men. There were about 15 Germans. They thrust their bayonets quite close to our chests. Then four of them prepared to shoot us, but they did not shoot. Then two German chests. Then four of them prepared to shoot us, but they did not shoot. soldiers told us we were to go with them and fetch some other civilians who had run away, and we went with them and they captured other men. One of the prisoners went mad and I was made to hold him and he hurt me very much. I do not know his name, but he came from Louvain. We then met the captain of the German soldiers and he allowed us to go. Those civilians who could speak a little German were given passports on which were placed the words, "Direct to Malines." This was in the middle of the night. We were told to cry out on being challenged, "Pass. Halt. Flüchtlinge; fugitifs."

PRIEST.

On Thursday, 27th August 1914, I was at Louvain, and four German soldiers came with a Louvain policeman and announced that all citizens must leave, as the troops were about to bombard the town. I was the last man to leave and as I left I saw the Germans driving the women and children (who had fled) back into the town; they were crying. When I left, the town was in flames; the fire was not caused by gun shots, but it was deliberately started. I personally saw a number of houses on fire which had not been struck by shot.

I spent the Thursday night, with other refugees, in an abandoned villa on the road to

Aerschot.

On the Friday morning, whilst I was seeking food, I came across a patrol of the 162nd Regiment of German infantry. The officer in command (qy. non-commissioned) presented a revolver at me and demanded my arms. I said I had none and was then put at the head of a number of refugees from Wygmael and marched, surrounded by German soldiers, back towards Louvain. The soldiers mocked me all the way, pulled my ears, and called me "swine," "black devil," "bloodhound." I was in my priest's dress. They charged me with having instigated firing on the German troops by Belgian civilians and with having told them to do these acts from the pulpit. They made me walk all through Louvain. Sometimes the soldiers called a halt whilst they went into houses, coming out again with knives, forks, &c.

I saw the corpses of five dead Belgian civilians lying beside the road, their hands bound behind their backs. They were males. I neither saw nor heard of any ill-treatment of either women or children in the neighbourhood of Louvain.

When I returned to Louvain as above-mentioned, the greater part of it had been burned. The burning began on the Tuesday (25th) with the barracks and was followed by the burning

(Wednesday) of the university, library, and the collegiate church of St. Peter.

The German soldiers gave as their reason for the acts of violence at Louvain that they had been fired on by civilians. To the best of my belief there was no such firing. Germans arrived on the Tuesday evening, having been engaged in recent fighting and many of them were drunk and firing at random. My belief is that they shot some of their own men and then, to excuse themselves, sought to throw the blame on the civilian residents. This was the common report, but I cannot speak of my own observation.

On being taken back to Louvain I was placed between four sentinels at the entrance of a

riding-school in the Rue du Manège, where there were 6,000 or 7,000 refugees, and mocked by the soldiers as before; they threatened me with the bayonet and sometimes put their rifles to their shoulders, making as if they were going to shoot me; but this did not take place

when officers were present.

I spent the Friday night in the riding-school. In the morning a woman was found to have become insane. A child of a few months died in the morning, I understood from privation (there was no milk to be had). During the night the glass roof of the riding-school broke through the heat of the burning buildings surrounding it.

In the morning a German officer came to the riding-school and made the following

announcement:-

"You are all free to leave, because Antwerp has surrendered; Namur has fallen with 25,000 soldiers; German warships have successfully bombarded the English ports; King Albert will dine in Berlin at mid-day, to-day, and we shall sup to-night in Paris.'

We left under armed escort for Windgat and on the way saw four burning farms, before which were three corpses burnt to a cinder. In a ditch near by were two peasants who had been shot.

At Windgat the refugees were sorted out in three groups, (1) women and children, (2) men 20 to 40, and (3) men over 40. I was placed in the 20 to 40 group, the man who gave the

order saying "he is the worst of the lot."

My group was marched through Herent, Bucken, and Campenhout. On the way there was not a single house which was intact; all had been burnt (not shelled). At Herent, a town of some 5,000 inhabitants, not a single house had been left standing. During the march a Belgian professor of agriculture fell with fatigue, whereupon a German officer said, "That is your work; if you had not fired upon us, this would not have happened."

Eventually we succeeded in reaching the Belgian lines about midnight on the Saturday,

29th August.

e 19

e 20

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On August 19th I took my wife and children to St. Gilles, near Termonde. I returned on the 21st, having heard that the Germans had been repulsed from Louvain. I walked from Landrécy, about 40 kilometres; at Campenhout, about 16 kilometres from Louvain, there were many refugees on the road, and when we got to Campenhout we were about 400 at least. The Germans stopped everyone to see if any of us were armed. None of us had. There were three cyclists with us. When they had been searched the Germans gave them permission to go on. I heard them do so; it was an officer who said it. They mounted their machines and when they had got about 200 yards away, there was another regiment of Germans there. I heard them shout "Halte" to the cyclists. I was then 50 yards from the cyclists, and heard it quite distinctly. The soldiers who called "Halt" were not more than 20 yards away from them, and I think they must have heard as they were much nearer to the soldiers than I was. The cyclists did not stop instantly, and they shot them dead before they got 5 yards further. I think they might have stopped, but cannot be sure it was possible. We had to walk by their dead bodies.

At Kessell there was an old man of about 70 living with his married daughter. Some German foot soldiers came to his house and tried to rape his daughter—her husband was probably with the troops. I heard there were four or five soldiers. She had cried out and neighbours came to help, and they did not accomplish their purpose. The old man protected her. They took him out and made him dig a grave and then they shot him and buried him in it. I assisted the neighbours to re-inter him. This all happened in the morning and we reburied him in the afternoon. The soldiers held their revolvers over him, and to prevent the neighbours giving any assistance. Kessell is 3 kilometres from Louvain. This happened on the 22nd, Saturday. I stayed at my café doing business until the 27th. On the 25th they began to bombard the town, and I stayed in my cellar—I am just opposite the library of the University—until I left.

German soldiers lodged with me before the 25th and bought wines, liqueurs, beer and food, and paid well for it. Afterwards an officer came and asked if I had many marks. I showed him what I had, and he took it all and put it in his pocket. I asked for a receipt, and he took out his revolver and pointed it at me saying, "Here is a receipt." On Thursday, at 10 or 11, a friend, a chemist, told me they were going to bombard the town, and we were

only to have two hours to escape, which we did.

On Tuesday, the 25th, they began to burn the town about 8 p.m.; they did so during two or three days. They drank a good deal and began to fire one on the other. They broke the windows and doors with axes or something of the sort and threw something in, and the houses were aflame at once. I saw no hostages marched through but I was in my cellar most of the time. They had not burnt my house when I left. Many of them were drunk, and fired wildly about. They were angry because they had been repulsed. They said the inhabitants fired at them. I saw no inhabitants fire. They had been disarmed. Very few carry revolvers or rifles.

When I escaped they were arresting all the civilians. I escaped by pretending to be an old man. (The witness here walked round the room bent forward with his coat collar turned up indicating how he had "pretended to be old.") I was carrying my friend's child. I escaped to St. (lilles, and some days afterwards I saw six men, including a relation of mine—his sister is married to the brother of the husband of my wife's sister—tied together. I came up just after this was done. I heard them crying out in pain before I got to them. They had killed them with bayonet wounds, covering them from head to foot. There were about 20 other people. The cries ceased 5 or 6 minutes before we got there. The soldiers had then gone further on. My brother-in-law was with me. We ran away when we saw they were already dead.

SINGLE WOMAN.

The 19th August Germans arrived in Louvain. Five were lodged with us. One, a man of 55, who did all he could to help us with advice and assistance. For three days the Germans did not behave badly. From the beginning I dressed as a man by the advice

of the German mentioned above. On 24th August we were obliged to come out of our houses by order of the Germans. At about 15 yards distance from us were a man and a woman with hands tied behind them whom I knew by sight, and their little girl about six years old. While we stood there the Germans began to cut the child in pieces with a bayonet, First they cut off the girl's foot, then her hands, then the forearm, and so on. I fainted. They also cut off the girl's head and stuck it on a lance. I did not see this last—my parents did. We were told it was to punish the parents because neither husband nor wife would consent that the wife should be given up to the Germans. I was taken into a room upstairs. When I recovered, and as I came down to go for shelter to the cellar, another German came in; he saw me and looked closely and tore off my cap. He saw I was not a boy. He had to go out and I hid myself in a wardrobe for 24 hours to escape them. We again had orders to leave the house, but the German first-mentioned advised us not and we returned therefore directly. As we did so we saw the Germans firing on all the people as they came out and but for the advice given us we should have been shot down as the rest were. While the Germans were with us we had to feed them. What they did not eat they threw on the ground. All we got was what we managed to abstract.

One day we had orders to find 26 eggs. My mother and I tried to find them. All we could find in three hours was 20. We told the Germans this. One of them threw them on the ground and said we must find 26 in the afternoon. After some time—and paying a

great price—my mother and I managed to collect them from farms in the country.

The 25th August the Germans began to make prisoners of all in the streets. My brother came to visit us, a civilian. The Germans would not let him in at first. Afterwards they gave him five minutes. We have never seen or heard a word of him after he left. This was

on 23rd August.

26th August the Germans were all called out themselves and our friendly German came back in a few minutes and told us to fly, as our house would be burnt. We got over the After a time we fell in with some German sentries. After some time we were allowed to go on with the Germans following behind and passing us on from outpost to outpost. We had to march with our hands up and without looking round for two hours. Our numbers grew up to about 40. We turned off the main road along a by-lane into a wood between two German posts and so escaped finally to Bruges.

Note.—This statement was also signed by the father and mother of the witness.

Belgian Refugee.

I was a member of the civic guard. The Germans arrived on August 19. On August 26th at 1 p.m. some German drummers and a policeman came to warn the civic guard that they must meet at 2 p.m. at the St. Mark's barracks, which was then burning, to assist in putting out the fire. When I came to the Grand' Place, I was made prisoner with the rest of the civic guard. Of the civic guard many had escaped; several did not respond to the call to assist in putting out the fire; others were taken prisoners from time to time in parties, not all at once. The Germans handled us roughly: I was struck with the butt end of a rifle several times

About 2 p.m. we were taken between two files of German soldiers through the Rue de Bruxelles. On the way the soldiers fired at the windows of the houses on both sides, and killed one of the civic guard, a butcher, who lived in the Rue de Namur. He was trying to leave the ranks, being afraid. I saw this done, and I saw an officer move the body to see if he were dead or not.

In the village of Herent near the shooting range, the officers ordered the soldiers to

unharness the horses from their heavy carriages and compelled us to draw them for three hours along dangerous narrow paths. We were then allowed an hour's rest.

In the meantime they made more prisoners, and they shot a civilian—not a member of the civic guard—who lived in the Rue de Bruxelles. I did not see him shot; but I saw him marched off by an officer and some soldiers with his hands bound.

At 10 p.m. we were told to lie down in a field; we were given no coverings of any sort,

nor straw, and it was raining; our feet were bound.

On August 27th, at 5 a.m., we got up, and at 6 a.m. we were marched through Bueken, Wespelaer, Campenhout, Thildonck, &c., with our hands bound by one long cord. All the while it rained it torrents. My hands were still marked with the cord the next day.

At 10 a.m. we were allowed some rest in a barn, having marched 20 to 25 kilometres. At midday we reached Campenhout, where we were made to dig trenches. At 7 p.m. we were taken through that village, and were allowed to sit down and rest; but we were placed behind the guns, which were bombarding Fort Waelhem. We could not be seen from the fort, because of the ground; but fortunately the fort did not reply.

More prisoners were brought in from the village of Campenhout, and we were sent into the village church at Campenhout to pass the night. On reaching there at 8 p.m. another man was called out by the Germans and accused of firing, but he proved that he had not, and was

released.

On August 28th, at 9 a.m., they inspected us all to see if we had any arms; then we were taken back to Louvain. The houses along the road were burning. The principal streets

of Louvain itself were burnt out. I saw at Herent and on the way many bodies of civilians—men and women. There were then about 1,000 of us prisoners; women and children as well as men.

We passed the night in the riding school, a large building on the cavalry exercise ground. Terrible scenes were witnessed there; one woman went mad, some children died and some

were born.

On August 29th they took us out of Louvain along the Malines road, between two files of German soldiers. At Herent they let the women and children, and the men of over 40, go free. The rest of us were taken to Boort Meerbeek, where we were released, being told to march straight on to Malines; if we did not or tried to escape, we should be shot.

march straight on to Malines; if we did not or tried to escape, we should be shot.

At 11 p.m. we came to the Fort of Waelhem; the Belgian sentinels fired on us, but we cried out that we were Belgians who had been taken prisoners by the Germans. They

satisfied themselves that this was so, and let us pass.

During the whole of these four days I received only two potatoes for food; some others had four. I saw many corpses; some had been shot with their hands tied behind their backs, others had been burnt in the houses, some had been killed with blows from the butt ends of rifles. I saw children who had been shot on the roads, not in Louvain itself. I heard that the Germans threw the bodies of dead civilians into the burning houses to get rid of the corpses.

While I was a prisoner, the Germans constantly told us that we should be shot the

next day.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I am a private soldier in the Belgian Army. In September I was engaged with others of my regiment searching houses in the outskirts of Louvain which had recently been occupied by German soldiers. On entering a house there, which had been partly burned, we found the dead body of a woman. The body was clothed and bound with cords, both arms and legs, and partly burned. In a well situated in the courtyard of the same house we found the dead body of a man hanging by a cord round his neck. The water reached about the middle of the body. The head was above water line. The man had died of suffocation, not drewning.

MARRIED WOMAN.

Before the war I lived at Louvain. My husband was chauffeur to a professor, and we occupy a cottage close to the professor's house. My husband is now serving in the Belgian army. When the professor left Louvain on 19th August I remained behind in charge. On the day the Germans entered Louvain I fled from my cottage into the town. I returned to my master's premises the next day. The German soldiers had then taken possession of the place, and they refused to let me enter. The Germans had five motor-vans outside the premises, and I saw them removing from my master's house wine, blankets, books, &c., and placing them in the vans. They stripped the whole place of everything of value, including furniture. The whole place was in disorder and I saw the soldiers smashing glass and crockery articles and the windows. I paid my last visit to my master's premises on Tuesday, 25th August, leaving there for the town of Louvain about six o'clock in the evening. That evening the German soldiers began firing on the whole civilian population. Large numbers were killed. I saw the dead bodies of two women and one child lying on the boulevard near the Tirlemont Gate. This was on the Thursday morning. Ten persons at least known to me personally were shot, and I remember the names of the following:—

[6 names given.]

On the Tuesday (25th) the Germans began systematically burning houses in and near the Tirlemont Road, and I saw them in flames. I noticed my master's house burning fiercely at 10 that night. It was entirely destroyed. In one house in this neighbourhood three women and two men were burned or suffocated in their cellar. This was in a hamlet called Mol, about 300 yards from my master's house. The houses were burnt by means of hand-bombs, some egg-shaped and some square. They broke shutters and windows and threw these bombs into the houses; they exploded and set the houses on fire.

Before 25th August I saw German soldiers in the Tirlemont Road breaking into houses with hatchets and removing portable contents into trucks. I saw the same thing at houses on the boulevard near the Tirlemont Gate; I noticed in particular wine being removed from the cellars. I know the Germans said there was firing by civilians; the matter was discussed by Louvain people in my presence, but I heard of no such firing having taken place; and everyone I heard speaking about it said there was none. On the 19th (morning) I saw arms being taken to the Town Hall. This was by order of the Mayor, and after that I saw no civilian carrying any arms.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the evening of a Tuesday in August, I heard firing in Louvain (my house being in the suburbs). I removed my family into the cellar for safety. Next morning at 4 a.m., on going up to extinguish the lights (left burning all night by German orders), my attention was drawn to the fact that the University Library had been set on fire. Shortly

e 22

e 23

I Squad 107 I squad I squad

afterwards a squadred of German soldiers came along the street to my house. I heard a shot fired. I did not see who fired it, but a lady living opposite, whom I know well, informed me that the sergeant in charge of this squadron had fired his rifle and that it was this shot I had heard. On the soldiers reaching my house, the sergeant halted there and pointed to his boot, suggesting he had been wounded by the shot I have mentioned, though, in fact, this was not the case, and thereupon the squadron fired a volley at my house, breaking the windows. This happened within a few seconds of the shot I have mentioned being heard. The Germans then entered my house and after rifling my pockets* threw me into the street. I protested (in German) that there had been no firing from my house, but the soldiers smashed mirrors, and statuary, &c.

I was informed by friends well known to me, and whose veracity is beyond question, that two German soldiers entered the house of one of my colleagues, went upstairs to the second floor, and fired from the windows into the street; and it was common knowledge that this was one of many instances of attempts to make out that there had been firing by

Belgians from their houses.

Belgian Refugee.

I am son of a Louvain Professor. I met at Furnes, whilst I was with the army, a man who was a refugee from Louvain. He had been some 25 years in the service of the Louvain University as a porter, and is well known to me, a man of integrity. He came to give me information as to the happenings at my father's house, of which he had been left in charge. He told me that when the Germans arrived at Louvain they took possession of my father's house and completely looted it, taking away all portable articles of value and destroying the furniture and other contents. That they stabled horses in the drawing room. That they destroyed, tore up, and threw into the street my father's manuscripts and books (which were very numerous) and completely wrecked his library and its contents. That finally the Germans burnt the house together with all others in the neighbourhood. The Germans also destroyed the manuscript of an important work of my late father which was in the hands of a printer.

RAILWAY EMPLOYÉ.

The Germans came to Blauwput on 19th August and took possession of the place by an advance guard of cavalry. On the 28th August I was taken prisoner with 58 other civilians. I counted them. On that date a very much larger number of Germans had arrived. The prisoners were separated, the men put into one school and the women and children into another. A German officer came to the school where I was imprisoned and stated that the civilians had been shooting at the Germans. This officer then ordered a sergeant to count the prisoners, and then sent the sergeant to a superior officer (a major). The major came on horseback and ordered the under officer to count the prisoners again. The major then selected five of the prisoners, who were taken to behind the church and shot. The following day we were ordered to bury those who had been shot. I saw other civilians shot in the streets. I saw no civilians firing on the Germans. I do not know the names of all the prisoners who were shot, but I knew them by sight. One lived at Rue de l'Église, Blauwput. Among the prisoners who were not shot were (five names given). I saw a young woman, about 25, lying on the ground in the street wounded by rifle shots. I did not see her actually shot. She was left lying wounded for $2\frac{1}{2}$ days and subsequently died. We were not able to go to her assistance. I saw German soldiers break into the houses. One party consisting of six soldiers had a little cart with them. I saw these break into a store where there were many bottles of champagne and a stock of cigars, &c. They drank a good deal of wine, smoked cigars and carried off a stock in the cart. I saw many Germans engaged in looting.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

In the afternoon 20th August the road was almost blocked with civilian refugees coming into Brussels from the direction of Louvain. I saw a party of about 50 Uhlans approaching, and with the other members of the Garde Civique I hid my rifle and tunic. I was thus able to see the conduct of the Uhlans without being recognised by them as a combatant. The Uhlans were pricking the refugees with their lances to make them walk more quickly. They were doing this to women both old and young. I saw one of the Uhlans pricking a young woman who had four or five children walking by her side. An old woman, evidently the mother of this woman, was being prodded with his lance by an Uhlan to make her walk faster. This caused the younger woman to turn round and shout something to the Uhlan, which I was unable to hear. The Uhlan then deliberately plunged his lance into one of the children, a little girl of seven or eight years old. The young woman screamed out "My child is dead!"; and several others screamed, which caused the crowd to become infuriated. The Uhlans then charged into the people, scattering them in all directions, and I saw no more.

e 25

e 26

^{*} I think it was for arms that they searched me. (Note by witness.)

TERMONDE.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Friday, the 4th September, the Germans arrived at Termonde, and on the following

day the town was partly set on fire.

A woman, who was a servant, asked me to go to her house to fetch a box. When we got to Verestraat, Termonde, I was taken a prisoner by some German soldiers, belonging to the 97th Regiment of Infantry. They were there to see if any of them were soldiers, and also to search them. Several other civilians were also made prisoners. At about 12 o'clock on the same morning, a German officer came and asked for some of the tallest and strongest men of the prisoners to go round the streets with paraffin. I was not chosen. The German soldiers had three or four carts containing large paraffin tanks, and they used a syringe to put paraffin on to the houses; they then fired at the houses, and the houses at once were in flames. At first the houses of rich people were burned in this way, and then the houses of a lower class were fired. A German soldier had previously told me that if the Mayor of Termonde, who was out of town, did not return by 12 o'clock that day, the town would be put on fire. The mayor did not return, and by about 1 o'clock the town was in flames.

The remainder of the prisoners were afterwards taken to a large factory. We were again searched for weapons. We were given passports to enable us to go anywhere in the town, but not to leave it. I went with 25 of the civilians, and we met a sentinel, who told us we must not pass and he made us follow him. When I got to a street near the water I ran away, got into the water, swam across and got a boat. I returned to the other side in the boat and brought away the other civilians. I had previously seen some of the German soldiers put "mines" on the bridge, and when we got to the other side of the

river the Germans blew up the bridge.

I then went to Zele, and after a few days was allowed to go back to Termonde. I then saw the bodies of about four civilians and the body of one child about 6 to 8 years of age, near the body of a civilian close to the station. The people around said this child had been bayoneted, one had a bayonet thrust through his breast. I saw this. I did not go near the others. I also saw the corpses of several German soldiers.

I saw one man shot dead in Termonde. He was a civilian, and was shot on the threshold of his house by a German soldier. I do not know this man by name or by sight. He had given no provocation whatever. I was about 30 metres away from him. I then fled from

the town.

Belgian Refugee.

At 8 o'clock in the morning of the 4th of September of the day when Termonde was

bombarded I saw some Belgian troops with a mitrailleuse on the towers of the Church of St Gilles. The Germans were at a little place called Lebbeke. An engagement then ensued. When the firing commenced I fled with my little godson, aged 7, to the station. I got with him into a train due to leave for Ghent, but owing to a report that the Germans were at a station close by the train did not leave. I then went back to the town, and seeing that the Belgian troops were retreating through the town, I fled with my godson to the house of a brewer, and went into the cellar with some other people. the Germans entered and we were made prisoners. The men were taken out of the cellar and the women were left behind. My godson came with me. We were taken into the street. One of the German soldiers said that the civilians had shot upon the Germans. This was not true as the civilians had all been disarmed. There were about 70 men in all, and we were made to walk through the town. The brewer, who was an older man than me, was also a prisoner, and as he did not walk fast enough a German soldier thrust a bayonet into his thigh. The brewer fell but was compelled to get up and follow the soldiers. We had to hold up our hands, and when any of us dropped our hands we were struck on the back with the butt end of a rifle. We went on to Lebbeke, and there were then about 300 prisoners. We were locked up in the church there for three days. On only one of the three days were we given any food, namely, a piece of bread and a little water. We were then taken out of the church and placed in a line on the south side of the street. The prisoners were all men, old and young. A general came in a motor car, and he asked his them. None of them knew. He then brought me out of the ranks of the prisoners with my little None of them knew. He then brought me out of the ranks of the prisoners with my little A general came in a motor car, and he asked his men where the town hall was. godson, and I went into the motor with him and showed him the way to the town hall. said in French: "If you do not show me the right way I will shoot you and your boy." At the town hall I saw the postmaster and three of his officers and the general said to him: "Tell your people to leave my soldiers alone. If they do that nothing will happen to them.

"We have got three cannons standing outside the town; and if between now and a quarter of an hour there are not three white flags flying on the principal places the place will be burned to cinders. But I give you my word of honour that if you put out three flags

"nothing will happen." The flags were then obtained and hung out as ordered.

he /

f 2

I had in a pocket under my waistcoat about 5,000 francs, which I had obtained in order to pay my workmen. The same general took this money from me (it was in gold and silver and notes).

He then told me to go back into his motor as he was going to drive me home. He got down at the church at St. Gilles and then asked me, "Did not they shoot from this tower this morning?" I told him I did not know. I saw that the church had been used as a

stable for the German soldiers' horses.

The general promised on his word of honour to spare the church because he (the witness) had rendered assistance. The general then said: "Are you satisfied? Am I not a good German?" I said, "Yes, I am glad that I am alive." He then allowed me to go free. I went home with my godson and hid there until the next morning. I saw lots of German soldiers passing with civilian prisoners all through the night. The next morning I saw that my house had been set on fire. I then fled and saw the church burning, and on the way to Berlaere I met thousands of other fugitives fleeing from the Germans.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 4th September I was at the Town Hall, and with me was a policeman in civilian dress. Some German soldiers arrived belonging to the 162nd Regiment, and I was taken prisoner with the policeman. I was made to walk in front of the soldiers with my hands above my head, and one of the soldiers struck me in the back with the butt end of his rifle. I could scarcely walk after this. I was then made to show the soldiers the depôt where the soldiers' clothes were kept. I then saw that the German soldiers were fighting the Belgians in the streets of the town. The Germans then made me and five other civilians stand in front of their force with our hands above our heads. If any of us allowed our hands to drop we were at once struck with the butt end of a gun. The Belgian soldiers retreated. We were then made to walk round the town, and other civilians were then captured in the streets. The clergyman of Wespelaer, whom I knew, was compelled to go to the top of the church at Termonde with a priest (name given), whom I also knew attached to the hospital to see if there were any Belgian troops on the tower. The prisoners, in all about 120 civilians, were then taken into a turnip field, where we were kept until 7 o'clock. Then the prisoners were set free (I was among them), with the exception of 100 men amongst, them being L . . ., a Deputy, who were taken away, and we were told that they were to be sent to Germany.

When we were in the turnip field the mother of the hospital brought the wounded women and little children in a large wheelbarrow, and placed them in the open air, because the Germans were threatening to burn the hospital. A German officer then came to the field and ordered the women and children to be taken back to the hospital, promising that the

hospital would not be touched.

On the following morning (7th* September) the hospital was set on fire by the Germans. All the sick were taken out, about 13 or 14, with the exception of one man, V...N..., who could not be moved, and he was burned to death. I saw the soldiers fire the hospital. They used small tubes, which they threw into the hospital, and the place caught fire. The soldiers also took some drums of oil from an oil store, which they fired, and then threw into houses, and the houses at once caught fire. I saw a jeweller's shop robbed by the German soldiers and then set on fire.

I was again taken prisoner on that day, but was set free later in the day. The German soldiers spat in the faces of the prisoners who spoke to them and called them "swine."

My wife and children are, I believe, still in Termonde. They urged me to leave the town to avoid further capture. No women at the time were taken prisoners.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About four weeks ago from the 2nd of October 1914, the Germans came and occupied Termonde.

When the Germans came three other men and I hid in the cellar. The Germans dragged us out and together with about 200 other Belgian civilians we were made to march in front of the German soldiers.

We marched as aforesaid to the banks of the River Scheldt. There were Belgian troops on the other bank of the river. The Germans still kept the said 200 Belgians in front of them while they fired at the Belgian troops on the other side of the said river. They rested their rifles on the shoulder of each of us and fired in that way. I had a German soldier immediately behind me who fired at the Belgian troops in this manner. The Belgian troops, of whom there seemed to be very few, did not fire back but fled away.

At about the same time as the events referred to in the preceding paragraphs took place I saw two young men of about 35 years of age, both well known to me, killed by German Uhlans in the following manner. They were walking along a road. Some Uhlans came up behind them and shouted something to them in German. The two men took no notice and then the Uhlans rode at them and killed both of them with their lances. When they

f 3

had killed them some of the Uhlans got off their horses and cut open their bodies. So far as I know and could see the men had offered no provocation whatsoever to the Uhlans.

The German soldiers would not allow the bodies of the said two men to be buried for about 10 days. I myself saw their bodies lying where they had been killed on several occasions. At the end of the 10 days I myself assisted to bury the bodies of the said two men.

Belgian Soldier.

f 5

f 8

For 16 years I have been a constable. Fifteen days before the Germans arrived all the citizens had given up their arms at the Hotel de Ville. The Germans arrived on the first Friday of September. The same morning my family left for Ostende, going by way of Zele. On the Sunday morning I came back from Zele between 7 and 8 o'clock, but finding the town occupied by the Germans, I turned back. On Monday I came again and found the dead bodies of two workmen I knew lying at the corner of Le Vieux Rampart. Both of them were fathers of families The bodies* were both burnt down one side—the side lying next to the house which was burnt. I left Termonde on the Wednesday.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

In the beginning of September the Germans came to our village (Baesrode). Forty-two thousand came—cavalry and infantry and all kinds, artillery, Uhlans, &c. They remained there from the Saturday afternoon till the Monday morning. On the Saturday afternoon they took 250 men, including me, on to a field about five minutes from the village. Some of these, including me, remained the whole night in the field, kept there by the Germans. We slept on the straw which they brought for us, without any covering. At 7 a.m. the next morning we were let go home. Three of the village men were shot on the Saturday afternoon. I saw their bodies on the Sunday. I don't know why they were shot. The Germans did not say that the three had fired on them. The Germans kept saying to us "Be good, and we will be good." They made no complaint of the behaviour of the villagers. The villagers did nothing. On Sunday morning the Germans plundered houses and smashed up the houses of those who had fled. We were not allowed to stir out of our houses on the Sunday—soldiers stood with revolvers in the street. At 7 p.m. on Sunday evening we were again taken out to the field. I did not hear of any insulting of women while the men were away. I have a mother and two sisters in the village. Nothing was done to them.

The Germans left on the Monday. They took about 30 men with them, one of them a

man of 72 years. I do not know what happened to them. I left the next day.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the beginning of September last I was with my company which was advancing f 7 upon Termonde, of which the Germans were in possession. As we entered the town my attention was called to a house in a street leading to the railway station by reason of a number of people who were close to the window of a room on the second floor apparently struggling together, and one (a girl) trying to attract the attention of the Belgian soldiers so as not to let those in the room know that she was doing so. I then looked and saw 14 or 15 German soldiers, some of whom were evidently trying to force some girls who seemed to be from 17 to 25 years of age down on to the floor. Being on patrol duty I returned to my officer and we then advanced in force, the Germans retiring before us. I then went with my officer, Commandant C. . . ., and three other men into the house above mentioned. We found the mother tied up in a chair in a room on the ground floor, and afterwards found the father hanging by the neck to a beam and was dead. Four girls came downstairs to us, all of whose dresses were disordered, and the bosom exposed, the youngest in particular having almost the entire front of her dress torn away. Only the eldest was able to speak, the rest being too much overcome to do so. She said she had been violated by two men, the youngest by four, the third by three and the second by two. The girl who had attracted my attention from the window showed me a wound in her left side under the breast where she had been pierced by the bayonet of one of the Germans when he saw what she was doing, and it was still bleeding when I saw it.

Belgian Soldier.

In Termonde I was stationed with some of my company on the 16th or 17th September to watch the road to Brussels. The village of St. Gilles is about I kilometre from Termonde on the Brussels road. The German cavalry came up once or twice, but we drove them back. Some infantry then came, driving before them the inhabitants of St. Gilles, men, women and children. We could not fire, and they came quite close. When within 30 or 40 yards of us, the civilians ran off to one side or other, and they were fired on or bayonetted by the Germans. One man was bayonetted by a German within 5 yards of me. The Germans retired to St. Gilles for a short while, and I advanced and brought in the man's body; I took his

passport. He was a stoker named D. P. . . . I gathered from this. I buried him. I should think about 20 civilians were killed this manner at the time. The Germans burnt the whole of St. Gilles.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

At Termonde the Germans took about 300 Belgian civilians (men) prisoners, and forced them to march hands up in front of the Germans.

The Germans placed their rifles on the shoulders of the civilians and fired at the Belgian

soldiers, who returned the fire.

Forty of the civilians were killed by their own countrymen.

At Termonde I saw German soldiers seize two civilians (men) and forced their hands into buckets of boiling water. Their hands were terribly scalded.

I also saw at Termonde two Belgian civilians bound by German soldiers, and then

deliberately killed by bayonet wounds in the abdomen.

The men had given no sort of provocation.

Two German officers were present whilst both the last two things happened (the scalding

and the bayonetting), and it was by their orders that the things were done.

Later, the same day, I saw the same two officers order five Belgian civilians to dig a pit. The five were then made to stand on the edge of the pit and they were shot by German soldiers with rifles by order of the officers.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About 20th September I was with my regiment at Termonde. We came there that day in the morning. On entering the town I saw in a street there, the name of which I do not know, a pair of feet in women's boots protruding from the ground. They were evidently the feet of a woman who had been buried a very slight distance below. There was clay thrown over the spot as if covering a human body. The inhabitants of the town told us that the Germans had left the town three days before, and that they had killed the woman while they were there.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About 20-24 September, near Termonde, I was, with another man, on outpost duty. We entered a house. Near the house was a ditch and in the ditch a dead woman. The Germans had been driven out of the village about two hours at most. We lifted the woman. She was lying on her right side. The right hand had been cut off. It was not caused by shell fire. I have seen a number of wounds so caused. This was a cut. The hand we did not find. The woman had been killed by a bullet through the breast.

ALOST.

Belgian Refugee.

On Saturday evening, 11th September, there was an engagement between the Germans and the Belgian troops at Alost, and the Germans retreated. A poor weaver was crossing the road with a pail of water from the well. The German soldiers, 10 in number, charged at him with their bayonets and killed him. He had given no provocation whatever. I saw this myself.

Another man was shutting his door in Binnenstraat, Alost, on the same night, when I saw him shot dead by German soldiers. I do not know the name of their regiment. This

man had six children.

On Sunday, the 12th September, I was taken prisoner with 31 other civilians. The Germans first took all our money, and when I remonstrated one of the soldiers struck me with the butt end of his rifle. We were taken along the road from the Rue des Trois Clefs, and at about 100 metres further we were placed in a row, and we were made to salute the German officer. We were taken further along the road, and placed in a group round a corner. The Belgian soldiers were at the time in a hotel about 50 metres away, and the German soldiers pushed the civilians in front of them past this hotel. One of the civilians was then shot by one of the Belgian soldiers. The Belgians, upon seeing the civilian prisoners, ceased firing. The prisoners then fell down on the ground, and the Germans retreated. We were then protected by the Belgian troops.

The whole of the men who were taken prisoners with me had been hiding in cellars. The Germans pulled the men out of the cellars and burned their houses. One of the places burned was a shop belonging to E. W. . . . This man sold petroleum, and the Germans fired

the shop with the man's petroleum.

Nothing was done to the women and children.

While I was walking along the road from the Rue des Trois Clefs with the German troops I saw the bodies of 14 civilians who had been killed by bayonet wounds or with blows from the butt ends of rifles.

f 9

f 10

f 11

f 13

BRITISH SUBJECT.

I saw at the Wetteren Hospital, after the battle of Alost, about the 15th September, a girl of 11 years of age, from Alost, with 17 bayonet thrusts in the back. I saw the wounds, and she was practically flayed. The girl was at the point of death. Mr. G. . . . was with me and can corroborate me as to this and also as to the other facts mentioned below.

On the same day at the same place I saw one L. de M. He also was at the point of death. I took this statement from him, viz., that he had to escape from his house; that he took refuge in the house of his wife's sister; that the Germans came into the street; that they separated into two rows in front of her house; that they came into his house and piled the chairs and the tables on the top of each other; that all the inhabitants of the house took refuge in the cellar; that the Germans dragged them out through the flames, and that when he came out they seized him, threw him to the ground and hit him over the head with the butt end of a rifle; that while he was on the ground they also ran his thigh clean through with a bayonet; that then they made him pass between their rows giving him further blows in the back with the butt end of a rifle; that he, with seventeen or eighteen others, were placed in front of the rows of German soldiers: that they were threatened with revolvers in order to compel them to do so; that the Germans told them that they were going to pay for the losses sustained by the Germans at Alost; that they had to walk in this way in front of the German troops right up to the battle line; that there the German troops began to fire, whereupon the Belgians threw themselves on the ground, but were obliged by the Germans to get up again; that later the Germans were obliged themselves to get up, whereupon the Belgians took the opportunity of escaping by side streets. I saw the wounds of the aforesaid L. de M. . . ., which corresponded precisely with what he told me. He signed his statement in my pocket book, and I hold my pocket book at the disposal of the Belgian and English authorities.

I also saw at the hospital an old woman of eighty who was run clean through by a bayonet thrust. She was too ill to speak, and I do not know her name.

I next went up to another wounded Belgian in the same ward. His name was F. M. . . , and he lived at Alost. I wrote his statement in my pocket book and he signed it after having read it. It is as follows:—"On Sunday at half-past nine in the morning I was in my loft. I saw the Germans coming skirmishing towards the town. I was expecting them to fire. The Germans came into my street. They smashed "in the doors of my house and came into it. They seized me and pitched me outside.

"In front of my door I saw a dead German. The Germans said to me: 'We are "going to make you pay for this. The Germans then took hold of me and gave me a "bayonet thrust in the leg. Meanwhile they poured naphtha oil over the house and set it on "fire. My son was thrown into the street, and I was dragged off with L. M. . . . to the firing "line. I do not know what has happened to my sen. I saw several marks of blows from "hattened of a rife on this read happened to my sen. I saw several marks of blows from "hattened of a rife on this read happened to my sen. I saw several marks of blows from "hattened of a rife on this read happened to happened the happened to have the read the largest through "butt end of a rifle on this man's back and the bayonet thrust in his leg."

TAILOR.

The Germans were in Alost for about eight weeks in all. After an engagement with the Belgian troops the Germans returned to the town, and entered some of the houses and fired them. I saw four houses put on fire.

An old man, a weaver by trade, wanted to get into his own house, which is close to mine, but a German soldier struck him with his bayonet. The man fell, and then the German killed him with a blow on the butt end of his rifle. I saw the man fall. When the soldier went away I went up to the old man, and saw that his face was split in two.

The cargo boats were not allowed to leave Alost. Some civilians took refuge in one of these boats, and the Germans saw them and at once fired on the boat. I was some distance away, but I saw the boat sink. I cannot say whether any of the people who were in the boat were actually drowned.

In Groen Straat I saw the dead bodies of three men, but I do not know how they met their death.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the morning of Saturday the 26th September the German soldiers arrived at the Market Place, Alost, from Brussels. They consisted of both cavalrymen and infantrymen, and with them were a number of civilians with their carts of hay, &c., which they were evidently bringing to market when the Germans captured them. I understood that some of these civilians had been walking with the troops for eight days. I cannot tell the names of the regiments to which the soldiers belonged; I am not acquainted with soldiers and their various regiments.

The German soldiers went into a street called Binnenstraat, broke open the windows of the houses, threw some fluid inside, and immediately the premises were in flames. I cannot say what was the nature of the fluid. I saw the soldiers do this. Some people in the houses in that street ran out of their premises, and escaped. Some, however, were burned to death.

The houses were inhabited by a very poor class of people, who were hiding from the Germans,

and who gave no provocation whatever.

The river at Alost runs through the town, and some German troops were on one side, and the Belgian troops were on the other side of the river. Fighting was going on, and the Germans were repulsed. They had retreated from Termonde to Alost, but the Belgian soldiers were already at Alost when the Germans arrived. Upon discovering that there were Belgian troops on the other side of the town, the Germans burned the houses on the other side. In all 18 houses were burned, and I saw them burning. Two civilians were murdered. I was about 200 metres away from the German troops, and about 1,000 metres from where the Belgian troops were.

On the same day I saw the bodies of two men in the Binnenstraat. One of the dead men was taken into a cafe, and I went inside and saw his dead body, but did not see any wounds. I recognised the man. I also saw the body of the second dead man; I recognised him

also.

On the next day (27th September) I saw a woman I knew who was speaking in the street to several people. She said that her husband had closed the door of his house on account of his children being afraid of the German soldiers. A German soldier then knocked at the door, and her husband came forward and asked pardon for closing the door, and said it was because his children were afraid. His pardon was not listened to, and he was at once shot dead. The woman and her children saw him shot. He was about 50 years of age. He had, I believe, seven children, the eldest of whom is 17 years of age.

I do not know any person at present in this country who can corroborate the above

statement. There are very few people from Alost at present in England.

On Saturday the 26th September the German soldiers were all about the town. There were also some Belgian soldiers on the hill at the south side of the town. The Belgians had lifted the bridges, and forbidden civilians to cross.

The Germans made prisoners of all the civilians they could find.

The Germans made these civilians stand in front of them, and also carry a mitrailleuse and other weapons, until they were quite in front of the Belgian soldiers. When the Belgians saw that there a number of civilians in front of the German troops they aimed above the civilians.

The Germans afterwards retreated, and as they did so they fired 12 houses in the Rue des Trois Clefs. I saw these houses fired. I saw a man whom I knew (a civilian, unarmed, 27 years of age) try to escape from one of the houses which had been fired, and the Germans shot at him. I afterwards saw that he was killed. He had three bullet wounds. The three following persons were shot dead in the Rue des Trois Clefs by the Germans, after they had fired the houses, namely:—

(Names given.)

I afterwards saw their bodies, and recognised them. They were unarmed civilians.

On Sunday (27th September) I saw a heap of nine dead civilians lying in Rue de l'Argent, who had been killed with bayonet wounds. The wounds were in the neck, chest, and stomach, and some of the intestines of the men were protruding; the clothes were cut, and blood could be seen. All of these men were known to me, and none of them had any weapons. Most of them were people who had hidden in cellars, and had been dragged out by soldiers. I know personally of 17 civilians who had not borne arms, or given any provocation whatever, being killed within the space of about 500 yards on the 26th September. I had seen quite enough then, and I ran away.

My own house was a public house, and the Germans broke into it and drank every bottle of liquor in the house. I found the empty bottles which they had taken from the house a few

streets away. Nothing was left in the house.

MARRIED WOMAN.

On Saturday, September 26th, we left our house because of the bombardment. On Sunday, the next day, we returned to our house at 6.15. We could not reach our house because the bridge over the river was broken down. Then we went to the house of a resident in Lender Straat, in Alost. We hid in his stable. When it was quiet, at about

2 o'clock, we came out.

On Friday, September 25th, in the evening at 7 p.m. I saw seven German soldiers coming into the village shooting at the people coming back from work. I was standing at the door of my house. They were shooting at everyone. There were only men in the street; there were not many except those coming back from work. One man was hit in the shoulder; his christian name was T. . . . None of them were armed, as the Belgian Government had told everyone to take any arms to the Town Hall. I saw no one firing at the Germans from anywhere.

I think they were ordinary soldiers, not officers. They turned people out of their houses and told them to hold their hands up. No one resisted. About nine or eleven were killed. This was on the Sunday. They were not stood up in a row in the morning, but shot anywhere

where they were found. I can give some of their names (six names given), and some others besides. The shooting was on the Sunday when we were in the stable. There had been also shooting on the Friday when the man was shot in the shoulder. My husband was hiding on the Friday in the house.

DAUGHTER OF PREVIOUS WITNESS.

I saw the men who were shot upon Sunday, September 27. We were about 20 metres off. We were on the same side of the river as the Germans were. We were hiding in the stable. My father and mother were there. The men were shot as they came out of their houses. I did not see them shooting at the Germans. No resistance was made. I did not see an officer there then. About nine or eleven were killed. My father was not threatened as he was hiding in the stable. A whole row of houses was burnt.

f 18

f 19

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Sunday morning, September 27th, at 7.15 a.m., the bombardment of Alost by the Germans began. The first bomb fell on the hospital. Two Red Cross flags flew from the latter. From the bridge over the Dendre runs the Rue du Pont-Neuf. My house is in that part of Hert-Straat which is almost opposite the end of the Rue du Pont-Neuf, a little bit to the right. From my house I can look down the latter street. I went to the house of my wife's parents in the Rue des Trois Clefs. My wife was already there. From that house I saw Germans enter the houses of burghers opposite, and they brought out of them 26 men. The soldiers went with these men nearly up to the New Bridge—that is the name of the bridge over the Dendre. The Belgian forces were immediately on the opposite side of the bridge. They fired one shot in the air as a signal to the townspeople so that they might lie down and the Belgian soldiers could fire on the Germans. The burghers fell to the ground—they laid themselves on the ground. Two of the burghers were shot dead, I believe by the Belgian fire.

The Belgians began to fire their mitrailleuses, and six German soldiers were killed. I remained all this time in the house of my parents-in-law. I could not see the firing which I have just described, but I heard about it from some of the 26 burghers. Shortly afterwards I saw German soldiers set fire to houses on the other side of the Rue des Trois Clefs. I saw them deliberately go round with stuff—I cannot say whether it was petrol or naphtha—and set fire. Seventeen houses were burned. From the second last house I saw a young man, of 23 years about, jump from the roof. The house was burning. I saw German soldiers strike him with the butts of their guns after he had come to the ground. He was lying just near the footpath.

Then an officer came into the house where I was. My wife, her parents, and her grandmother, 84 years of age, and I were there. All the women were downstairs in the kitchen on the ground floor. I was upstairs with my father-in-law and my youngest brother, 17 years of age. My little child, six months old, was in the kitchen with my wife, and there were also there a boy of seven years and a baby of four weeks. I was in the front room upstairs and I went into the back room. From there I saw all the women and children from downstairs being driven by the back door into the yard. The officer followed them, with a revolver pointed at them, into the yard. I saw that. After they were out I heard my father-in-law call from the front room. I went back and saw German soldiers set fire to our house from the street.

Just after the Germans withdrew I saw at the beginning of a private road just at the back of the yard of a house, a young burgher of 30 years who had been shot in the back. We carried him away. He told us that he had taken to flight and that German soldiers had fired on him.

On a yard to the right-hand side of our father-in-law's house, as one faces it, I saw that afternoon seven dead burghers. I heard that afternoon that several burghers had been shot further up the Rue des Trois Clefs. I know the names of all the dead seven burghers whom I saw. One of them had his throat cut. I saw that. Another was battered about the head. I did not see any burghers on their knees in the street. I heard about that. It took place in another part of the town, in the Geldhof-Straat and on the path close by.

On our side of the street where my father-in-law lives, I saw five burned-down houses. I saw several others. The principal part of the town of Alost lies on the other side of the Dendre, not on the side of what I have been speaking.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

The Germans entered Alost in the end of August and were billeted upon the town and behaved very well. They left after a week or so. They were the 86th Regiment. Troops continually passed through. On September 26th, Saturday, the Belgians entered Alost and drove the Germans across the canal. The Germans shelled the town the next day. I was attached to the Red Cross, and in the morning I was ordered to go across the canal and look for the

wounded on the other side. There were no Belgian soldiers that side. I crossed by the footbridge and went to De Planyer's factory. From that building I looked out at the window. I saw a man I knew leave his house in the Rue des Trois Clefs, and I saw him shot in the street, the soldier was about 10 yards off or less. The factory is the width of the road from the end of the Rue des Trois Clefs. I saw another man killed also in this road. A neighbour told me afterwards he had tried to escape through his garden. I saw several corpses lying in the street. I saw these two shot. We could not attempt to enter the street, and I saved myself through the building and crossed the canal in a little boat with several others, and fled from Alost. I saw houses burning in the Rue des Trois Clefs. I saw the Germans throwing little bombs into the houses.

MARRIED WOMAN.

My house was situated on the canal-side. On or about September 27th last the Germans began bombarding our town.

With me in the house were my husband, my daughter, Hortense, my niece, my son Joseph,

and my mother, aged 83.

German soldiers came and knocked at our door. My husband opened the door. I heard an officer giving commands. Two soldiers seized my husband, dragged him outside, and pointed to three bodies of German soldiers. They said to my husband, "You have got to pay for this." One soldier thereupon bayoneted my husband in the leg, so I was informed later, but I heard my husband shout as if in pain. I have not seen him again, and do not know whether he is alive or not. After my husband had been seized, I, my mother and my niece went to the cellar, my daughter and son ran out of the house terrified. I had to leave the cellar because the Germans set my house on fire. In the street I saw soldiers shooting civilians and I saw many bodies in the street. I saw some civilians hit on the head by the butt ends of rifles, others were bayoneted. I think there were about 37 bodies and one was a girl (name given). I saw the body of a boy, aged about 16, lying on the ground, with both hands cut off. Previous to that I had seen axes in the hands of German soldiers. I also saw the body of a boy about 12. The bodies were those mostly of my neighbours. I also saw nine bodies of Belgian men tied together. I knew some of them. I left Alost the next day and went to Ghent.

[Corroborated by another witness.]

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I am a mechanic and lived in Alost. The Germans entered in August and behaved very well. On Saturday, September 26th, the Germans were driven out by the Belgians. I was standing near the bridge in front of the Rue de Bruxelles. I was fifty yards from the Boulevard Albert, there were meadows between us. I saw a friend of mine trying to scale a wall to escape from the Germans, who were retiring along the Boulevard Albert. A German soldier beckoned to him to come down and when he came, stabbed him in the throat with a bayonet. He died, I saw the corpse half-an-hour later. The number of the German regiment was 85, I saw their helmets. I also saw a man whom I did not know trying to put out a fire in the curtain of his house. I saw a German shoot him. I saw his corpse also. It was clear, I could recognise the former man while he was being shot. I knew him well.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

There had been fighting between the Belgian and German armies, on Saturday, September 26th. The Belgians—some of the Belgian army—were in Alost during Saturday night, and on Sunday morning early the Germans entered. The river Dendre flows through Alost. I live on the left-hand side of the Dendre as one goes along the high road to Brussels. The principal part of the town is on the other side of the river. I counted about 500 German soldiers who entered the town on my side of the river on the Sunday morning. They were all foot-soldiers, and some waggons, bearing the Red Cross, but in reality carrying material of all kinds for the horses, &c. It was about seven o'clock in the morning when I saw them. I lived with my brother and his two daughters and two sons. One of his daughters, a third one, is married. She and her husband and child were in our house that morning, We were about to have coffee. We all ran out of the house to the house of my brother's sister-in-law in the same street. My brother's youngest daughter had only underclothing on as we ran out.

Ten minutes later three German Infantry soldiers came into the house. The door was not locked. We were in the back room on the ground floor. In the front room there was an old man. The soldiers came into the back room and cried to us in German to hold up our arms. We all did it instantly, and then they searched us all singly. They put us out of the house on to the street. Other soldiers were standing there. It was only we men—there were 22 of us—whom they put out of the house. On the street they made us stand against the wall holding up our hands over our heads the whole time. The soldiers then shouted to us "right about turn, march," and made us walk 500 or 600 metres further up with our arms up the whole time. Then they told us to sit down on the ground. Then an officer came to us and said "That is the punishment." I asked him "for what?" He answered, "because the inhabitants of Alost fired on our soldiers yesterday evening."

f 20

f 21

I said, "That is not true. There was not a single shot fired by the inhabitants yesterday evening. I was through the town yesterday evening and I did not hear a single shot." He lifted his gun as if to strike me and called me "Du Schweine-Hund!" and other names. The Germans then began to move on. They started the horses and waggons, which, as I said, bore the Red Cross. I could distinctly see that there were no wounded, but only material in the waggons and I think this was a device to mislead the Belgian army. We had to follow the waggons with the other soldiers. Three hundred metres further they placed us—and another man whom they had also taken prisoner on the way—between two houses. The German soldiers then stood in front of us and shook their guns at us and called us "Schweine-Hunde!" and other names, and said, "wait only five minutes and you'll be dead!" There were officers about.

All this time there was fighting going on in the other part of the town between the Belgians and the Germans. The Germans were being driven back. A wounded German officer came up towards the place where we were standing. Some of the inhabitants brought a chair out of a house for him and he sat down on it. After that the German soldiers began shooting inhabitants in all directions. They went into the houses and shot some in their houses and others they shot in the street. Women were moving about at the time. Several of them passed us and they said to us how frightful it was—that so-and-so and so-and-so had been shot, and various others while taking to flight. They mentioned the names of several. I cannot remember them; but one I do remember, C. v D..., a workman whom I knew. He had a wife and eight children. He was shot in the street at the time of which I am speaking. My brother's wife saw his corpse. I know of 21 who were killed that morning in different manners—some with the bayonet, some struck down with blows, and several shot.

The Belgian soldiers had come nearer, and when the Germans turned to fire on them most of us, 23 men, crept away amongst the womenfolk and escaped in that way. I know of 20 who escaped thus. I cannot say about the other three.

British Journalist.

On September 26th I visited Termonde and Audegem. At Termonde I saw only two houses standing, of which I took a photograph, which I can produce. On the door of these houses was written in chalk "Gute Leute schonen." I was told by the Assistant Minister for War, whose name I forget, that these were the houses of prostitutes. I was told this also by another man. At Audegem I saw the dead bodies, lying near the church, of two men, a woman and a young girl. The men were civilians and unarmed when I saw them. They had all been killed with bayonet wounds.

Near Alost I took from the rifle of a dead German a saw-edged bayonet, which is still

in my possession. The saw edge extends right to the point.

f 23

f 25

I was at Alost during the bombardment. A Belgian lieutenant, who was in charge of a mitrailleuse section stationed at a café which commanded a swing bridge over the canalised river Dendre, told me that about an hour before we arrived at the café the Germans had approached along the road leading over the bridge which his mitrailleuse commanded. swing bridge was open so that the Germans could not cross by it. The lieutenant told me that the Germans came on, driving in front of them a number of civilians (men) and that he was unable to fire until the civilians came close to the bridge, when he fired over their heads at the Germans behind. The Germans were forced to retreat, but before doing so they had killed the civilians. This they did as soon as the lieutenant fired his mitrailleuse. I crossed the canal by means of barges, and went to the place where the dead bodies of the civilians were lying and saw them myself. There were about eight or nine altogether. Some had been shot from behind, others bayonetted. One man had been bayonetted in the chest. This man was a butcher. He was wearing a chequered jumper or overall. He was hatless and bootless, and appeared to have been brought straight from his house. The bayonet wounds had evidently been made with saw-edged bayonets, judging from the character of the wounds which I saw.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was at Alost when the Germans were driven out by the Belgians. I was informed that when the Germans retreated a number of civilians were taken by the Germans out of a café and killed. I saw a number of dead bodies outside the café in the road, about nine in number; one about 17 years of age had 11 bayonet wounds in his left breast and an old man had his throat cut and his head was nearly cut off.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 28th September or thereabouts I was in my house. The Germans—an advanced guard—came into my street. I went into the cellar. They set fire to the houses. After the burning had been finished I went into the street. I saw two bodies of men. They were dead. One of these I knew, the other I did not know. I saw bayonet wounds on both. It was nearly 8.30 p.m. when I saw them with the aid of a lantern.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

At the latter end of September the German troops entered Alost.

f 26

They did no harm there but they took away about 25 men of all ages (no picking out of men of fighting age) and marched them to Erpe, a village about half-an-hour's walk from Alost. I was not one of them, but I followed to Erpe.

Erpe.

The Belgian troops were near Erpe and the Germans, when they entered it, set fire to the houses. This was in the afternoon of the day that the 25 men were taken from Alost.

When the houses in Erpe were fired, the males, as they ran out of them, were shot,

about half a dozen in all. I saw this.

Later the same day Belgian troops approached Erpe and there was fighting between them

The Germans placed in front of their line all the (25) men taken from Alost and fired their rifles at the Belgians between the prisoners' legs and some half a dozen of the latter were killed by Belgians. I saw this.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About a fortnight before I left Alost the Germans burned some houses at a large village called Erpe—a village with about 4,000 inhabitants—about half an hour from Alost. They burned these houses towards 1.30 p.m. on a Saturday afternoon. I saw about 10 inhabitants who had fled from Erpe at the time of the burning. They were mostly women and children They passed my house. They were crying and they were carrying bed-clothes and other property. Others fled in other directions.

f 27

USE OF CIVILIANS AS A SCREEN.

ARMOURER.

On the 12th or 13th August I was on the heights above the Meuse. I saw, about 200 yards away, the Germans making men and children march in front of them and pass between the Forts of Pontisse and Fléron, in which the Belgian soldiers then were. The Belgian commander observed the civilians near the Fort of Fléron, and as a result, the Belgian soldiers did not dare to fire upon them. I was informed by several, whose names I cannot give, that none of the civilians were injured by the Germans. I saw the civilians in front of the German troops when I was near Visé. They were being physically forced along by the Germans. I could see no women, but I could see that the men were civilians.

Belgian Soldier.

g 2

g 1

I was in charge of a patrol of 12 men guarding Aerschot during the retreat of our own troops to Antwerp. It was at four in the morning on August 19th. I was on guard about 600 metres beyond the railway gates on the Tirlemont road, at a mill. The road had houses along one side, and houses and a wood and fields on the other. The Germans arrived from Tirlemont. As they arrived I withdrew with my patrol to the railway gates. The road was commanded by two mitrailleuses posted at the gates. As the Germans advanced I saw two women and five children walking along the road 50 metres ahead of the German cavalry, who were in their advance. We could not fire the mitrailleuses as we should have hit them. One of the women was hit by one of the Belgian riflemen. The women told the commander when they arrived at our post that the Germans had forced them to leave their houses and walk in front of the troops. I was standing by the commander at the time and heard this said.

British Soldier.

On 22nd August I was with my regiment on the retreat from Mons and that evening I saw marching towards us, in front of German troops who were following us, some half dozen Belgian colliers carrying colliery lamps.

g 3

We could not fire at the pursuing Germans except through these colliers and apparently

they were placed where they were to prevent us firing.

They did not approach nearer than some 800 yards to our line; but it was a light evening and I could see them plainly with the naked eye. They seemed to have just left their work and to be carrying the lamps on their way home.

BRITISH OFFICER.

During the retreat from Mons I was in command of my double company at Cuesmes, a suburb at the south of Mons, and I had a barricade erected across a main thoroughfare leading from Mons in order to check the advancing German troops and cover our retreat. German troops approached the barricade in force and my men opened from them. This broke them up and they took refuge in houses on either side of the road. Then they wanted to get out again and reach a cross-road at their rear and so escape the line of our fire. To enable them to reach this cross-road they sent civilians from the houses on each side of the

g 4

A 28740

main road holding white flags, under cover of which the Germans attempted to get from the main road into the cross-road at the rear. There was nothing for it but to order my men to continue firing, which they did and accounted for a good many of the Germans. To what extent the civilians suffered I cannot say.

BRITISH OFFICER.

g 5

On Sunday, August 23, my company was ordered to throw a barricade across a road leading from the south of Mons. When we had finished we waited for the advance of the Germans. Some civilians reported to us that they were coming down a road in front of us. On looking in that direction we saw, instead of German troops, a crowd of civilians—men, women and children—waving white handkerchiefs and being pushed down the road in front of a large number of German troops. I have no doubt whatever that the Germans had deliberately put these civilians in front of themselves for the purpose of protecting themselves from our fire, and had compelled them to wave their handkerchiefs for the same object. The Germans could not have advanced, apart from the protection afforded them by the civilians, as the street was quite straight and commanded by our rifle fire at a range of about 700 to 800 yards. The civilians were driven in front of the German troops until the latter reached a side street into which they disappeared.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was behind a barricade in an avenue in Mons on August 23rd, the first day when fighting with the British force began. The Scottish had been fighting the Germans outside and came back past us, and warned us that the Germans were wearing English military top-coats. We saw the Germans coming on in English top-coats, and for a long time it was doubtful whether they were Germans. They first took shelter in some houses on the left. Eventually when the Germans advanced down the avenue they placed women and children in front of them. They came on as it were in mass, with the woman and children massed in front of them. They seemed to be pushing them on, and I saw them shoot down women and children who refused to march. Up to this my orders had been not to fire, but when we saw women and children shot my sergeant said, "It's too heartrending," and gave orders to fire, which we did. The Germans dispersed again out of the roadway, and several women and children got away, and we then had orders to retire from our barricade and I saw no more of this advance.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

got to one end of the town we threw up a barricade against the enemy and we were able to hold it for about half an hour. After leaving it we got separated, I and about 20 others from our company, and the enemy advanced against us. I saw that they had collected a number of women and children, I cannot say how many, from the houses in the town and they placed them in front of the German soldiers in order to prevent us from firing on them. They would be 100 to 150 yards away from us. I could see that the Germans had their bayonets fixed and pointed to the backs of the women and children to make them advance.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I saw at Mons the Germans advancing on hands and knees towards our position in the trenches; they were in close formation and had a line of women and children in front of their front rank. They were about 900 to 1,000 yards away. Our orders at that time were not to fire on civilians in front of the enemy. The time never came, so far as I am concerned, for seeing what happened as we were ordered to retreat, and we did not expend any ammunition after I saw this. Fighting was, of course, going on elsewhere.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

In Mons, on the 34th Sunday in the year (Sunday, 23rd August), I saw 200 Belgian civilians taken prisoner by the Germans. There was a battle going on at the time between the English and the Germans, and the Germans used the Belgian civilians as a screen to prevent the English from firing. I was standing in the rue de la Bece (?) (Bisse). The Germans were coming down a main street the name of which I do not know. The English were in the streets all around. I saw some of the Belgians killed; six of them were shot by the Germans because they tried to get away. I cannot say what happened to the rest of them. They continued marching in front of the Germans until they got out of my sight. The Belgians were men of all ages; there were no women or children.

sight. The Belgians were men of all ages; there were no women or children.

On the date of the first engagement at Termonde, about a fortnight later, I saw 12 civilians taken prisoners by the Germans. One of them was a little lame boy who could not keep up. His name was J...; he worked as a smith. The Germans struck him with the butt end of their rifles all over, and especially on his bad leg, to make him hurry up. One of these 12 civilians returned, and I saw him at his house later on. He told me that he had never seen the other 11 since that day. That was a week after the day when I had seen him walking with the 11 others. He said that he pretended to be very ill, and fell down on the road, and that the Germans let him lie there. This was how he escaped.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Royal Engineers:—Outside Mons, during the first day of the retreat, we were retreating through the village—the name of which I cannot tell you. Our infantry were between us and a point where another road met the one on which we were; German troops came down this other road, holding up white flags, driving civilians in front of them. At 300 yards distance from our infantry they dropped the flags and drove the civilians on to one side, they opened fire on our infantry.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was serving with my battalion at Mons. On the 24th of August we were retiring from the direction of Mons. We were marching along a road in close formation. We were under fire from the enemy's batteries in a wood on our front and between us and Mons. About 700 or 800 yards to our left front I noticed a party of Germans about 600 strong. They were not entrenched, neither did I see them retiring or advancing. They were in an open position and were under a heavy shell fire from our batteries, which kept up an incessant fire the whole time. About 300 yards behind and to the right of the Germans was a small village. I saw a large number of civilians, men, women, and children, standing in front of the Germans. It was about 11 o'clock a.m. I saw some men, women, and children actually brought into the front of the German position from the village. They were being pushed along by Germans. One old man was very old and bent. I noticed two women in particular who had two or possibly three children and they were holding them close in as if to shield them. One of the women had a blue apron on. Altogether I suppose there were 16 to 20 women there, about a dozen children, and half-a-dozen men. I was in the last file and I kept on looking round as we were retiring. It would be about 10 minutes between the time when I first and last saw the civilians in this position in front of the Germans. About two minutes after I first saw the women, children, and men in front of the Germans I noticed that the British batteries who had been firing on the Germans ceased firing. I saw five or six of the guns (which had been between us and the Germans) limber up and gallop round to the Germans' right flank, and from this position open fire on the Germans again. They were able to do this without running the risk of hurting the civilians because in this position they were well round the flank. The Germans then bolted, leaving the civilians behind. I saw all this as we were retreating along the road. We all saw it and were talking about the incident as we marched along. This statement has been read over by me and is correct.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On 24th August, between 8.30-9.30, I was behind a barricade I had assisted to build during the previous night across one of the streets in Frameries. Some Germans approached us in small bodies at first, apparently as scouts. Then about 20 women and children and some oldish men came from the bottom of the street. They were fully dressed, some had hats and jackets and bundles. They formed a sort of cordon. I say they were not flying in panic before the Germans because of this sort of order and because when they were motioned to draw to the side by one of our own men they were fired on by the Germans from behind for doing so. I should think 50 people were shot down. In some cases the children had been walking, in others they were carried by the women.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

August 24th, I was with my section at Frameries in a side street behind a barricade. I saw about 30 women partially dressed, some with babies in their arms. They were crying. A large body of Germans were just behind them. The women formed a screen. The women had the appearance of having been hastily collected. I say so because they were only partially dressed and carried nothing as refugees always did. My whole section considered they were being used by the Germans as a screen. As they came round the corner I was called away. This was 7-8 a.m.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was with my regiment during the retreat of the British forces between Landrécies and Guise in August last.

During the retreat I was in charge of eight men, acting as a flank guard near the village

of Bone,* when I saw a party of woman and children coming towards us along a road.

Immediately behind them were about eight Uhlans of the German Army, who were pushing the women and children along in front of them. The latter were screaming. I am certain they were being forced along in the position they occupied and were not in front of the Germans by chance or accidentally.

I at once reported the position of matters to Captain H . . . of my regiment.

He investigated the position and found it impossible to attack the Uhlans without injuring the women and children. He, therefore, with the eight men and myself, worked round the Uhlans' flank. We opened fire and killed three of them. The others were driven round to the rear of our battalion and shot there.

We found that the civilian party consisted of seven or eight women and five or six very young children. They were terrified, and it was plain to me that they were being used as a

screen for the Germans whilst they were reconnoitring our position.

* P Bohain.

g 10

0 - -

g 11

g 12

g 13

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

g 15 On a Tuesday, August 25th, about, I was with other comrades in a wood during the retreat from Namur. We were making for Philippeville to rejoin the regiment. When we arrived the regiment had gone. We made on to Marienbourg. On the way between the two places we saw, on a road which joined ours, the Uhlans, who were coming from the direction of Philippeville. We saw them stopping on the road several country people who were trying to take to flight. They forced them to march in front of them. There were six or seven to whom they did this. They were about 100 metres or a little less from us. They fired on us. We were about 50 men. Some of us had guns and would have fired back if they had not feared that they might hit the country people. I had no gun. There were only about 20 or 25 Uhlans.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the first battle in which I was engaged, which took place at Malines, I saw the Germans advancing against us with a number of Belgian civilians in front of them. There g 16 were about 60 or 80 of them in all, and there were women amongst them, but the men were made to go in front.

Our infantry did not fire on the civilians, but let the whole body come on until they could fire on their flanks, and then they separated the civilians from the Germans. I cannot say whether any of the civilians were shot. We took the civilians and put them behind our lines.

Belgian Soldier.

After the Germans occupied Louvain, I was near Malines; and one day I saw a large g 17 number of civilians—about 400—old men, women, and children, being driven forward towards the Belgian outposts by German soldiers with fixed bayonets. The curé of Campenhout was in front with a white flag. Our soldiers had to shoot, but not much. The civilians began to sing the Brabanconne to show their nationality and stop the shooting. I was told by some of these civilians that the Germans told them not to look round; if they did, they would be shot. They were beaten forward by rifle-butts-not bayonets. These people came half from Campenhout (a village) and half from Malines.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

g 18 I was serving with my regiment at Elewyt, near Malines. It was just at the beginning of the attack on Malines, but I cannot give the date nearer than that. We were covering the retreat of other forces. At about 10 o'clock a.m. we saw a number of Belgian women, men, and children in front of the Germans. There were quite 20 women, and some of them with babies in their arms. They were about 1,000 yards away. There were about 50 Belgian men. I cannot say how many children, but there were some. We did not fire on the Germans, men. I cannot say how many children, but there were some. We did not fire on the Germans, but they were fired on by troops on our right and left. We were forced to retreat by their heavy artillery. Some of the Belgians escaped and told us that the Germans had compelled the men, women, and children to go in front of them. I spoke to one of them at Lierre and he told me this, and that he had come from Elewyt.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 2nd of September we were holding a village called Caen.* At 6 a.m. I saw the mans advancing. There were about three companies of them. They had a number of g 19 Germans advancing. Belgian prisoners in front of them. We were in the houses of the village. They were being pushed along by the Germans. They were advancing each side of the road. When I saw them the Germans were about 40 yards away. The prisoners were tied by the wrists in groups of six. The Germans were firing on us as they advanced behind the prisoners. We returned the fire. The fight lasted about 10 minutes and we then retreated. The Germans lost about 60 men and 30 of the prisoners were hit. The prisoners belonged to the 8th and 13th regiments. I should say there were about 200 of them. We were 28 men holding Caen and we had four mitrailleuses.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the beginning of September my company was attacking the Germans, who were in the village of Eppeghem. During the afternoon by about 4 p.m., we had driven the Germans out of the village and had ourselves gone through the village. The Germans were retreating under our fire. When we got the other side of the village we found that the Germans had a large number of civilians standing in front of them. There was a very large force of Germans. We had seen no male civilians in the village as we passed through, with the exception of two who had been killed. The civilians appeared to be making no attempts to get away from in front of the Germans. They were standing just in front of the Germans who were not holding them. In order to avoid hitting the civilians, we tried to get round the German flanks, but we were unsuccessful. The Germans were able to retreat, keeping the civilians still between them and us. I saw none of the civilians fall, but one of the village women told me as we were going through the village that the Germans had taken 186 men from the village and

had killed the two whose bodies we saw because they refused to follow. Shortly after this we were forced to retire ourselves. We were entrenched between the forts at Willebroeck. At about 4 p.m. we were engaged with the Germans in front of the trenches, and after a fight lasting about an hour-and-a-half we were driven back. We had to leave six of our wounded behind. I saw the Germans go up and bayonet these six men. They were about 200 metres in front of me when I saw this, and were crawling, trying to get away after having abandoned their rifles. They were all in a bunch and I saw several Germans bayonet each man with several thrusts each. We fired on the Germans and they were all hit. We went out shortly after the Germans had been driven off and found that the men had all been killed.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 2nd of September my regiment was retiring before the Germans upon Malines. We had heard from an air scout that the Germans were advancing with children in front of them. At about 7 p.m. we were about 300 metres from Malines and I saw a regiment of German infantry advancing along the road. There were about 10 children in front of them. They were about 500 metres from me. The children were roped together in two rows with a German each side of the row. They appeared to be from seven to nine years of age and reached up to the height of the Germans' chests. The Germans were firing upon us as they advanced in this way. They were advancing in column formation. We fired on them and aimed so as to avoid hitting the children.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

In the month of September my regiment was at Londerzeel, near Malines. The Germans had occupied Londerzeel before us. When we entered the village we saw two girls of about 18 or 20 years old. They told us that some hours before the Germans had come to their house and had endeavoured to seize and violate them. Their father had interfered and had been killed by the Germans by a bayonet. The two girls had escaped while their father was being killed. They came back later and found that their father had been already buried. They dug him up again and they showed us his body. There was a big wound in the breast which must have been made by a bayonet.

Two or three days after this incident we were retiring from Londerzeel in the direction of Malines. The Germans were attacking us and at the head of one of their columns they placed a number of men, women and children of the Belgian civilian population. There were perhaps 30 or 40 of them altogether. We ceased firing when we saw there were civilians in front. The Germans came with these people up to about 200 metres from us. We were pushed back and the civilians fled in all directions and the battle went on. One of the civilians was shot in the arm. It was about five minutes that we saw these civilians in front of the Germans, they were being pushed along.

Belgian Refugee.

Some time in September I left Antoing alone to go to Tournai. The reason I left was because the Germans entered Antoing. I left as the advance guard entered. I think they consisted of Death's Head Hussars. They came into Antoing and asked at once for the station and post office, of which they took possession. I was taken prisoner on the road from Antoing to Tournai by the same body who had entered the town, they having overtaken me. I was taken to Tournai, where there were about 400 civilian Belgian prisoners—men, women and children. A fight took place there between French and Germans. All the prisoners above referred to, including myself, were marched in front of the German forces to act as a screen. Two of these who did not move quickly enough were shot by the Germans. I was with the Germans for nine days, after which I escaped and made my way to Namur, and by stages to Ostend, and from there to England.

Belgian Soldier.

On the 10th September I was at Termonde and in the trenches awaiting the Germans. The battle commenced at noon and at about 2 o'clock we saw a number of Germans, about 600, who had with them about 10 or 15 Belgian civilians. They had placed the Belgian civilians in front of them and then advanced on our trench. We had to fire because there were German soldiers with them. Many of the civilians were shot by us. There were some women with these civilians and some of these were wounded also. I spoke afterwards to one of the women who were with these German soldiers and she told me that there was one young man who refused to be taken with the German soldiers and brought up to our trench. The Germans thereupon killed this young fellow with their bayonets. That same evening the whole of the village was burnt. These people came from St. Gilles, which is near Termonde. When these civilians were shot, as I have mentioned above, the Germans came to within 300 to 400 metres of our trench. They were beaten back and we were the victors in this particular fight. The fight went on until about 7 o'clock in the evening. There were about 400 Germans killed or wounded and not one of the Belgian soldiers was wounded. We were well entrenched. The Germans had no machine guns with them.

g 21

g 22

g 23

I have never heard any reason given for the civilians being brought up to our trench in this way. Reasons are given sometimes by the Germans for these acts, the chief one being that the civilian population have been firing upon them, but I never heard this reason given for this particular case. I cannot say whether I actually shot one of these civilians myself. For the most part we were given an order for "feu rapide," which means that we are each of us to fire as fast as we can, but not in volleys.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

During the battle of Alost the Germans came to our place. They took me prisoner on the Chaussée de Gand at Alost, and took me to Oordegem. They made me hold up my hands and keep them up all the way. It took two hours to get there. There were five or six other prisoners.

We stopped at Oordegem for 24 hours in a street near the church. We had nothing to eat or drink during this time. There were two women with us. I do not know the names of

my fellow prisoners. The Germans picked them up as they went along.

Between Alost and Oordegem I saw lots of houses burnt by the Germans. They broke the windows and threw little contrivances through the holes. I do not know what the contrivances were made of; the house flamed up at once. I saw at least 50 houses burnt. About 5 o'clock in the evening the Germans let us go. I went off in the direction of my house which was an hour-and-a-half's walk. Between Oordegem and Cherscamp I fell in with 4,000 or 5,000 Germans. They cried "Up." I held up my hands. They then took me to Courtrai, where all the houses had been burnt. The Germans and Belgians were fighting round about there. The Germans drove me and many other Belgians in the direction of the fighting, to screen them.

After the battle the Germans took me and many other Belgians to make holes to bury the Germans in. They were saying all the time, "Quicker, quicker," threatening us with their revolvers and bayonets. I understand a little German. Afterwards the Germans made signs

that we might go, and we cleared out as quick as we could.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was with my battalion in the trenches at Willebroeck, the first line of the fortifications of Antwerp, about the 25th of September. The 35th Regiment of the line (I tore off the epaulettes of one of the officers who was killed and I saw the number of the regiment) advanced against us over some flat land, in line, about a yard separating each man, crawling on hands and knees. The Germans seemed to have started from a wood on the right, and I saw distinctly from a distance of 200 yards that there were some women and children in front of the first line. I noticed particularly in all four children, one woman and one old man in civilian middle-class dress. They were walking upright, each of them in front of a German soldier, and between the Germans and us. It was in the afternoon, and I saw some officers of the German regiment, and they could not help seeing the women and children. For instance, one officer fell dead quite close to where one of the children was. During the advance I saw that the woman refused to advance. She turned round, and showed her back to us, and 1 saw the German who was creeping behind her give her two thrusts with the bayonet upwards towards the breast. At the second thrust she fell. We could hear her cries; we did not fire upon either the woman or the children, but we kept up fire upon the soldiers who were not covered by them. One of the children, who seemed about 4 or 5 years of age, ran towards the woman when she fell, and the soldier behind him shot him, placing the muzzle of his rifle upon the child's temple, and half the head was blown away before my eyes. Our regiment left the trenches and attacked with the bayonet, and drove the Germans back. Their losses were very heavy.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Towards the end of September I was on patrol duty with two other men between Lierre and Aerschot. We were about 5 kilometres from Aerschot and some distance in front of our main body. I saw a cyclist patrol of Germans coming down the road ahead of me. They were about a mile away when I first saw them. They had civilians in front of them when I saw them. There were about 10 of them. I think there were more men than women. They were not being held by the Germans in any way. The Germans immediately opened fire on us. We did not fire because of hitting the civilians. They only fired two or three shots at us. We retreated.

We were in Aerschot some 15 days previously. The Germans had left Aerschot two or three days before we entered. At the entrance of the village all the houses were burnt. In two of the houses I saw charred corpses of people. I only walked past in the road, so do not know the sex of the corpses.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On Sunday, September 27th, between 9 and 10 a.m., I saw the Germans in Alost take 37 civilians (all men) and put them in front of their soldiers and made them march forward so that if the Belgians fired on the German troops they would necessarily kill the Belgian civilians first. I myself saw the bodies of two of these civilians in the afternoon of the same day who had been shot, as well as three German soldiers.

g 25

g 26

g 27

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was wounded at Nazareth on the 7th October. I was taken to the military hospital at Ghent. I was wounded whilst in a house in Nazareth. We were firing through the doors and windows. I was wounded in the shoulder. There were five of us in the house, and two were wounded. The three unwounded got away leaving me and L. . . * behind. I was lying on the floor in the ground-floor room. A large number of Germans came into the house. Some of them came into the room and saw us wounded. Twenty or twenty-five Germans at least saw us. They went out of the room almost immediately, and 10 minutes after we saw that the house was on fire. As soon as we saw the smoke we got up and got out of the window. As soon as we got out of the house we were taken prisoner by the Germans who were still outside. The Belgian reinforcements were coming up and the Germans placed us in front of them so that the Belgians should not fire. The Germans retreated and we seized our opportunity and escaped by jumping into a ditch. L. . . . was wounded in both hands. When the Germans came into the house he was standing with his wounded hands in the air. Whilst we were prisoners with the Germans they searched L. . . . and found 80 francs, which they took. The arrival of the Belgian reinforcements prevented their searching me. The German troops were Uhlans.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At the beginning of October the Germans were about to attack us at Termonde; we were entrenched behind a river. They were about 300 metres off. They forced 10 or 12 civilians—men and women—to march in front of their line when they were attacking. They beat them forward with the butt ends of their rifles. We could not fire and had to retreat in consequence. I saw four or five of the civilians shot from behind by the Germans; none of our men were firing at this time; we were an advance post, without supports right and left of us.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 9th of October I was near Lokeren in a trench with my company guarding a road near a railway. The Germans were advancing to attack us, and were firing on us. I should think there were about 150 of them—a whole company. They had about 20 civilians in front of them—men, women, and children. I cannot say how many of each, but there were more women and children than men, and some of the women had babies in their arms. When we first saw them they were about 300 yards away. We retreated out of the trench because we could not fire on them. They (the Germans) fired between the civilians. The Germans were about 150 yards away when we began to retire. We were able to retire in good order, as there were some deserted houses quite near the trenches to shelter us. We had no soldiers on either flank to attack the Germans without killing the civilians. No civilians were actually killed by the Germans as far as I know—I do not think any of my company were hit by the Germans during this incident.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About 16th October I was near Thielt. We were marching across country searching, sweeping the ground. Just before dusk we heard firing and bullets whizzing over us. We were a platoon about 30 strong. We saw that the firing came from some Germans in a ditch in a turnip field about 300 yards away. In front of the Germans were 12 or 14 women and two men civilians. They were only five or six yards in front of the Germans—they stayed there for an hour until until it grew dark, when we advanced.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the 12th October the Germans were in possession of Alost. The Belgians were advancing through Alost. The Belgians were advancing along a road with canal one side and houses the other. I was hidden in a café, my bicycle outside the café. I saw about 40 Belgian civilian men and boys held in front of the German rearguard. Two civilians were killed by shots, afterwards four were found wounded by bayonets at the side of the road. Further on, nine young men (civilians) were found with their throats cut.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

My regiment was marching north across the Belgian frontier.† We started about 2.30 a.m. After marching till dawn we saw two enemy's aeroplanes scouting. We were going along the main road and they certainly saw us—they could not miss seeing us—there were two or three of them (i.e., aeroplanes) and after seeing us they went back. About 8 o'clock we were approaching a village. French cavalry, some 300 or 400, came from the village. I heard some say in English "Germans drove out," meaning that the Germans had been in the village and that they had cleared them out. We proceeded on, and we saw about a mile from the village all the women and children and a few civilian men coming towards us. The German soldiers

g 29

g 31

g 30

g 32

g 33

g 34

^{*} L. . . was also interviewed and corroborated the story told by this witness.

[†] This was on or about the 18th of October.

were taking cover behind the women and children. We could not see them—they were taking cover in the houses and trees. We called on the people of the village to get past us out of the way, as soon as possible, and they did this. The Germans were shelling us with their big guns before the population got past us. As soon as the people had passed we deployed and we immediately received the fire of the enemy.

I have had this read to me and it is in every particular correct.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

I live at Gits, which is near Roulers.

g 35

On the 19th of October I was in my own house in the morning. About 25 French soldiers were hiding in my garden; they were Cuirassiers. They had hidden their horses behind a building. German soldiers came into my house by the front door. They asked me. whether there were any French, Belgian, or English soldiers there. I replied that there were none there. I then ran into the garden away from the German soldiers pretending to be frightened. I ran towards the French soldiers who were hiding there and shouted out to them the one word "Fifteen." I meant them to understand by this that there were 15 German soldiers there. The French soldiers then jumped up and shot every one of the 15 Germans. Later on, on the same day, some more German soldiers came to Gits. They found the dead bodies of the 15 German soldiers in my garden, but they did not know that the house and garden belonged to me. When they came I was walking about the village. These German soldiers, however, took me prisoner. They took me to Gitsberg, which is about ten minutes walk from Gits. At Gitsberg, the Germans took all the men they found there prisoners; there were 300 or 400 people altogether and the women and children were also taken prisoners. put all the prisoners, children as well, against a wall with their faces towards it, and made them put up their hands. While this was being done the Germans were still under fire from the French troops. All the men prisoners then asked the Germans to let the women and children go as they were crying so much. The Germans allowed this. When the women and children had gone there were 72 men left. The Germans then said that there were 72 men and they would want 72 bullets. I do not understand German myself but others who did understand it told me that this was what they said. Five mounted Uhlans were then put in front of us and we were ordered to follow them on foot. They led us along the main road from Bruges to Ypres. There was one old man with us of 75 years of age who was too feeble to walk. This old man was then taken and shot by eight German soldiers who were behind our band. We were all made to halt and watch the old man shot. I saw him shot myself and his body was left on the road. The rest of us then went on and until we got to Hooglede. At Hooglede there were some French troops hiding behind the church and they again opened fire on the Germans but did not kill any of them. We were then taken back by the way we had come until we got to a place called Ondank. From Ondank we proceeded to Staden. At Staden the French troops again fired on us; they killed the five German Uhlans who were in front, and one of the Belgian prisoners was also killed. When this happened the Germans got angry and they then put all the prisoners, including myself, in front of them. The French went on firing and 15 of the prisoners were hit. When we saw our companions fall we waved a white handkerchief and shouted "Vive la Belgique." The French then stopped firing at us. The remaining prisoners tried to run away; some of them succeeded in escaping and some were shot down by the Germans. I couldn't get away myself. Eventually there were only 15 of us left out of the whole 72. I was one of the 15.

This "conseil de guerre" was held in the road beside an ambulance. Before we reached the place where the "conseil de guerre" was held one of our number, whom I know well, spoke to two of the German officers and bribed them with a gift of 500 francs to induce them to do their best for us. This man had been shot through the hand and was attended by one of the German officers who was a doctor of the Red Cross. This doctor was one of the officers who were bribed and the bribery was effected while he was binding up the man's wound.

When we got to the "conseil de guerre" ten officers gave evidence. Eight of them gave evidence to the effect that we had fired on the German soldiers when they came to Gits, and two of them, being the two who had been bribed, gave evidence that we had not fired. We could not hear the evidence given ourselves, but we were told the next morning that this is what happened. The man who told us was a horse-dealer who had been taken by the Germans and who knew German. He was standing quite close to where the "conseil de guerre" was held. The "conseil de guerre" condemned us to death. We had been bound up before this, but the German doctor who had been bribed had cut our bonds. It had been arranged with this doctor that if he put up his hand it would mean that we had been condemned to death and that we were to run. The doctor put up his hand when the sentence was given and we all ran. Three of our band were shot as we ran, but the rest of us managed to get into a deep ditch. We stopped in this ditch, being in the water up to our chests, for about 10 minutes. We then crawled along the ditch until we got to a side road and thus we escaped.

The name of the old man who was killed when we first started in charge of the German soldiers was D... Out of the 15 who were tried by the "conseil de guerre," I know the names of five besides myself. (Names given.)

All these men came from Gits and they all escaped. I saw them all the next day. As far as I know it is quite untrue that any civilians fired on the German soldiers at Gits.

We were all made to give up our arms long before the Germans came.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

When we were advancing on the Aisne I came across German trenches containing dead German soldiers, and I then found the dead bodies of two young French girls, not more than 20, stark naked, and in each case with their breasts severed except the lower end by which they were hanging attached to the bodies. I also found the dead body of a young woman who had been shot, and her child was in her arms still living. These bodies I took

part in burying.

After we left the Aisne we were billeted in a village near Ypres (I am not sure of the name). We got the alarm, and as we were advancing on one another, the Germans came on in irregular formation, with a quantity of women and children and also old men in civilian dress. We had been warned of the possibility of this, and we had orders to fire not-withstanding, and I myself had to fire upon civilians in this case. After the Germans had been driven back, some of these women who had not been shot showed us their backs. I saw myself the blood on their backs where they had been pricked by bayonets, and in one case a woman had anything from 20 to 50 bayonet marks on her back. This was about October 20th.

OFFENCES AGAINST COMBATANTS. Killing, &c., Wounded.

BELGIAN DOCTOR.

I was at the Military Hospital (at Liège), where I took over charge of the wounded from

2nd August last.

On 4th August, at about 11 a.m., a Belgian soldier of the 9th Regiment of the Line was brought in who had received a bullet wound in the chest and other wounds. His nose was cut completely off. He stated that he had been shot in action some few hours previously, and was taken into a house, and after being there some hours German soldiers entered the house and one of them took hold of his nose with one hand and with the other cut his nose off; the other soldiers then treated him in a brutal manner and subsequently left him there.

From the examination I made of the injuries I am confident that this soldier was speaking the truth.

A few hours later, on the same date, a soldier named Eugenie was brought in who was also shot in the chest and had three fingers of his right hand hacked off; the latter injury, he said, was caused after he had been shot (at the moment that he was bending down to place an explosive in position for the purpose of blowing up a bridge). As he was lying on the ground wounded and helpless the German soldiers came up to him and one of them took hold of his right hand and cut the three fingers off. I am of opinion that the injury was consistent with the story told by this soldier.

On 5th August a Belgian officer was brought in who was wounded by shot in the femoral artery. He had several ribs broken and face much bruised, and was not in a condition to make any statement as to how he had received such injuries. His orderly stated that he saw German soldiers deliver several kicks with the heels of their boots at the prostrate captain's body and in his face. From the injuries and the dirt marks on the tunic and face of the

officer seemed to fully bear out this story.

Many such stories were told to me during the time I was in charge there.

Belgian Soldier.

I speak Flemish and a little French and German.

On the first day my regiment went to Liège (I think it was Wednesday, the 5th August). I was patrolling with a few soldiers in a wood, and saw some German soldiers coming towards us. Near me was the dead body of a Belgian officer—a commander, who had only just arrived from the Military School—and there were several rings on his hands. There were also some other wounded Belgian soldiers, and some dead. I placed the dead body of a Belgian soldier on top of me, and I pretended to be dead, lying on my side: The German soldiers (I do not know the name of their regiment) then came up, and I saw them kill some of the Belgian wounded with the bayonet, or with the butt end of the rifle. I could see without raising my head. I heard some of the Belgian wounded cry for help, and when the Germans reached them I saw them kill them; I saw this while I was lying down. The Belgian officer

g 36

h 1

was about 6 yards from where I lay. A German soldier then went up to him and cut off the officer's fingers with a knife, and took his rings and placed them in his pocket. I cannot say whether any of the Belgian wounded soldiers who were killed by the German soldiers were mortally wounded previously, but one of them was wounded in the top part of his thigh, and another was wounded in the heart.

When the German soldiers had gone I got up and made my way to the Belgian trenches.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 6th of August, at the village of Saives near Liège, I saw the Germans, who had a Belgian soldier with them; he was wounded in the arm. Nevertheless they tied his arms behind his back and compelled him to march on the road towards Germany. Then at a distance of about 15 yards they fired at him and killed him. There were seven others of my company with me. Among them were A...D...and J...P... The latter saw the prisoner begging for his life.

BELGIAN SOLDIER (SERGEANT).

On the day the Belgian army retreated from Liège, on a Thursday, I think 6th or 7th of August, I was in a street at Boncelles. I aw a Belgian soldier wounded in the leg lying on the ground, he was in my company. I do know his name; I was a Reservist and only called up on 1st August. When we were retreating I saw a German soldier repeatedly stab the wounded Belgian with his bayonet.

BELGIAN VOLUNTEER OF GOOD SOCIAL POSITION.

On or about the 9th August, I am not certain of the dates, I was at Haelen, where there had been a cavalry engagement on that date from 8 a.m. to I o'clock midday. The Belgians were the 3rd and 4th Lancers, the 1st regiment of "Chausseurs à cheval"; and the Germans were the Uhlans and the Dragoons. I do not know the numbers of these two regiments. The Germans retreated as the Belgians were reinforced by Field Artillery and Carabiniers. I then went on the battlefield, and saw a lieutenant of the 3rd Belgian Lancers holding his nose. I said, "What is the matter." He said, "Look," taking off his handkerchief, and I saw that the lower part of his nose had been cut from above, as part of his lower lip had also been cut at the same time. It was quite fresh-cut, and bleeding very much. I said, in French, "How did it happen?" He said, "The Germans threw me down when I was on "foot, held me, and while two were holding me down a third cut my nose off with his "pocket knife, and kicked me on my thigh, saying 'Marsch' (meaning 'Get away.')"

He was as white as a sheet, and faint, and I helped him to the Red Cross, which had

He was as white as a sheet, and faint, and I helped him to the Red Cross, which had come up with the Belgian reinforcements, and I left him under their care. I ascertained his name, but I have now forgotten it. I had no further conversation with the lieutenant, firstly, because he was so faint, and, secondly, because I had to perform my own duties in helping to find in which direction the Germans were retreating. I do not know whether the lieutenant spoke German or not. The lieutenant gave no explanation why he had been treated in this way.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was in an engagement between the Belgian and the German troops at Haelen, near Diest, on Wednesday the 12th August, from 2.30 until 5.30 p.m. The Belgians were gaining ground and their object was to cut off the retreat of the Germans who were installed with their mitrailleuses in and outside of the houses along the railway. From 5.30 the Belgians had to retreat, because the numbers of the German soldiers were so great, and we went on the highway from Haelen to Geet Betz. There was a house by the roadside, and behind it some 30 of us hid. It was then about 6.30 p.m. I then fell faint. I was in that condition for about an hour, and when I woke I heard the sound of a mitrailleuse. The Belgians had retreated and the Germans fired on them with the mitrailleuse from some houses, and I was between the two fires. There were six bullet holes in my coat. The engagement finished at about 8 p.m., and the Germans still occupied the houses in which they had placed mitrailleuses. I saw a sentinel about 4 metres from where I laid, and I heard the sound of talking in the houses.

At about midnight a patrol, consisting of three soldiers and an officer, made their round. It was a moonlight night. They came to where I was lying, and pulled me up by my hair. I kept my eyes shut and made no sound. They then dropped me and struck me on the lower part of my back with the butt end of the rifle, but the blow did not hurt me very much, on account of my wearing my belt at the time; nevertheless I was laid up for a fortnight and was seen by the doctors at Ghent and Brussels. Near me were several other wounded Belgian soldiers, and I heard some of them crying with pain. They had been wounded by rifle shots, but not very seriously. One man lying near me had a bullet wound in his left shoulder. Another man had a bullet wound in his chin. The German soldiers went up to these two and to the other wounded men, and struck them several times with the butt ends of their rifles, and killed about 10 of them. I could see this by the light of the moon and could hear the blows. I do not know the names of any of these men, because they belonged to a different

ml h 3

h 5

company. I am of opinion that some of them would have recovered from their bullet wounds if they had received proper treatment. I was afterwards in the hospital with others who had been more dangerously wounded, but who recovered.

been more dangerously wounded, but who recovered.

The Germans left at about 2 a.m. The next morning I saw that the wounded men were all dead, including the one with the wound in his chin and the one with the wound in his

shoulder.

BELGIAN RED CROSS OFFICER.

On or about the 13th August 1914 I was present at an action at Haelen near Diest in Belgium and was engaged in picking up and tending the wounded. I came to a Belgian soldier who was wounded once in the leg and twice in the left arm. I also noticed a German soldier, but as it was night I could not see what regiment he belonged to. He did not say anything to me. I said to the Belgian soldier: "I will help you first and then I will return "to the other man (referring to the German soldier) and try to help him." The Belgian soldier said: "Well, be as quick as you can, because I am suffering very badly." Not a word passed from the German but he could understand what I had said. Whilst I was bending down to do what I could for the Belgian, the German soldier (who had been wounded in the stomach) hit me a terrific blow in the ribs with the butt of his rifle. The blow was so hard that it forced one of my ribs under the other. I was knocked down and lay where I fell for three or four minutes. I then got up, seized the German soldier's rifle, and smashed his head in, killing him on the spot. I had not had time to do anything for the German prior to his striking me, and I had not aggravated him in any way. It was my intention to help the German just as much as the Belgian. The two soldiers were on the Belgian side of the field. I had got a hand lantern.

I do not know his address. I was at once medically examined by one of the army

surgeons, and the rib which had been displaced was put back.

BRITISH SOLDIER, LANCE-CORPORAL.

I was with the colours for eight years and was called up from the reserve at the beginning of the present campaign. On Sunday the 23rd of August I was with my regiment at Mons and early in the morning of Monday had orders to retire. We fell back in the direction of Soissons. About Thursday or Friday I fell behind the Brigade. For some days before I had been suffering with ingrowing toenails on both feet and I was unable to get attention, and after having marched about 36 miles I had to give up. This would be between 9 and 10 in the morning. I sat by the roadside and took my boots off. A lot more stragglers came along the road, and when I had rested a bit I joined them and we went along the road together. There were quite 30 of us. I cannot tell you any of the men's names, but there was a corporal of the 20th Hussars, a private of the 5th Dragoon Guards, and two Grenadiers. Some were wounded, some were footsore. As we were about to cross a bridge over a river—a permanent bridge, not one made by the troops—a party of German cavalry and infantry who were hidden in the trees and bushes round about came out and cut us off They marched us off to a big house which was on the same side of the river about 4 or 5 miles away. They kept all of us there for about 11 days. There were about 20 Belgian and French prisoners in the same house. We were all together. After we had been there about 9 days they parted the French and Belgian soldiers from us and took them all outside the house away from us. I saw the Germans tie some of these soldiers to trees. I was looking out of a little window, but I could see what went on clearly and distinctly. The trees were not more than 60 or 70 yards away and it was about four or five in the afternoon. I saw five men tied to trees. The Germans were all mad drunk with the stuff they had looted. They started sticking their knives in the faces and necks of the men and I heard the men crying out. They also pricked them with their bayonets. It seemed to me to last a long time, but I do not think now they tortured them for more than a few minutes and then they shot them all. I do not know what the Germans did to the rest of the French and Belgians. The soldiers that I saw killed were, to the best of my belief, two Belgians and three Frenchmen. They left them tied to the trees, but by the next morning they had been taken away. I have no idea why they shot these men except that they were drunk. On the morning after the day that they did this thing two German officers came to us. I had not seen them before. All the English were in one room. Both were drunk. One of them spoke to us in English. "You are British men?" We said "Yes." He said, "Tell us where the British are." We said, "We have been locked up for eight or nine days and we do not know." He said we were "liars," and that we did know. He said, "I shall give you four hours to think about it, and if you do not tell me then I shall do with you "what we did with the others yesterday." He then went away. Very soon after that we heard a lot of firing. Afterwards we found it was the French artillery advancing. They shelled the house and the ground all round and the Germans retreated, leaving their wounded. We held up a white handkerchief which some Frenchwoman had given one of us and the French artillery came up and, after asking us a few questions, released us.

During the whole time we were in the house as prisoners we had nothing but apples and pears. After we were released I saw a gunner of the R.F.A. who had been kicked black and blue from head to foot. His face was all kicked about and his eyes all bloodshot. I do not

h 7

128

know where he came from, they fetched him out from somewhere. We were sent on Nancy and from there I was sent home. Before I was called up I was a police constable in the R. . . . Borough Police Force.

British Soldier.

On Wednesday, 26th August, I was with my regiment at Courtrai. I was wounded at Mons on the 23rd and had to march to St. Quentin; there I was picked up by a field ambulance. We were retiring from our trenches on the Wednesday and had to leave our wounded behind who could not march. The Germans were advancing rapidly in large numbers, it was 3.30, broad daylight. An officer called to us to come and form up to take a position further back. He was a staff officer. He was between us and the Germans. Our only remaining officer was retiring with us. The Germans were turning the wounded over with their feet and pinning them to the floor with their bayonets. I saw several treated in this way. I should think about a dozen. I am pretty confident that it was about that number, but I could not swear to a dozen or any particular number. We turned out 53 strong on the Wednesday morning, but I was not there next time the roll was called, so I do not know how many were left behind. I saw none of the wounded who were lying on the ground attempt to attack them as they came on. When they retired from that trench I got separated from my comrades and hobbled to St. Quentin as best as I could. There I fell in with a field ambulance. Germans did not catch me up. I had my rifle all the time. Our cavalry came up on the left flank to cover our retreat and it was after that when I got separated from my comrades.

BRITISH SOLDIER, LANCE-CORPORAL.

h 10 Outside Mons we were suddenly rushed and had to retire as fast as we could through the village. I am not sure of the name of the village. I was one of the cyclist section—there were 50 of us, a half-company. Lieutenant B... was in command. He has been killed since. He was wounded and died in hospital. Lieutenant B... told me to stay at the corner of the village to see what was coming. I saw the Germans still advancing and sent Dennis, who was with me-he was also a cyclist-back to tell Lieutenant B . . . had sent him back I saw four Germans bayonetting two of our wounded men. I had seen them (the wounded men) trying to get up and crawl away, so I knew they were wounded. It looked to me as if they tried to strip them afterwards. I was about 100 to 200 yards away at the time-keeping out of sight. After that they continued to advance, so I rode off to report to Lieutenant B . . .

Some time later we met some Belgian villagers, who showed us, by signs, that they also had seen our wounded being bayonetted by the Germans. This was on the 23rd or 24th August, about 2 o'clock. On the same day about 4 o'clock we were still retiring. I was firing at the Germans. As I was doing so I saw one of the R.A.M.C. men about 70 yards away. He was attending to a wounded person. I saw two Germans strike at him with either sword or bayonet. His hands were outstretched in front of him, and as they struck I saw him throw his arms up. I saw the flash of the steel coming down—the sun caught it. I thought when I saw them strike at him they were cutting his hands off. I never saw him the R.A.M.C. man—again. I am a bandsman.

British Soldier.

At Le Cateau Private W . . . and myself were ordered to take up a position behind a h 11 haystack 20 yards to our left front. We remained during the retirement, and I believe were the last to leave from that spot. About 2 p.m. I saw a wounded man belonging to the Lancashires, I believe. He was crawling back to the rear on his hands and knees. The Germans were then advancing down the slope. One German came up to the wounded man who sat up and raised his hands. The German struck him with the butt of his rifle two or three times. The wounded man was knocked right down, and never got up that we could see. We then took our chance of the bullets and retired.

BELGIAN RED CROSS WORKER.

About the 15th of August last I joined the Belgian Civilian Red Cross Society and h 12 proceeded in the direction of Malines with my company.

About the 28th or 29th of August (the day after the fighting at Eppeghem) we were going about in search of wounded soldiers, and while doing this a German patrol appeared on the There were about 20 dead or wounded soldiers lying on the battle field, and one of these waved his hand to us for help, but he was seen to do this by the Germans and one of them stabbed him in the breast with a bayonet which he afterwards tried to withdraw, but I saw he was unable to do so and he went away leaving the bayonet still in the body. I was engaged in carrying the wounded who were still alive into a house and I did not see the body of the wounded soldier afterwards, but I knew he could not possibly be alive. One of my company also saw this.

BRITISH RED CROSS OFFICER, CAPTAIN.

On September 1st, at a village between Cheurière and Gournay, about 20 miles N.E. of Paris, 2nd Cavalry Brigade discovered the remains of a motor transport column which had

h 9

been attacked while on the move during the night by some Uhlans. The men of the column had disappeared with one exception—a private, A.S.C., who was lying about 10 yards from the road near a burnt haystack. I took off his identity disc and handed it to a serjeant, who arranged a burying party. I examined the body, and discovered seven wounds, none of which would have been in my opinion fatal, wounds made by some sharp instrument. Some men near me informed me that they had pulled his body from near the middle of the haystack. I examined the wounds, and it seemed clear, from caked blood on margin of wound, that burning took place after the wounds had bled freely. On examining ground around stack, I found about 20 yards from stack several congealed pools of blood and bloodstains leading from the pools towards the remains of the stack, which had been completely burnt and still smouldering. From the amount of blood on ground I consider it impossible that the wounded man could have got to the stack by himself. The body (lower part) slightly charred and whole of body scorched. I consider sequence of events was-

1. Man wounded.

Stack set alight by Uhlans.
 Man found half conscious and bleeding on ground, and thrown into stack.

Had he crawled to stack, and it had afterwards caught alight, he would have been much more severely burnt. The day was a fine dry September morning, and there had been no rain in night.

Belgian Soldier.

About the beginning of September I was on patrol duty between St. Gilles and Termonde and saw two Belgian soldiers whose eyes had been gouged out with bayonet thrusts, and who had received seven bullet wounds in the back. A peasant showed us these soldiers. He had buried them with a sack over the body and very little earth on top. He drew back the sack together with the earth so as to show us the bodies. I informed my officer, but he is now dead.

On the road to Namur I saw the body of a woman lying in the road with a bayonet wound through the heart.

Belgian Soldier.

Between September 8th and 13th my regiment was helping to bring up reinforcements between Malines and Louvain. Between these towns we had an engagement with the Germans lasting four days. On the first of those days a soldier of the 1st Regiment of Carabiniers, who belonged to an advanced guard or patrol, who had been fighting that day, was wounded. The Germans advanced that day, they reached the entry of a village on the line I have mentioned. But they did not take the village. I forget the name of it. That evening search parties went out to bring in the wounded. I don't know the name of the Carabinier to whom I have referred. His body was discovered the following morning. He had a bullet wound which pierced the left leg. He also had four or five gashes of a bayonet on his body. His head was swollen and it bore marks of having been beaten. His head was quite blue in colour. I mean his forehead. I saw the body myself as it lay on the ground where the fighting had been. He was lying on his side. I helped to undo his tunic for the doctor. I heard the doctor say that the bullet wound in the leg would of itself have prevented his being able to walk or escape but that otherwise it would not have been serious. He expressed the opinion that the soldier had been finished off by the bayonet. believe he has been either killed or taken prisoner since.

The doctor was of opinion that the soldier had not bled much from the bullet wound. I saw myself that the blood coming from the bayonet wounds was much more fresh. It was

not yet dry. There was a great deal of blood around the body.

BRITISH OFFICER.

On the 13th September we crossed the Aisne. On the morning of the 14th our Brigade, after bivouacking that night, started out in columns of fours through the village of Vendresse and up a hill. When we got to the top there was a very flat and open plateau; we advanced in open order across the plateau, and suddenly, when we had got about 1,000 yards along it, came under a murderous shell fire; we had had no firing previously; we had orders to incline to the left to a ridge at the top of the Chivy valley; the fire there was so hot that we had to retire temporarily four or five bundred wards down that valley. We then advanced again to the ridge, which deceands Chivy valley; the fire there was so hot that we had to retire temporarily four or five hundred yards down that valley. We then advanced again to the ridge, which descends fairly steeply on the Chivy side, and Captain H... was getting his men in the firing line there when, as he was standing up sideways towards the front, he was struck by a bullet which caused a flesh wound in his right leg, and then shattered the thigh bone of his left leg. He was unable to move; he was carried back below the crest of the ridge, 20 yards or so back, to a natural little hollow. I, Lance-Corporal S..., and Pte. F... attended to the captain and dressed his left leg, which was very painful; whilst we were still doing that the battalion had to retire at about 9.30 a.m., I do not think they could have retired more than 150 yards when we heard the Germans on the think they could have retired more than 150 yards, when we heard the Germans on the ridge above, they could not see us owing to the slope of the ground. We lay there till about

h 14

h 15

2.30 p.m., when the firing in that portion of the line practically stopped. The Germans on the ridge just above us then got up and, coming forward, caught sight of us; we were all lying down flat on the ground; there were ten or a dozen of them, all privates of the 48th Reserve Regiment. I was lying on my face and heard them make a sort of growling noise when they saw us; they put their rifles up immediately, and the captain held up his hand and said, "Please don't, don't"; two or three of them took no notice and several shots were fired; the captain was hit in the chin by a bullet which went through his head and killed him, and had another shot through the stomach. Pte. F... was killed by a shot through the stomach; I and the lance-corporal were not touched; those who had fired were opening their rifles to eject the empty cartridges, and looked as if they were going to shoot again, when one stepped forward and said what sounded like "No, no, no," and pushed their rifles aside; the lance-corporal and I were then taken prisoners. We had had to take down the captain's trousers to dress his leg and put on the blue bandage, which is the first field dressing; his clothes were still like that, so the Germans could not have helped seeing that he was wounded; we none of us had rifles in our hands, as the captain had told us about an hour before to take off our equipment and put it one side to avoid risk in case of capture, which then seemed likely.

Note.—The evidence of Lance-Corporal S . . . has been taken and he corroborates the above evidence in every material particular.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On Monday September 14th, my company (No. 1) was in the firing line near, I think, Landrécies. In front of us was a wheatstack, and I noticed five or six of our men lying down behind it. Several were lifting their arms and legs and never attempted to get up, so I knew that they were wounded. We were in action at the time and the Germans were about 200 yards beyond the wheatstack. A man from the Loyal North Lancashires had joined us. He was wounded in the shoulder and I took him about 50 yards in the rear and bound his shoulder up. I did this in a small pit made by a shell. As soon as I had bound him up I left him and returned to where I had left my company. This would be at about 2 p.m., my company had gone and I could see none of our men about. I returned to where I had left the Lancashire man. After I had returned a few minutes I noticed a party of about 50 Germans coming across from the right. They passed quite near the wheatstack and four of them went up to it. I saw them take two rifles away from the wounded men there. They rejoined their party, which passed on. About half an hour later another party of Germans came along. They were rather large—about 80 or 100. They came from the same direction and took the same course as the others. When they got up to the wheatstack one of them, who looked like an officer, looked round them and bandaged up the leg of one of the wounded men. He did this with something white and I could see he had the man's leg on his knee. He rejoined his men.

About a quarter of an hour after that again, another large party came on the same course. When they had got about 100 yards past the wheatstack one of the Germans at the rear of the party shouted something out in German. All the Germans looked round and four of them came back to where the officer, as I suppose he was, was standing about 80 yards from the wheatstack. The men fired four shots—one each—at the men behind the wheatstack and then rejoined the rest. I saw all this from the small pit where I was with the Lancashire man. He did not see it because he was too badly wounded to move to look out of the pit, I do not know his name, he was a short fellow, and I know he went into the hospital in a village quite close. After the shooting we stayed in the pit until dark. During the whole of this time there was no movement amongst the men lying under the stack. After dark the Lancashire man and I made good our escape and I returned to our lines next morning after taking him to hospital.

BRITISH SOLDIER, N.C.O.

On September 14th last my company was engaged with the enemy in the valley of the River Aisne. Early in the morning, at about 8 or 9 o'clock, I was wounded in the left knee and took shelter in a chalk pit. During the day twelve other men came in, all of whom were wounded. Of these, two were officers, one being Lieut. G... of my own regiment, and the other, I believe, was a subaltern in one of the regiments of Guards. These two officers each had a pistol, but none of the other wounded men in the pit had arms of any sort.

The British force fell back, and by 4 or 5 o'clock in the afternoon three of the wounded men had died and others appeared to be bleeding to death. Therefore, when we heard the approach of the Germans we decided to attract their attention in order that we might get medical assistance. One of the officers happened to have a white handkerchief, and this the officer, whom I believe to have belonged to the Guards, marked with a cross in blood and tied to a folding combination stick-seat. The same officer then held up this flag and in this way attracted the attention of a party of about 8 Germans.

At this time the wounded in the chalk pit were not grouped together but were scattered about the pit lying or sitting in the position which gave each one most ease. With the

n 17

exception of the officer holding up the flag none of us had anything in his hands. The Germans came up to the edge of the pit; it was getting dusk, but the light was still good, and everything clearly discernible. One of the Germans, who appeared to be carrying no arms and who at any rate had no rifle, came a few feet down the slope into the chalk pit. He came to within 8 or 10 yards of some of the wounded men. He looked at the men, laughed, and said something in German to the Germans who were waiting on the edge of the pit.

Immediately one of them fired at the Guards officer; then three or four of us were shot; then Lieut. G...; then myself and the rest of us. I was shot in the right shoulder. After an interval of some time I sat up and found that I was the only man of the ten who were living when the Germans came into the pit, remaining alive and that all the rest were dead. Later, a soldier named D... of my company, came to the pit and I at once told him what had happened. He bound up my shoulder, and early in the morning of Sept. 15th I managed to get to a picket of the Welsh Border Regiment. I told Lieut. D... of that regiment, and also the Medical Officer who attended to me, the story of what had occurred.

Note.—The evidence of Private D...and Lieut. D...has been obtained independently of the above witness and of each other. They establish the reliability of the Lance-Corporal's evidence.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About a fortnight or three weeks after the retirement from Mons I was on outpost duty with others at night time. The main party had orders to withdraw, but I was left at the point where the party had been in order that I might signal any movement of the enemy. The man who was between me and the main party, and who was to have taken my signals, ran away. As I was thus cut off I thought it better after a time to retire. I commenced to retire and got as far as a French farmhouse when 12 Uhlans who were concealed there came out and took me prisoner. They took me round the back into the stackyard, and took away my rifle, bayonet, and ammunition. After that they took off my boots, socks, trousers, shirt and tunic. I had no cap, as I had lost it the night before. I had no vest and I was then completely naked. They even took off my identification plate and used it as monocle and played with it in front of me. This plate they kept as well as my other things. They eat my two biscuits from my haversack in front of me. They then walked me out of the yard further from the house to a spot where there were several trees, to one of which they bound me with a rope. First my hands were tied behind me and round the tree. Another cord bound my legs close to the tree and another cord was round my body. I was naked, as I have before said, and they went away and left me. This was early morning—they went into the farm. On leaving me they jeered at me and one spat in my face. After 4 in the afternoon some of them came to look at me, and one had a tin of water and pretended to offer me a drink, but purposely spilt it down my chest, and then laughed. They went away. I remained tied to the tree all night and all the next day. The Uhlans came back at about 5 on that evening, and made motions which I understood meant to ask if I wanted something to eat. When I nodded they took food from their pockets and eat it in front of me and then went away. The next day they returned about noon, as I judged it to be by the sun, and after looking at me went away. That is the last I saw of them. I had all along tried to release my hands and feet, and at about 9 p.m. or so on the third day I managed to get my hands out, and I then succeeded in wriggling the cords up above my head, and got myself free. I had spent two nights and three days tied up to the tree, and I could not sleep at all as it rained nearly all the time. As far as I could see, nobody but German soldiers were in the farmhouse. I did not shout. When I got away I made for what I thought were the British lines. I was fired at by the French outposts and lay down. Then two French soldiers came up and spoke in French, and then took me to an officer who could speak English, and to whom I told what had happened. He took me to a farmhouse, where the only available clothing which could be found for me were a skirt and a blouse. In these garments I was taken to the Army Service Corps, where I was attended to. My exposure made me ill; my tongue was swollen, and I could only eat with difficulty. I was in pain and exhausted. I rejoined my regiment, and took part in the battles on the Aisne near Soissons. After about 10 days I got fearful pains, and was invalided home with rheumatism. I have got much better and expect to go to the front soon.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On a Monday in September I was in a battle on the Aisne, and shortly before the middle of the day was wounded in the leg. It was a bad wound and I was quite disabled (later my leg was amputated). I and a number of other wounded men of my own regiment and the Black Watch were taken by our own men to what was thought to be a place of safety. Whilst there the German infantry came up right amongst us. It was broad daylight and plain to see that we were all wounded men. The Germans fired at our wounded men and killed 17, leaving only three alive. I actually saw this.

h 19

One of the Germans came up to me and presented his rifle at close quarters. I put up my hands and showed him I could not move. He fired at me point blank and the bullet went through my hand cutting off a finger. They left me and the other two survivors (who were fired at) on the ground. We remained there until the Tuesday night, when some men of the Gloucester Regiment picked us up and took us to a small farm where we were attended to by the Red Cross people. The other two men were of my own regiment; I know them well, but do not know their names.

BRITISH SOLDIER (LANCE-CORPORAL).

That on September 14th at the battle of the Aisne he was wounded about 10 a.m., and crawled to a large haystack. While lying there, the Germans advanced and took our arms and equipment. Between 30 and 40 wounded were lying round the haystack. Those of us who could move were ordered round to the German side of the haystack. We lay there all day. Towards dusk our men advanced and drove the Germans back. Our troops got within 600 yards of the haystack. The Germans retired about three or four hundred yards, and then commenced firing at the German side of the haystack where our men had been ordered to go. The firing continued for 10 minutes. I and a captain of the Royal Sussex were helped off by two men who had crawled round back to our side of the stack. I was wounded in the knee. I do not know the men who helped me. These two came round at once. I never saw the other men again.

BRITISH OFFICER.

I was wounded at the battle of the Aisne, 20th September. After I was wounded I was lying about 30 yards in front of a trench that was occupied by Germans. They could not see me because I was under the crest of a little hill. A number of my men were also wounded, and I could see them plainly. I tried to make myself comfortable and to get my pack off, and asked Private C..., of the B company, to help me; he was also wounded. He raised himself to a kneeling position and was at once shot through the head. This would be about a quarter of a hour after I was hit, and the firing from us had ceased for about that period. C... had no rifle in his hands. I then noticed desultory firing from the German trenches, and I saw the bodies of our men who had already been killed or wounded turned over, evidently by the force of bullets; one was hit three times. I then saw one of my men get up, and, holding up his hands, advance towards the German trench. A German—I think a non-commissioned officer—halted him at a distance of about 10 yards, spoke to him a few words, and shot him through the head. This man was obviously wounded, and had no rifle. I then tried to get away myself, and dragged myself along with my hands. I had got rid of my pack, belt, and sword, as they impeded me. On hearing me move they began to search the ground with rifle-fire. I could hear the words of command, and also the bullets striking all round me. I still went on crawling. When I began to move, all our men who had been in front of this trench were dead or wounded, and there had been no sign of an attack on our part for some time. It was broad daylight, not later than half-past two, and from their position the Germans could see 400 yards directly in front of them.

British Soldier, N.C.O.

About September 20th our regiment, with the Wiltshires, the Worcestershires and the Royal Irish Rifles, took part in an engagement with the Germans. The engagement began early in the day and lasted practically all day. After we had retired to our trenches—a few minutes after we had got back into them—the Germans retired into their trenches. The distance between the trenches of the opposing forces was about 400 yards. I should say about 50 or 60 of our men had been left lying on the field. From our trenches, after we had got back to them, I distinctly saw German soldiers come out of their trenches and go over to spots where our men were lying and bayonet them. I could not say how many German soldiers did this. But I should say there were quite a dozen. Some of our men were lying nearly halfway between the trenches. The nearest that I saw any German soldier come and bayonet any of our men was about halfway between the trenches. One could see quite clearly. It was still daylight.

After two or three subsequent engagements at the same place, fought from the same trenches,

I again saw the Germans do the same thing, that is, bayonetting our wounded.

About October 19th or 20th, we were entrenched outside a village near La Bassée, of which village the Germans were in occupation. Our trench was about 400 or 500 yards from the end of the village nearest to us. I saw five or six German infantry soldiers go into a house at that end of the village, and, after a very short interval, they came out again dragging by the shoulders an old woman. She was screaming. In front of the door of that house, out in the street, one of the soldiers struck the woman with his entrenching shovel. I saw him pull out his shovel. He struck her on the head. The woman fell down. I only saw one blow given. I could not say whether the woman was killed, but I should think so. The soldiers went away. The body remained lying on the ground. I did not see it removed. This happened in the afternoon. The same night the Germans evacuated the village. I did not

h 21

h 22

see any other of the village population, so I could not say whether the Germans were driving them out. I could only see the houses right at the end near us. We entered the village that night. It was a very small one—I should say, not a hundred houses. The only persons whom I saw in the village after we had entered were an old man and an old woman.

I should say I was only about 400 yards from the house out of which the woman was

dragged.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

At battle of Aisne, between 8th and 10th October, we were in first line of trenches; we advanced into a wood; Germans too strong; had to retire, leaving the wounded on ground; Germans advanced and bayonetted a wounded man named R.... After the fight, four of us were carrying wounded to a field hospital in a waterproof sheet. Germans fired on us; the Germans then about 200 yards off.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About October 18th my battalion was attacking a village just outside Armentières. The engagement lasted from 8.30 a.m. to 10.30 a.m. Behind us was a thick wood and the Germans were also attacking us from the village. We got up to within 50 yards of the Germans and were then compelled to retire. We had lost a good many men and when we retired we were able to take all our wounded back with us except one, I do not know his name, he was lying on his side with his head resting on his forearm. We had retired into the wood—a distance of about 100 yards from the wounded man—when I saw a German go up to him, he bayonetted the wounded man, one thrust, I should say in the head. The Germans were all under our fire at the time and I heard one of our men say afterwards that he shot the German who killed our wounded man.

BRITISH SOLDIER, N.C.O.

One Sunday in October, about 18th, on the Aisne, near Vailly, we occupied some trenches. The Worcesters were in trenches next to us. The Germans advanced and Captain R... thought they were going to surrender and ordered us to cease fire. He advanced to meet them and was shot and the Germans got close and drove out the Worcesters, only wounded being left. From our trench we enfiladed the Worcesters' trench and were able to drive the Germans off. As they retired they deliberately shot the wounded in the Worcesters' trench. I was only about 15 yards off and there could be no mistake, as only the wounded were there. They were easily recognised by the position in which they lay. The time was about 2.30–3.30 p.m. On 24th October we were in an old café, near La Bassée, Private C... and Private D... called me to see something. In the garden were some sacks of potatoes. Among them two sacks contained one a man and one a woman apparently cut up. They had their clothes either on or pushed in the sacks with them. The Germans had occupied the village for days before. We had just driven them out.

Note.—The latter part of this man's evidence has been corroborated by Private C . . .

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On October 24th, the day Colonel L... was killed, I was in a bayonet charge in a wood off Zouarabeeke*; we were 150-200 strong. Lieut. O... was in charge of 16 platoon. I had been cut off from my company and found myself with No. 16 platoon. After the charge I and about a dozen other men, including my chum, who was killed in November, were searching the German wounded for firearms and ammunition; the other dozen men searching were Oxford Light Infantry and Worcesters. I did not know any of them. I saw English and German wounded lying inter-mixed, the result of a previous charge, as this whole affair had lasted about one-and-a-half hours. We were the reinforcements. Twelve to fifteen of the English wounded were lying dead with their throats cut; they had been bandaged up and attended to by their comrades, showing that they had been wounded and then killed after they had received first aid. I cannot say for certain whether the Germans came again temporarily over the ground. I saw myself five prisoners, including an officer unwounded, who had been shamming dead in the woods, not in this spot—the wood stretched for miles. I could not say when or how exactly the men had had their throats cut, but I am quite certain I saw them in the condition I have described.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

We were retreating from a trench outside Ypres; only myself, Private W..., and a lance-corporal, got out alive, and joined the regiment at Ypres. The Germans advanced over the trenches and the headquarters trench where I had been on guard for three days. When the Germans reached our wounded, I saw their officer using his sword to cut them down.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

In October, outside Ypres, we were in trenches and were attacked, and had to retire until reinforced by other companies of the Royal Fusiliers. Then we retook the trenches and found the wounded, between 20 and 30, lying in the trenches with bayonet wounds and some shot. Most of them, say three-quarters, had their throats cut. Two or three days after I was wounded with a shrapnel shell.

h 24

h 25

h 26

h :27

h 28

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 30 At Ypres on the 29th October last I saw the Germans as we retired going through our wounded as they (the Germans) advanced, and bayonetting them as they lay on the ground. Shells and bullets were flying all round us, and it is impossible for me to say how many of our men were so treated, but I saw the Germans myself doing it, and am quite sure of it.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 31 On 29th October I was in the retirement from Ypres, when the German troops came up to us in the trenches. Whilst I was endeavouring to get away I saw a private in the Scots Guards lying wounded and disabled in the trench. Two or three German infantrymen came up to him and, though he begged for mercy, they killed him with the bayonet. It was plain to them that he was a wounded and disabled man. It was the middle of the day. I heard the Germans firing as they went along our trenches, and I was told by a wounded man of the Scots Guards that they were shooting at our wounded men. I only actually saw the one case mentioned above.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 32 I fought in the retreat from Mons and in the battles of the Aisne, and was wounded in both legs and right shoulder at Ypres on 31st October.

After I was wounded I and four other wounded men crawled to a village and took

refuge in the cellar of a house.

One of the four was R . . . of my own regiment; the other three were men of a Scotch regiment (in kilts).

The Germans surrounded the house and forced us up to the ground floor at the point of

A number of the Germans were lined up on the opposite side of the road and as we were forced across the room they shot us point blank with their rifles.

This was in broad daylight.

We were all able to walk (limping), but it was quite plain that we were wounded men. The other four men were killed. I was not struck, but threw myself down when the others fell.

I remained lying on the ground until some of our troops came up and drove the Germans out.

BRITISH SOLDIER--STAFF SERGEANT.

Near Ypres, in the front trenches, at night time, on the 1st November, the enemy's trenches were about 150 yards away. There was barbed wire entanglement in between. A h 33 private of some company in the Welsh Regiment went out as a volunteer to cut the wire. He fell from a bullet wound. There was a moon, but it was hazy. While the men of his regiment waited for a cloud to pick him up, he got killed by bayonets. He was fetched in and buried behind the trench. I saw him and could see he had six or seven bayonet wounds in the body. He was then buried. I was wounded the same day, that is why I can remember the date.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On the 7th November I was platoon orderly—taking messages from the firing line to h 34 headquarters--about midday. I found a private of the Sussex who had just come out of the trenches into a little wood and was hit in the left shoulder. I bandaged him up and put him under cover in a dug-out alone. The Germans broke through about 3 o'clock. came through the wood and drove them back. I went to the dug-out to see how the Sussex man was going on. I found him dying. He had been hit over the head, and he said, "They have done me in." He died while I was there. His head had been bashed in; a big dent in his head just above the ear. I was wounded myself the day after.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

At La Bassée, after we had been already about seven weeks there, the company officer in h 35 charge ordered a charge to capture a machine gun which the Germans were firing from the trenches, which latter were only about 180 or 200 yards away. The charge was to be made at dawn on November 26th. The charge was made accordingly. The Germans started firing their machine gun. Our men attacked them with the bayonet. We drove them out of the trenches. The Germans tried to outflank us on both sides. We lost about 100 in killed and wounded. Several of our men were lying on the ground in front of the German trenches. It was plain to anyone that they were wounded. The blood was running from them. I saw the Germans come out of their trenches and strike our men with the butts of their rifles and bayonet others of our men.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

At Lailly-sur-la-Lys about the 19th of December we were in trenches. I was in the front and the Germans were entrenched 200 yards away. The night before we made an attack and

it was a failure. We had a number of wounded, but we could not get them all in with us. We left about six out there. In broad daylight as these men moved or groaned the Germans fired at them. This happened four or five times, as I myself saw. Most of the men of our section were Special Reserve men whose names I don't know.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

My husband is a messenger. On the first day of the arrival of the Germans in Brussels I was going to Tervueren, a suburb of Brussels, looking for work as a charwoman. I knew that the Germans were in Brussels, but I did not know there were any at Tervueren. At Tervueren I came across a regiment of Germans. They were all standing in groups. In one of the groups I saw a Belgian officer tied to a tree. A German soldier with a fine helmet was with other German soldiers cutting open the Belgian soldier, who was still alive, right down the front through his tunic and other clothes. Seeing this I fled back to Brussels. The same day I and my husband and child fled to Asse*; there we met on the road about 15 German infantry soldiers, who stopped us. First we were ordered to put our hands up. They ransacked our bundles and took the money from our pockets. After having taken the money, they blamed us for having weapons, but none of us had any. Besides ourselves there were with us one man and one woman, whom we met on the road. When they saw the Germans they stopped behind. The soldiers took off my clothes except my chemise and sent me on like this with the addition of a small skirt. My husband could do nothing; when he tried to speak they put a pistol in his mouth. They made us sit down with them for four hours and bullied us (I still in my chemise), knocking me and my child about. After this ill-treatment they gave us a kick each and told us to be gone, and we went on to Ostend.

Firing on Hospitals, Stretcher Bearers, &c.

BRITISH CORPORAL.

After the retreat from Mons, about the fourth day the retreat began, at some town whose name I cannot remember, we were guarding a bridge. The red cross flag was clearly visible above the roofs of the houses. The hospital was shelled. I saw two shells strike the hospital, which was in the main street, or at any rate a big street. I think this place was Bouchain, but not sure.

On the 10th of September, on advancing from between the Marne and the Aisne, the Germans were entrenched, and we advanced on them in the morning. They fought for two hours, and then in front trench a number of white flags were put up. This was on our right. The men then ceased fire and advanced to take the enemy prisoners. After they had advanced a part of the way the Germans opened fire suddenly, to which our men responded. After this the Germans were taken prisoners.

BRITISH SERGEANT MAJOR.

On the second day after the retreat from Mons had ended, we were attacking the enemy's trenches; about 50 Germans in the front trench put up a number of white flags; we went forward to take the men prisoners, fire opened upon us from behind the first trench by 180 Germans. We captured our men, and our flanking parties, the Northumberland Fusiliers, succeeded in capturing the other 180 men.

On the 23rd August the battle of Mons began. The hospital, which was empty except the nuns, was shelled and then the church. In fact, the Germans used these marks as a convenient means of range-finding.

On the 2nd October, at Vailly, as we were just going into Vailly from the Aisne, the church which was used as a hospital, with about 50 beds, was shelled in spite of its duly flying the Red Cross. This did not occur until the rest of the town had been shelled.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I took part with my regiment in the retreat from Mons. About three days after the retreat had begun, we were retiring from a fairly large town. I cannot remember the name. We stayed one night in the town. There was a Red Cross hospital on the further outskirts of the town. Shortly after dawn, I should say about 5 a.m., we started to leave the town. We had got a mile or two out of the town. The Germans had been pressing upon us all the time. From about a mile or two beyond the town we looked back and saw shells dropping on the hospital. The last I saw was the hospital actually breaking out in flames. I understand there were about 400 in the hospital. Some of my regiment were there. I have never heard of them since.

h 37

'n 38

h 38 (a)

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 40

h 44

I was at Cambrai on the 26th August 1914. I was with my company and we were retiring from the first position we had taken up. A party of stretcher-bearers came from our rear flank and passed along a road in the direction of a church at Cambrai which was being used as a hospital. I was quite close to them—a matter of 50 yards or so. I was lying against the bank of a hedge. I had been wounded in the right foot and left calf about an hour before. I saw at the least six wounded men on stretchers—there was nothing else moving on this road—it was on the flank of the action. The stretcher-bearers had to go about 600 yards to the church, and all this time they were under shell fire. Two stretcher-bearers were wounded and one R.A.M.C. man. I do not know the names of the stretcher-bearers nor of the R.A.M.C. He came over on the same boat as I did from Rouen. I actually saw this man struck in the thigh. The stretcher-bearers who came back later for other wounded told me that two of the stretcher-bearers had been wounded by this shell fire. There were none of our batteries there at all, they came up later and even then did not go into that position. There were no machine guns or infantry firing on the road or near it. There was no reason at all for firing on the stretcher-bearers-there was no cover on the road and they must have stood out clearly on the road. I was taken to the church at about 12 o'clock. The church was flying the Red Cross. I was in it about a couple of hours and during that time two or three shells fell very close to the church, and one of them struck a small building adjoining the church and then the doctor ordered the church to be cleared of wounded men and we were taken away to Le Cateau in carts. We had no artillery in the village, nor was there any firing by our men in the village, nor any combatants in the village to fire, and I do not know any reason why the Germans should have dropped their shells so near the church.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

After the battle of Aerschot I was engaged in helping to carry in the wounded with a Little Brother of the Red Cross. The doctor was there. I was engaged in carrying in a wounded German from a wood with the Brother when the Germans fired on us. There were no Belgian troops within a kilometre of us. And they fired with aim. They fired directly on us. We hid at once with the wounded man behind a house. This happened near a village close to Aerschot.

BRITISH SOLDIER, SERGEANT.

Early in September, on the Aisne, I was with the machine gun in the trenches. A platoon of men were sent forward about 9 a.m. to reconnoitre the enemy's trenches, which were about 600 yards away, and which trenches had been reported vacated. As they went forward they were fired upon, but they continued to advance for a distance of 300 yards. About 17 were wounded of the platoon of from 50 to 60 men. They lay in the open for several hours. Before dark our stretcher bearers, wearing the Red Cross badge, went out to pick up the wounded; there had been no firing for four hours or so before this. They were fired upon by the Germans; they took what cover they could in the furrows of the mangold field and waited until dark, when they brought in the wounded. One Red Cross man was killed when the firing took place.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On the 9th of September I was with my regiment about 30 miles from Coulommiers. I h 43 think the place was called Soissons. I got hit in the neck, and a splinter of shell in my shoulder. I got up and ran to the back of the wood in which we were when I got the wound. Bandsman B. . . . helped me up and along the road. He helped me to stretcher-bearers of the R.A.M.C. They put me on the stretcher and were going to carry me to a field hospital about 4 miles behind the firing line. I was the only man being carried on a stretcher, but there were three or four men of the Cornwalls, who were not wounded, but who were retiring, and they caught me up. The Germans fired on me and the stretcher-bearers before these men came up. We were under fire for quite 60 yards, the stretcher-bearers going at a walk. Germans were quite close-I cannot put it into yards, but I could see them quite plainly on my right. They were kneeling, and there were about seven of them. I am quite certain they were firing on us and not at anything else. There was nobody in the direction in which they were firing except ourselves, that is, myself and the stretcher-bearers. Somehow or other these Germans had got round our line. The stretcher-bearers had the Red Cross, and the Germans were so near that they must have been able to see it; besides they could see I was on a stretcher. In all they fired about 10 rounds at us. The stretcher-bearers were not hit, nor was I. I do not know the names of the stretcher-bearers, nor the names of any of the men who came up whilst the Germans were firing.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

During the battle of the Aisne, about September 13th, I was in a small village—I think the name was Cales—near the Aisne. I had been taken there from the Aisne, where I had been wounded and was put by the Red Cross in the church at Cales. There were alout 50 of us there. The church had a high spire and was flying the Red Cross flag. As it was

right behind the firing line there could have been no reason for the Germans firing in that direction unless they were aiming deliberately at the church hospital. A shell hit the church late at night, lifting off roof off one corner. I was in opposite corner. In consequence, we were shifted next morning. While we were being shifted to the railway station the Germans shelled the Red Cross waggons, killing 10 horses and a driver.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

We were in trenches at the other side of the Aisne between the 12th and 15th September. One morning about 10 a.m. the ambulance waggon was going along the road taking the wounded from the trenches to the hospital in the village. It was about 400 yards from the nearest part of the trenches. Several shells, I should think about 15, seemed to be aimed deliberately at the waggon.

The horses were killed. I was told all the men were killed, but I do not know if that is

correct.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

At Bucy-le-Long, in September, we were behind a large hospital, flying a Red Cross flag from a chimney; the flag could easily be seen. This was shelled three times in the same day —in the daylight. At the last time the hospital was in flames, and the patients being moved out all day. I saw several of these taken out.

British Soldier.

On the 29th September I was wounded at the River Aisne. The Germans were shelling a temporary hospital behind me in the village—it was a big farmhouse flying the Red Cross flag. There could be no mistaking it. There was no obstacle between the enemies' position and the hospital; so it could not have been accidental. I was taken away to a barn—not to the hospital—and, later, to Braisne.

British Soldier.

In September at the battle of the Aisne, while I was in the trenches above Vailly, our wounded were in a church in the village of Vailly and the Germans began to shell it. Some one then put out a Red Cross flag from an opening in the steeple, but I saw that in spite of this the Germans not only continued to shell it, but seemed to do so more vigorously. We had then to remove our wounded into a large house about 50 yards away.

British Soldier.

At Courtonne (battle of the Aisne), about the middle of October last, there was a large house used as a Red Cross Depôt with a huge flag hung out from the second or third floor and reaching to the ground (made of tarpaulin). The Germans shelled the building continuously though not always daily for the week I was there. We were afterwards relieved by the French, and I do not know what happened to the building afterwards. The building was injured while I was there, but so far as I know no one was hurt.

While I was in the advance trenches at Beaulne* as a telephone operator, the 1st Welsh battalion, who were in the trenches with me, had been engaging a body of about 50 Germans some 200 to 300 yards away. I saw the Germans cease firing and put up their hands waving white handkerchiefs. When some of the battalion went forward to take them prisoners the Germans behind opened fire on them with machine guns and they had to retire to the

trenches, some being wounded. I cannot say how many.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On the 25th October, at Bois Grenier, I had just taken a despatch to the firing line and was returning. A doctor asked me to show him where the field hospital was; I showed him and went on my way. On my return, I found him dead with his arms and legs blown off by shell-fire within 20 yards of the hospital. This was at 1.30 p.m., and there was no firing by our troops from any point nearer than a mile.

The hospital was a big private house at the end of the village which had been deserted all day. That village had been occupied by us a few days before, but not for some days prior to the 25th. The Red Cross flag was flying all the time on October 25th, and the staff was

tall enough for the flag to be easily seen above the building.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On October the 30th, at about 7 a.m., I was wounded in the trenches near Zonnebeke. I was ordered to report myself at the 1st Field Ambulance, which was in a farmhouse about 600 yards in rear of the trenches. It was standing quite by itself on the side of the road. There was no battery or headquarters anywhere near it. After I had been in the farmhouse about half an hour it began to be shelled; shells hit it repeatedly, and the roof was blown in. We were all got into field ambulance wagons—there were three of them. We were to be taken to the Field Ambulance Brigade about $2\frac{1}{2}$ miles further in rear. We started under heavy

* 2

h 45

h 46

h 47

h 48

h 49

h 50

shell fire, which was succeeded by shrapnel and rifle fire. The rifle fire came from a party of Germans on our right front who had somehow or other got through our lines—these Germans were about 250 yards off. There was nothing near the wagons to justify the shell, shrapnel, or rifle fire.

After we had gone about 200 yards those of us who were able to walk got out of the ambulance and ran along the ditch at the side of the road for cover. The rest stayed in the ambulance. The rifle fire followed us along the road for about a mile. The shell and shrapnel followed us right to the field ambulance. When we arrived there I saw that the field ambulance had begun to be fired on. I waited outside for about 10 minutes. The ambulance was in a farmhouse, and was being hit by shell and shrapnel; one of the farm buildings was quite demolished. Shrapnel went through the roof of the farm itself in several places. At the end of 10 minutes I went in an ambulance with a number of other wounded to Ypres. We had shrapnel bursting occasionally near the wagons on our way to Ypres. I do not think anyone was hit from first to last; I saw no one. I cannot give the name of anyone in the ambulances; the men all belonged to different regiments. Both the hospitals were flying the Red Cross flag.

British Soldier, N.C.O.

At Ploegsteert, some day in November, before the 13th (we had come in from Houplines) the enemy artillery shelled two hospitals, both conspicuous; one, red and white brick, on a side of a road with no houses between it and the enemy, having a Red Cross flag flying from a window: the other, a white house (the last house) nearest the enemy—having a Red Cross flag hoisted at a chimney, and another from the window. The roof of the last was completely stripped, and the patients had to be removed. All the windows of the other were broken by the explosion of a shell. The Field Ambulance took away the wounded. I could see this, and we retired just afterwards.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was in the hospital in Armentières, with rheumatism. The hospital had been a civil hospital and flew the Red Cross flag. Soon after I got in there the hospital was shelled. This shelling went on, while the wounded (including myself) were taken out in the ambulances towards Bailleul. This was in broad daylight. All the other men there were strangers to me.

Abuse of Red Cross.

Belgian Soldier, Sergeant-Major.

I was at Chaudfontaine with my whole battalion. We were cut off from the rest of the Belgian Army and eventually we escaped by night marches. We stopped a German motor. It was brought in by our sentries. It was an open car, grey in colour, and had a Red Cross flag on it. There were in it one officer, one non-commissioned officer, and two soldiers fully armed and not wounded. They had other arms in the car, more than enough for the four occupants. This was on August 10th or 11th. They were surprised at an S-shaped bend in the road and unable to resist us. They were put in the Fort of Chaudfontaine. This was subsequently blown up by a German shell falling in the magazine and they were all killed.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

During the retreat from Mons, at a place called Noyon, I saw a German Red Cross ambulance waggon in a ditch, the two front wheels shattered to pieces. I could see a maxim gun tripod screwed to the floor just inside the doors at the back. There was a party of us who saw this.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

We were at Aerschot at the railway station. There arrived near us a (German) ambulance waggon marked with the Red Cross, drawn by horses. We did not fire, thinking they were going to pick up their wounded. At 150 metres away from us they turned round the horses and opened the doors at the back and fired upon us with a maxim mitrailleuse. This was five o'clock in the evening, the 25th, or 25th, or 27th of August. We took cover at once, but there were one or two of us wounded.

BELGIAN SOLDIER, N.C.O.

I was serving at Henne, near Liège, about the 9th or 10th September. There are two of the Liège forts there. About 5 or 6 p.m. I saw a motor car carrying a Red Cross flag approaching 500 or 600 yards off. It approached without interference. Almost at the same time that I first saw it the car turned round to avoid a patrol. There were in the car an officer

and three soldiers. The car was surrounded and no resistance was offered. I know that one

of our officers saw the incident. The Germans in the car were all taken prisoners.

Two hours later I saw two more cars carrying the red cross. They were coming along just exactly the same road and came up to within 500 yards of our position. They came up past the first sentry. As they passed, a German on the platform of one of the cars fired at and killed the sentry. The other sentry called for reinforcements and fired at the cars, which turned round and escaped.

In each case the cars bore a Red Cross flag spread out on the front of them.

BRITISH SOLDIER, N.C.O.

On 15th September 12.50 at Paissy Ridge (Aisne) we had repulsed an attack of the Germans. The Northamptons were on our left. After the repulse we saw a party of Germans come out of the wood in our front about 600 yards off with four stretchers and a Red Cross flag waving. Our Colonel ordered the cease-fire and the party advanced some 200 or 300 yards. The next thing we knew was five or 10 minutes after the trenches were swept with maxim fire. Under cover of this a strong body of the enemy formed and advanced to take our trenches. They failed in this and we charged. When amongst their wounded after driving them off we found the stretchers with machine guns still strapped in them.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 19th of September last I was present at Lierre, which is one of the forts in the first line of the defences at Antwerp. I was engaged in rebuilding the line of trenches. I saw a German Red Cross ambulance motor car coming towards me. The car was surrounded by a Belgian Army patrol, and when the car had got into the middle of the patrol the hood was suddenly opened from the top, the two halves of it pulling right down, and four machine guns were disclosed mounted in the car. The machine guns immediately opened fire on the Belgians and killed or wounded the greater part of them. As far as I could see there were four German soldiers working the guns, but there may have been others in the car who were helping to load the guns. The Belgian patrol had not fired a shot at the car before the machine guns were disclosed and started firing. Our troops then opened fire on the car and a general engagement took place, further German troops coming up. We repulsed this attack and captured the car. On examining the car we found that the hood was made of steel or metal and when the two halves were opened they fell back so as to cover and protect the wheels and the lower portions of the car.

The chauffeur as soon as the guns in the car opened fire got off his seat and underneath the car. Neither the chauffeur nor the soldiers in the car had any red-cross marks on their uniform but there was a large red cross about $2\frac{1}{2}$ feet high on either side of the hood and at the back. The car was painted grey. Every one of the soldiers in the car and the chauffeur were killed by us, not one of them escaped. There was no Belgian officer present when this incident took place, only a sergeant and a corporal. They belonged to the 6th Regiment of the Line. I did not notice the number of the regiment to which the German soldiers belonged and I am not sure that they had a number on their uniforms. I do not think there

was an officer in the car. I was about 50 metres away when the car opened fire.

There were many wounded Germans near the trenches where I was working; a number of them had been wounded in a fight that had taken place here the preceding day during which there was a bayonet charge. We understood that the motor car was coming to pick up these German wounded and thus it was that we allowed the car to come up. The car came up at an ordinary slow pace as if it had wounded in it and we had no suspicion of its real character. After it had been captured we broke up the whole car and it was smashed to bits. It was also hit by German shells.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the middle of September I and four others were in advance of my company. We were in a small village near Rotselaer. We were marching in the fields in the direction of Louvain. About 4 p.m. a motor car came along the road from the direction of Louvain. We were each side of the road. The motor car got to within 300 or 400 metres before anything happened. I had first seen the motor car when it was 700 or 800 metres away. There was a large red cross on the side of the car, so we allowed it to come on without firing. The red cross was a flag fixed to a stick. When about 300 metres away the car stopped and turned and a mitrailleuse opened fire on us from the motor car.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was present when the Germans attacked Belgian Infantry of the Line near Bornhem, which is between the Scheldt and Malines, towards the end of September. The Germans had made a bayonet charge on the Belgian trenches and a great many of the Germans had been killed and wounded by the Belgian machine guns. After the Germans withdrew a short distance, a German Red Cross motor ambulance drove along a road on the flank of the Belgian position and leaving the road came over the fields between Belgian trenches and the

h 58

h 59

h 60

Germans. The ambulance was turned round and backed a little distance so that the rear of it was turned towards the Belgian trenches. Men with stretchers, wearing Red Cross brassards, descended from the ambulance, apparently to pick up wounded. The Belgians stopped firing, and the hanging curtains at the rear of the car were drawn aside and fire was opened with a machine gun from the ambulance along the Belgian trenches. Belgian guns opened fire upon the ambulance and it withdrew. The men who fired with the machine gun were dressed as Red Cross men with brassards and before firing started with a stretcher. I was in a position on a hill about 900 mètres from where the ambulance was with 14 other men under a sergeant who also saw what happened We were in charge of two quick-firing 55 millimetre guns. This happened in the morning. The Germans arrived in great numbers and there was no time to ask any questions about what the ambulance did, but very many, I think the most of the men in that part of the trench, are dead and many were killed then. The position we occupied was an advanced position from the Fort of Bornhem.

BRITISH OFFICER.*

h 62 al

At about 10.30 a.m. on the 23rd October, 1914, I was with a party of my men in a ditch about 70 yards south of a trench and isolated cottage occupied by German infantry (part of the 211th Regiment, I afterwards found out from the numerals embroidered on the shoulder straps of those killed, wounded, and taken prisoner).

Rifle fire was directed upon us from the above-mentioned trench and after we had replied for some minutes, fire was opened upon us and upon others of our regiment from the cottage which was flying a Red Cross flag. I was sufficiently close to be able to see the muzzle of a rifle protruding from an upper window. Subsequently, we surrounded the house and took a number of armed unwounded prisoners.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

h 63

Some time during the first week in November I saw at Herve, in the Rue Moreau, several motor cars bearing the German Red Cross upon them. They came from the direction of the German frontier and were on their way to Liège. One of them struck a heap of stones and was overturned in the street mentioned. Two quite close to the spot, about 20 yards from where the car overturned. Two German officers and some soldiers were in the car and when it overturned I saw, myself, artillery ammunition, namely, shells and other things, thrown on to the ground. They had fallen from the Red Cross car and were afterwards put back into it by the soldiers in charge of it. It was a covered car with large red crosses on the sides.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

h 64

In the battle of Tirlemont I was with my regiment at a small town which the Germans had set on fire—I do not know the name of the town—it was about three miles from Tirlemont in the direction of Diest.

An engagement was proceeding between our first line of troops and the Germans, and I was in the second line of troops. While we waiting for an order to advance an ambulance or stretcher came up, apparently carried by Belgian Red Cross men. It came to about 200 yards away from us and then, to our astonishment, fire was opened from it on to us and we then discovered that instead of the stretcher containing a wounded Belgian soldier, as we had supposed, it contained a mitrailleuse and was manned by German soldiers dressed in Belgian uniforms wearing the Red Cross.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

h 65

At Vissenaeken, near Tirlemont, the Belgian soldiers had an engagement with the German troops and had to retreat. I was afterwards with my company in a little garden, and saw some German soldiers, dressed as Belgian soldiers, carrying stretchers. As they passed they saw us, and some of them shot at us. My company then retreated into a large field and joined the other Belgian soldiers. Some of the German soldiers whom I had previously seen (who were dressed in Belgian uniforms) then shot at us with a mitrailleuse, at a distance of some 50 to 60 metres. There were between five and nine Germans with the mitrailleuse, and about 17 Belgian soldiers were wounded by shots from the mitrailleuse. These German soldiers were wearing the uniforms of Belgian infantry soldiers, and I am absolutely certain that they were in fact German soldiers.

Abuse of the White Flag.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

h 66

On the 6th August, in afternoon between three and four o'clock, in the country between Vottem and Liège, I was looking out of a little window in the Rue Ferdinand Nicolas, where I live. I saw 100 to 150 Germans in the open country; they were being fired at

^{*} This is a statement made in writing by the officer in question. It is not a deposition.

by Belgian soldiers who were firing from the shelter of the standing corn. The Germans all suddenly held up their hands and threw down their guns. The Belgian soldiers came out into the open towards the Germans. When the Belgians were quite close some Germans pulled revolvers out and shot some of the Belgians. I afterwards saw many (33) Belgians and 13 Germans at this very spot, they were all killed. All the Belgians and Germans were buried in the churchyard at Vottem. I helped to dig the graves. I can give no names of victims.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

When I was at Liège in August, I saw shells falling on the hospital, although there was a

Red Cross flag flying.

At Antwerp in September I saw in the hospital at Boom an old woman of 70 years of age with two bullet wounds in her head; she was still alive when I saw her. In the same hospital I saw a small boy, 13 years old, with his left hand cut off above the wrist. "L'Hôpital de la Croix-Rouge à Boom" (one of the suburbs of Antwerp). The name and address of a nurse there who would bear this out I have written down in my note-book; she nursed this child. The hospital was a school transformed into a hospital. I was taken to this hospital for three days from Ramsdonck, where there had been fighting. I was suffering from hernia as the result of a strain in lifting a wounded man on to an ambulance. In the same hospital I saw a civilian from one of the villages round (aged 30 or 32), who was suffering from three or four shots in the back, which I was told he had been given after the Germans had made him hold up his hands and face the wall. The man could not move at all in his bed.

At Haecht in September I saw the dead body of a young girl nailed to the outside door of a cottage by her hands. I am sure there were no nails in the feet. She was about 14 or 16 years old. I was out on a reconnaissance with three others of the same regiment, one of them a sous-officier. The village had been occupied by the Germans for a fortnight, and they had just been driven out. I cannot say the exact date. I was alone when I saw it—100 yards

in advance, but I reported it later to the officer.

At Haecht in September I was in a trench and the Germans in a trench opposite showed the white flag. We got up to receive their surrender—they were 250 to 300 yards away—and immediately a mitrailleuse opened fire on us, killing three and wounding twenty (see plan in book, opposite p. 11). The officer of the company behind us thought that the gun was hidden in a tree. We had destroyed a house nearly, but the firing went on afterwards. They showed the flag a second time, and my officer was inclined to think we might go out, as the first might have been a mistake. But the mitrailleuse fired again at once; but our men were quicker under cover this time, they hardly showed themselves. As soon as we started firing, the white flag appeared for the third time.

Belgian Soldier.

I have taken part in the war since the beginning. I was at Liège and was in four battles: Liège, Malines, Haecht and Willbroeck. At the battle of Haecht—there was a four days' engagement there—towards the end of the battle I was taking part in the pursuit of about 30 Germans. We were about 30 or 35. The Germans turned suddenly and one of them held up a white flag or cloth. It was attached to a bayonet. The others also made token of surrender, holding up their hands. We, therefore, ceased firing and were about to take them prisoners when they began to fire upon us. We had to retreat.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

In August, about the 29th, we were advancing about 100 kilometres from Vauresis, as advance guard for the 2nd Division. We followed a road up a hill, then we extended and advanced in open order towards a railway on an embankment, from which fire was opened by the enemy, who used it as a trench. We lay down and returned the fire for half an hour, rapid firing. One white flag was hoisted by the enemy, but we kept on firing until we saw some more flags—about five big ones 12 yards apart. We ceased fire and got up, and advanced 50 yards to take them prisoners. Then the enemy reopened fire on us. We then lay down and went on firing, and as reinforcements came up we captured about 200 of them.

On the 16th September, I got lost after a bayonet charge from my battalion near Bucy-le-Long at night in the pouring rain; I met the Army Service Corps Supply and Transport Column to the 4th Division. I stayed with them for two days. We had to take food to 4th Division, who had had none for two days owing to the heavy fire. We went to the inn in Bucy-le-Long. The ambulance waggons were following us to get up to the 4th Division to receive wounded. We galloped across an open space of ground and were shelled. Only the ambulance waggons were hit, and the wheel was knocked off one of them. This was the day time. The ambulance waggons were clearly marked with the Red Cross. After this all transport work was done at night.

h 67

h 68

BRITISH SOLDIER (SERGEANT).

At Barsville, in a village near it, on 8th September on a Saturday [noted in a book produced] we were halted in the village. We had shelled the Germans out of it. Everything was smashed up. In one particular house I went in with Private F... we saw an old man by the fireside strangled; an old woman in a bed in a room off the kitchen who seemed to have been strangled. In an orchard we found a young girl about 15 or 17; her dress was opened and an English bayonet in her heart. Both breasts had been cut off. The regimental doctor, since dead, came and saw it for himself.

At a place near Nesle (6th September) we were advancing against the Germans, who were 300 yards off. They put up a white flag on a lance and ceased fire. No. 4 Company went forward to take them prisoners. They dropped the white flag and opened fire at a distance of 100 yards. We dropped on the ground but we had 20 men killed and five wounded. They

surrendered afterwards as our artillery fire was too hot for them.

h 70

h 74

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 71 It was on the Aisne, on the 14th of September, we were in the front trenches; the enemy were entrenched 200 or 300 yards away. It was daylight. A number of white flags were put up and the enemy ceased fire. We ceased fire, and A Company went under command of Captain C... The enemy fell down flat, and the enemy behind opened fire and a number of our men were killed. Some other regiment used their maxims on our right, and we went on and captured the enemy. My brother, of the same company, a private, was there and saw it too.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

on the Aisne, not far from Soissons, we were advancing against the Germans, when they suddenly put up a white flag and ceased fire. There were 200 or 300 of them. We advanced to take them prisoners, when another party behind the 200 or 300 opened fire on us when we came near up. A number of our men were shot down. Then we charged and took most of them prisoners.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 73 On the Aisne on the third or fourth day of the battle, in September, we were in the front line of trenches. It was daylight. The enemy on our right hoisted the white flag facing A Company. They ceased fire, and five or six of Λ Company went out. These got quite close to the enemy's trenches when the white flag was lowered and fire reopened on our men. The whole party fell.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I recollect Sunday afternoon, 20th September; I remember the date because I had 12 months' service all but two days. We were entrenched across the Aisne about 400 or 500 yards, as a rough guess. We went into those trenches the evening before. I was on the right of my regiment's trenches. The West Yorkshires were entrenched about 40 or 50 yards to our right. There was a ridge about 200 yards in front of us which sloped down so that the ground in front of the West Yorkshires was quite flat. There was a turnip field there. Our patrol (six men and an N.C.O.) which had been on top of the ridge in front of us came in about 2.45 with the news that the enemy were advancing on the right. I was the third man from the right of our trench. About half an hour later I saw the enemy advancing in column of fours opposite the West Yorkshires. There was a man in front alone carrying above his head a white flag on a stick. All the men in the ranks had their arms above their heads with their rifles over their heads. There were 600 or 800 of them. I saw them first when they were about 300 yards off the West Yorkshires. We started firing at them as soon as we saw them as we got orders; they were whispered along from man to man. Private S... can speak to the white flag incident. The West Yorkshires ceased firing when the Germans were about level with the ridge. The Northamptons had told us when we relieved them that the Germans had tried the white flag game on them, and that it was a trap. The Germans got right up to the West Yorkshires' trenches, and a nice few of them got beyond the trenches. The Germans advanced diagonally from left to right. They stood over the West Yorkshires with their bayonets, and compelled two companies to surrender. After that they started to fire at us with rifles: we had a lot of casualties. Some of the Germans doubled back to their own lines with the West Yorkshires prisoners: some stayed and blazed away at us; they were lying down and kneeling. Our supports the Notts and Derbys came up, and we were then able to compel them to retire. There was another lot of Germans; that too with another white flag came from behind the ridge, and made for a haystack about 500 yards away on the right of the West Yorkshires; they had machine guns; they were compelled to retire after our supports came up.

Note.—The evidence of Private S... has been obtained and he bears out the above story.

.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

In September, in Le Gheer wood near Ploegsteert, we were advancing on the road. Some Germans were by a farmhouse, and they showed a white flag. Captain S... with D Company went forward to take them prisoners. The enemy suddenly opened fire on the company and killed a great many of them. Those that were left retired, and the Germans retired also. There were a great many of our men wounded.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On the Marne some time in September about 4.30 p.m. we were in the trenches. The German trenches were 200 yards off. They raised a white flag and came out of their trenches. They did not appear to have rifles. Major A... sent out a corporal and ten men to meet them. I was one. We got out about 60 yards. The Germans waited for us. They threw themselves on the ground and started firing on us. I think they must have placed their rifles at some time outside their trenches ready to pick up. Two of our men were wounded, we worked into a ditch at the side to escape.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On 13th October, at Methines,* the Germans were entrenched in front of the village. We advanced, C Company being on our right. A party of Germans put up the white flag—about 40 or 50. C Company, with Major C went forward to take them prisoners. There was a farmhouse on the right. Suddenly from its windows poured rifle fire and fire from a maxim gun. C Company was practically cut up. Our company and D Company charged them and took the farmhouse.

BRITISH OFFICER.

Between the 17th and 20th October, at a village near Moorslede, I was commanding the advanced troop of my squadron. At the village I was told that there were Germans in front along the road. I dismounted my men, and we marched out and found about six of the enemy in some allotments, apparently a patrol or detached post. We lined the road and fired on them. As we fired some more appeared, and they ran into a small brick cow-house. Another troop came up in support, and we continued to fire on the enemy whenever they came to the door of the house. Then one of the enemy came out and waved a white flag and my squadron leader gave order to cease fire. Then we advanced towards the cow-house. I was about 200 yards away. We took two wounded prisoners on the way.

about 200 yards away. We took two wounded prisoners on the way.

When we had got within 100 yards of the cow-house the enemy ran out and there were some others under cover, all of whom fired on us. Those in the cow-house ran back to join them. Then we had to fall back on the road.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On October 18th (I am sure of the date, because it was the day before my birthday on October 19th) we were in trenches at Ypres. I saw a white flag hoisted from the German trenches; we stopped firing, and then a large body of German soldiers, about 800 or 900, advanced towards us over the open country in a dense mass. A man in the middle of the front row—I cannot say whether he was an officer or not—was holding a white flag over his shoulder—everyone behind must have seen it. The trenches of my regiment were about 400 yards long, and the enemy advanced straight towards them. They had been severely shelled in their own trenches.

They advanced to about 150 yards of us. We had not been firing while they were advancing, as we thought they were surrendering. But suddenly they started firing at us from close range, and we then replied. We suffered some loss because of this treachery; I know Captain K . . . was killed on this occasion; he was quite close to me when he was hit.

The Germans lost heavily before they regained their own trenches—there was no cover for them till they got there.

British Soldier (N.C.O.).

It was at Houplines towards the middle of October we were entrenched, and one of the Scottish regiments was entrenched immediately in front of us. The enemy suddenly put a white flag at each end of their trench and ceased fire. The Scots then went out to take them prisoners. The enemy kept the flags up but opened fire on the advancing party. These were reinforced by others of the same battalion and successfully captured the trench.

I could see this plainly. Other members of the machine gun section, in which I was, saw this. At the end of October or beginning of November, while we were entrenched, there was a large hospital flying the Red Cross flag which was being practically smashed to atoms by shell fire from a big siege gun. The wounded patients tried to escape and some crawled up to the trenches for safety. The trench was below a ridge and gave some shelter. This was in full daylight in the afternoon.

h 75

h 76

h 77

h 78

h 79

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 81

In October, not far from Armentières, we were ordered to cross a bridge under the enemy's fire, and we got the upper hand of the enemy, and followed them into the village, where we put a barricade across the road. I was on sentry-go by a house out of which we drove two Germans. In the house were a woman very upset, and the daughter on the bed upstairs, unconscious. The woman indicated to us by signs that the Germans had raped her daughter and from the appearance of the daughter I believe that may have happened. We did not stop very long, but retired.

Later, at the end of the month, near Nieppe, we had orders to advance and reinforce some Inniskillens at a farm house. We did so and advanced under heavy fire to a trench, and about 200 Germans in a trench in front of us ceased fire and hoisted a white flag. We then went forward to capture them and they suddenly opened fire. In spite of this we captured 150 of them with the help of the Inniskillens. In a small village of seven or eight houses we found a party of Royal Inniskillens, prisoners of some Germans, whom we captured Private P. . . . and many others, about eight, now alive, can bear me out in this, who were in

the same company.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

h 82

On the 11th November, about 2 or 3 o'clock in the afternoon, we were driving back some of the Germans who had broken through our lines. We drove them into some woods. In front of the woods were open fields. We had just got to the edge of these fields and the Germans had reached the woods a few minutes when I saw two white flags. They appeared to be on sticks and were waved by men fairly close together. There was no firing going on. We were advancing at the time. We continued the advance after the white flags were shown and got up to within about 200 yards of the wood. The Germans then dropped the white flag and opened fire on us with rifles and machine guns. We were ordered to halt. I was hit and do not know what happened after.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

h 83

At Aerschot I was with a company of my regiment and a number of German soldiers approached us carrying a white flag, and blowing a blast on the trumpet. We advanced towards the Germans, and then they opened fire upon us, and I saw that behind this advance guard there were hundreds of other German soldiers. One of our lieutenants was killed, and other soldiers were wounded as a result of the firing under the protection of the white flag.

I also saw the white flag on other houses between Aerschot and Campenhout, from which German soldiers fired at our troops. The Germans afterwards fired these houses. I and a comrade assisted a woman and her four children to escape from one of the houses which were

burned.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

n 84

Three weeks ago at La Bassée, I was in the trenches with C Company. A party of the enemy advanced without arms or equipment, holding a white flag. A Company went forward to take the enemy prisoners; fire opened from the enemy trenches, while the party with the white flag lay flat on the ground—and most of A Company got shot—a few only getting back I was in a trench about 50 yards away and saw it.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

h 85

I am a Belgian soldier, attached to the 25th Regiment of Infantry, stationed at Antwerp. I am 22 years of age. I speak Flemish and French and German.

I was with my regiment at Haecht, and there saw some houses from which were hung the white flag. The German soldiers were in these houses, and shot at the Belgian soldiers from them, and as a result many of my comrades were killed. The German soldiers were infantrymen.

MISCELLANEOUS STATEMENTS RELATING TO BELGIUM.

TAILOR.

k 1

On the day after the engagement at Haelen in the month of August I went to Haelen. On the way back, namely, at Schaffen, I saw the body of a young woman of about 19 years of age who had been taken out of the well. She had been thrown into the well by Germans, after having, I was informed, been killed by bayonet wounds.

I was informed by the villagers of Schaffen that the Germans had placed the sexton of Schaffen on to a ladder, and that they then put the ladder on fire, and the sexton had been afterwards burned to death. I do not know the name of the sexton. I was also informed that the priest of Schaffen had had his feet battered by a German soldier with the buttened of his rifle.

I was also informed that a man who kept an inn called the "Black Ring," at a place between Schaffen and Deuren, had been shot, and also his serving man, against the wall of his house, and that no reason had been given for this. The people said in their opinion the Germans committed the outrages because they were enraged at being defeated by the Belgian soldiers at Haelen.

On the day I left a place called Bourg Léopold, namely, about the 19th August, the German soldiers followed the civilians who were fleeing with me, and fired at us. I saw

three men wounded:—(Names given). These three men were all unarmed civilians.

At Bourg Léopold there is a hospital for consumptive soldiers. Some German soldiers came (I do not know the name of their regiment), and they dragged all the patients out of the hospital, both soldiers and officers, and also the staff—there were 52 men in all—and made them all prisoners. One of the patients was a German officer; he was also taken out of the hospital and taken away; and I was informed that he died at Berenghen.

A telegraph boy, aged about 13, came to the hospital, apparently with a message. I saw some German soldiers seize this boy by the throat, and also kick him. The boy's father was also present, and he begged them not to hit his son. He was taken prisoner. The boy

was also taken prisoner, and I understand he was sent to Germany.

The German soldiers consisted of cavalry, infantry, and artillerymen, but I do not know the names of their regiments.

Belgian Refugee.

About the 19th of August I was standing in the road at Schaffen. There were two Belgian soldiers with a mitrailleuse, and one of them asked me to help with the gun and harness a horse to it. I did so. There were 20 or 30 thousand Germans in the neighbourhood and Schaffen was full of them. There were only about 80 Belgian soldiers in Schaffen at the time. After I had helped harness the horse I ran to go home to Diest to look for my wife and family. I had left home at 8.30 in the morning and the Germans had not then come to Diest. I had gone about 60 metres from the place where I had helped with the horse when straight ahead of me I saw a woman in a "cabinet." She was with a small child to whom she was attending. I was about 12 metres from the cabinet when I saw a German soldier come out of a house on my right. I stopped and stooped below the brow of the hill so as not to be seen by the German. I saw the German go into the cabinet. It was then about 11 o'clock a.m. I saw the soldier fire at the woman and child—two shots—and then the German left and returned to the house from which he had come. My brother Edmond was with me at the time and saw it too. I waited until about 12.30. My brother waited longer.

Almost immediately after I saw the woman and child shot I saw about 1,000 metres away a woman come out of a farmhouse to my left. She had gone about 10 yards when I saw a soldier follow the woman out of the house. She was running. The soldier caught her up and bayonetted in the back. My brother saw this too. He lives in Diest too. The woman was wearing a blue dress. The soldier returned to the same house from which he had come.

I went home. I do not know the names of either of these women, but I knew them by sight as living in Schaffen. I know of no reason why these women should have been killed. I had seen no fighting in Schaffen.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Haelen, about August the 20th, I was with my regiment in the trenches. The next day after the battle we were on patrol duty and when in a wood I saw the body of a carabinier hanging on a tree; the chest and stomach were cut open and the heart had been taken out. This was a spot about 300 metres behind the German lines.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

When marching from Haelen to Antwerp, at the village before Lierre, I picked up a wounded boy six and a half years of age. He had a gunshot wound in the left thigh. I took him to a Red Cross Ambulance and the Red Cross Ambulance took him to the Antwerp Military Hospital. Six or seven days later, when I myself was wounded, I was taken to the same hospital. The child was in bed No. 1 and I was in bed No. 4. I saw the child wounded by the Germans as they fired at civilians who were leaving houses which they desired to occupy. The child fell wounded on the road and I picked him up. The Germans were near the civilians when they fired upon them and must have known they were escaping from their houses.

Also at Haelen les Diest, on the side of a main road, as we were retiring, I saw the body of a Belgian carabinier hung by a halter on a tree. His stomach was ripped open. We cut him down and buried him. The officer in charge ordered us to cut the man down and bury him. Others besides that saw him. I do not know the precise date, but it was shortly before the investment of Antwerp.

CIVIL ENGINEER—BELGIAN VOLUNTEER.

I was employed as a despatch rider by the General Staff of the Belgian Army. I used my own car for this purpose. I made frequent journeys in my car in carrying out my duties. On the 17th August 1914, I was wounded twice, but I was able to continue my duties. In carrying out my duties on this day I motored from Namur to Brussels viâ Gembloux. In the market place of Gembloux on the morning of this day I saw a woman completely naked who had been pinned to the door of a house by a sword being driven right through her chest. Her breasts had been cut off. She was, of course, quite dead. I stopped a few minutes to look at this

k 2

k 3

k 4

sight, but I did not take any steps to take the body down as I was on duty and had to continue my journey to Brussels. I did not report what I had seen to any of my superiors as there were more important affairs to speak about. The town was quite empty and there

was nobody of whom I could make enquiries as to this incident.

When I left Gembloux I proceeded to Wavre. This was on the same day, the 17th August. At Wavre I saw upon the pavement at the side of the road the body of a young woman, quite naked, which had been cut open from the lower abdomen up to the breast. Her hair was hanging down. I had no time to make any enquiries about this incident as I left Wavre almost immediately for the same reasons that I have mentioned above. Being on the staff, I knew that the Germans had been to Gembloux and Wavre just previous to my passing through these towns and I have no reason to suppose that these atrocities were committed by the

Belgian Army on their own compatriots.

On the 17th of August in the afternoon I was wounded in the left arm by a bayonet, but I bound up the wound and continued my duty. On the 18th August at 3 o'clock in the afternoon I was wounded in the right arm by a shell which hit my right arm with which I was guiding the car. My hand was hanging from my arm from the effect of the shell. Later on that same afternoon my hand was amputated. It was at Namur that I was operated upon. On the morning of the 21st August I left Namur and went on foot by Moustier as far as Falisolle. The fighting was going on all around me and I had constantly to avoid shells. At Falisolle I was able to get on board a train and went as far as Chatelineau. We could not go any further because the Germans had cut the railway line. I therefore went on foot as far Charleroi. The railway station was on fire there. The square in front of the station was full of people killed and wounded, both soldiers and civilians, and there were numbers of people running backwards and forwards. Some voluntary railway workers got together a train in order to take the civilians out of the town. The train was filled, chiefly with civilians, but as it left the station the Germans shelled the train. The Germans could not have known that there were any Belgian soldiers in the train. There were not more than three or four

Belgian soldiers on the whole train and they were wounded.

I got on this train myself and went in it as far as Tournai. From the train I could see that the whole of the lower town of Charleroi was in flames. From Charleroi to Tournai the train was subjected to constant bombardment and I saw the battle going on the whole way. I passed through the English lines on my way, but I did not see any French troops. I arrived at Tournai at 10.30 p.m and spent the night there. On the next morning I went to the Hôtel de Ville and got my passport viséd by the Belgian authorities. I then proceeded on foot and when I had gone a short distance from Tournai I was told that a large German column was advancing. I therefore cut across some potato fields just outside Tournai, crawling on my stomach in order to avoid the Germans and in this fashion I arrived at Blondin. When I got to Blondin I found myself in the midst of the German Army which was directing itself towards Lille. There was both cavalry and artillery. I was taken prisoner and I was made to stand against the wall with my face towards the wall and to raise my arms. They were about to shoot me, but before doing so asked me some questions. They asked me how I lost my right hand and whether it was in the war. I replied it was not due to the war. They then asked me how I came by the uniform of a Belgian soldier which I was wearing. I was anxious not to give them any information about the war and I therefore told them that I had met a Belgian soldier and had lent him my civilian clothes and taken his uniform. It was a German artillery officer who asked me these questions and he spoke very good French. They then searched my pockets and my knapsack. In my pocket book they found 1,800 Fs. in Belgian money. The artillery officer robbed me of this money and then told me I was free to go. Fortunately he did not find my purse in which I had some Belgian money in gold. I then proceeded on foot to Roubaix, passing through Baisieux on the French frontier. I arrived at Roubaix on the night of the 23rd August and put up at the hotel there. The next morning I had my passport viséd at Roubaix. I left Roubaix on foot at about mid-day and walked to Tourcoing. I stayed the night at Tourcoing. The next morning on the 25th August I walked to Comines. At Comines I was told I could get a train to Ostend and after waiting many hours I got a train, and eventually arrived at Ostend on the evening of the 27th.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Between the 15th and 20th of September I was on patrol between Werchter and Aerschot, having left Aerschot. The countryside had been occupied by the Germans, and we were making a reconnaissance to look for any that might be about. There were four of us on the patrol. While proceeding I came to a house, before the door of which stood a young girl about 18 or 19 years of age. I said to her "Mlle. have you seen any Germans passing this way?" She replied, "No." I then asked her to let me into the house but she refused, so I waited till the sergeant came up for I was going on in front. He gave me the order to go into the house and we made the young girl prisoner. Going into the house we saw a woman with her hands tied behind her to a table against which she was leaning quite naked, Her breasts were badly cut, but not cut off. She was perhaps 40 years of age. She was still alive and was very relieved to see us, for there were two Germans still in the house. Tied to her by the same cord were three or four little girls, round about four or five years of age.

The children were not wounded. Besides this there was a man on the ground quite naked, his hand and feet crossed and tied together with a cord. He was lying on the brick floor of the room and strewn around him was a quantity of straw. When we went into the house I saw leaning over him, a German who I think was a non-commissioned officer, for he had something gold on his shoulder, and had some gold stripes; near him was a second German, a private soldier. The non-commissioned officer had in his hand a box of matches. The moment he saw us coming in, he let fall the box of matches, and made his escape out of the window. I immediately cut the cord which bound the woman to the table and to the children. We put her in a chair, gave her her clothes, and something to drink. After that, her husband, who was the man on the ground, took her in charge, and we left. The second German we took prisoner and the non-commissioned officer was captured by gendarmes in the wood which comes to within 30 or 40 yards of the house.

ENGLISHWOMAN MARRIED TO BELGIAN.

In October last I was at my husband's house at a little town not far from Antwerp. Two German soldiers came to our house and one of them asked me for beer; I said I had no beer, but I offered them food. He asked me where I came from and I said I was English. He abused the English. He noticed some rings on my hand and asked for them. I refused them. He took off two. The other was my wedding ring and fitted tightly. He could not remove it, but said if I did not he would cut my finger off. I then managed to get it off and handed it to him. The two soldiers then seized me. They drove two nails into the wall, and after removing the whole of my clothes, bound me with cords all round my arms and body, and fastened me to the wall. One of them then left. The other then took my baby, 14 months old, from my arms and put it on the table, from which it fell on to the floor. He then asked me to have connection with him. I refused, stating I was about to be confined; he then said he would burn me and brought straw and petrol into the room. He made no attempt to have forcible connection with me. He poured petrol on the straw and set light to it. It was then that the child fell off the table. The fire reached my feet and the cord caught fire and then slackened so that I was able to free myself before I was burnt. The child was, however, slightly singed. As soon as I could get free I picked up the child and ran out of the house with nothing on. My clothes were burning on the floor, but outside the house I had some linen out to dry and I put some of it on. Before the soldier left me he took away my husband's bicycle and all the money in the house, which amounted to about 61. There were neighbours' houses near by, but whilst these things were happening to me they had run away. Our house was half burnt so as to be uninhabitable. I went to my husband's aunt's house, about half a mile away. Two or three days later I went back to my own house and picked out what few things had not been burnt. I returned to my husband's aunt and stayed there about a fortnight until my husband came home. After my husband returned we were warned that the Germans were again coming, and we fled. My husband, the child and I slept that night in the open. Next morning we went for warmth and shelter to a neighbour's house (a public-house), and whilst we were there a German soldier came to the house. After making various inquiries he knocked the landlord down. I thought at the time that this man was killed, as he lay some time on the ground, but he was not really hurt much. The German then took my husband and locked him up in a room; there was no one else about. He then came to the room where I was in bed. I got out of bed and asked him to fetch a doctor as I was ill. He said, "I am a doctor," and told me to get back into bed. He then had connection with me from behind. I begged him not to do this, telling him I was about to be confined, but he insisted. He then asked me for money and I told him it had all been taken from me, and my house burnt. The German then left, and I let my husband out and we ran away, but before we could reach shelter my baby was born in the open fields. It died a few days later.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

The 6th September I was fighting in the wood of Buggenhout near Impe, which is close to Malines. I received a bullet in the shoulder and could not retreat with my regiment. I took refuge under a little bridge. I was in water up to the waist. The bridge was over a ditch on one side of the road and a farmhouse stood on the other side. I saw the Germans go to the farm and bring out the farmer and take him back into the wood. I do not know what happened to him. Another party of Germans came along and entered the farm. They found a girl there about 24 years old and dragged her out into the country, and about 6 or 7 yards from me. They tried to violate the girl, but she fought. Her clothes got torn. She struck one of them across the face and he drew his bayonet. While one held the girl he cut the girl's breast, which was bare. He cut it, but not off entirely. Just then the Belgian cannon sounded again and they put the girl in a wheelbarrow and wheeled her off into the wood. The advance of the Belgians enabled me to escape. The house was pillaged.

Belgian Soldier: Cloth Merchant.

Behind the barracks of the 1st Regiment of Chasseurs à Pied at Charleroi towards the end of August or the beginning of September, I saw a gentleman in civilian clothing. He was

k 7

k 8

probably a German. He was posing German soldiers against the wall of the barracks. There were five or six of them. He then sent for some Belgian civilians and made them take the rifles of the German soldiers. Next he ordered them to take aim at the German soldiers. The gentleman in civilian clothes, whom I have mentioned above, had a little photographic camera. He took a snap-shot of the group of civilians taking aim at the German soldiers. I was actually in the street. I was convalescent after having been wounded, and I was wearing civilian clothing. I was a hundred yards off. The gentleman spoke, but I did not hear what he said.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

In October I was on the Boulevard Anspach at Brussels with a commercial traveller whom I know very well, but whose name I do not know. While I was with him a German officer whom he knew told him in the course of conversation in my presence that he (that is to say, the officer) had not done one-hundredth part of what had been ordered by the high German military authorities. He said this to excuse himself to my companion, who had reproached him with the atrocities which had been committed in Belgium. The officer told us he had lived in Brussels a long time. This is how my companion came to know him.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Between Malines and Antwerp at a village, the name of which I do not know, during the battle of Malines, I saw the Germans shoot down three women who were flying from the battle. Nearly all my company could corroborate this. The women were running towards the Belgian lines. The Germans were not then firing at the Belgians; it was deliberate.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 21st September the Germans were retreating on Malines, between the villages of Waerloos and Duffel. We could see them at some three or four hundred metres distance. On the road lay the corpse of a woman still quite warm, the body pierced with a bayonet wound. I noticed that her face was also bleeding. On orders received, I and three other men carried the body to the side of the road and left it there. I believe the woman had come back from the fields, for she still had in her hands the halters which are used for leading cows. There was no one else in the village. Perhaps she had come back to save her cattle.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On the 4th September 1914 I was with 14 other men of my regiment about a mile and a half from the fort at Willebroeck. We were about 300 metres in front of our trenches. We were walking between our trenches and the main road. I saw a woman coming towards me from the direction of Willebroeck. She was making for our trenches to escape from the Germans, who were lining the main road. I saw a German shoot at her. She fell. She was then about 400 metres from me. The German was about 75 metres from me and beyond the woman. I did not see the woman again.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was, in the begining of September, in the trenches at Breendonck. After a fight, I went with six men on a patrol and I saw a little child of about six lying dead on the roadside, killed by a bayonet, and close to him a woman dying with two rifle bullets in upper part of her leg. I helped to carry her to a Red Cross ambulance. She was dead on arrival. I and my companions carried the woman back behind the trenches; all my company saw her. Afterwards, my company marched on the road and could see the child.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

When the war broke out I was a sergeant in the Belgian army. One day at the beginning of the month of September I was on duty between Liezele and Wolverthem near the farm "de Vlemmere." My men and I were working on a telegraph post there. There were five men under me. While we were working we saw a man walking along the road. He was dressed like a peasant, but his beard was a ring beard without any hair on the lips or the chin and it is very unusual to wear such a beard in Belgium. I accordingly stopped the man and asked him in Flemish what he was doing there. The man did not reply by speaking but made a noise with his lips. He had a parcel in his hands. I then told him in German to drop the parcel and stretch out his arms. I made my men search him and they found in one of his pockets a military pay-book which showed that he had received 15 marks. This pay-book was clearly that of a German soldier. I then asked him what he had in the parcel. He did not reply and I told my men to open the parcel. They found in it a German infantry uniform, but I do not remember what was the number of the regiment. We then tied the man's hands behind his back. He asked us in German for water. I replied by asking him where he had got his peasant clothes from. He refused to reply though he understood quite well as I spoke in German. I refused to give him water as he would not

answer my questions. I could not leave my post and I accordingly put the man at my side with one of my men and he stayed there the whole day. I questioned him some 20 times

during the day, but he never replied.

Towards evening two Belgian gendarmes on horseback came to my post on their rounds and I told them about my prisoner and under their questions he began to tell his story. He seemed very frightened at the gendarmes. He said he had had a meal at a butcher's shop near the farm "de Vlemmere" with two other Germans. The gendarmes then took the prisoner to the butcher's shop, and some time afterwards they brought the prisoner back past my post. The gendarmes and the prisoner stopped and the gendarmes, in the presence of the prisoner, told me that they had found the butcher's shop burnt down and had seen the dead body of a boy of 15 or 16 years old, the son of the owner of the house. The prisoner had admitted to the gendarmes that he and his two companions after they had had their meal had returned to the shop and that his companion had killed the boy. They had cut his legs off and thrown him into the burning house. The reason given by the prisoner for the killing of the boy was that the boy had told the Belgian soldiers that the prisoner and his companions had eaten in the butcher's shop. I do not believe this story was true, as I heard subsequently that the 5th Division of the Belgian army was ambushed on the very next day after the events admitted by the prisoner. The prisoner never attempted to deny the story as it was told by the gendarmes, but he cried for mercy, saying he had three children of his own. I asked the gendarmes to look after my post for a little while and I bicycled to the butcher's house and saw that it had been burnt. I did not see the body of the boy. When I came back I was in such a rage that I kicked the prisoner. The prisoner replied in French, "you idiot." I had to keep my soldiers back from killing him. The gendarmes said that no one must touch the prisoner and that the military authorities would do their duty.

About half an hour later we were relieved at our post and I ran to the village where the gendarmes had taken the prisoner, the village of Puers. The people there were shouting out, "Kill him, kill him," and I shouted the same thing. The gendarmes took the prisoner to the municipal prison and I understand he was condemned to death. I was told afterwards by

people in Puers that the prisoner was taken to Antwerp and that he was shot there.

BELGIAN VOLUNTEER OF INDEPENDENT MEANS.

The 3rd October I was employed with two other volunteers on outpost duty near the fort of Puers. At the entrance of the village of Liezele, we entered a cottage half destroyed. In the bedroom we found a woman dead. She had been given a violent blow on the head on the right top and temple. There was a great deal of blood on her head, the sheets and from her nose. I thought she had been struck down by the butt of far rifle. She appeared to have been in bed and partly dressed. By her side was a child, about seven weeks old, in a cradle also dead. Cigarette stumps were on the floor and two in the cradle itself. On the child's face were a dozen wounds at least which looked like burns, and some on the child's hand. I did not examine the woman or the child, but left them as I found them. I entered the cottage at about 5 p.m. The German army was perhaps two kilometres off. We were attacked that night by a German patrol. The child's face was horribly contracted as if from pain.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was serving with my regiment near Antwerp in September. We were holding a village which the Germans had previously occupied. I do not know the name of the village. I went to fetch some water from a well. The well was to the level of the water about 5 metres deep. I saw three or four bodies lying in the wells.

Belgian Refugee.

On a Sunday, I think it was the 16th August (before the happening in Louvain) I went to Tirlemont to visit my son who was fighting with the Belgian Army, and then went to see my brother-in-law at St. Trond. I there saw five Uhlans enter the town. In the town there were then 20 members of the Civil Guard, who wore uniforms and were armed, and four or five Belgian soldiers (Guides). They fired on the Uhlans and three of them fell from their horses. The Belgian soldiers went to pick up these three Uhlans—their two companions having fled and joined their companions who came along the road. There were then 12 Uhlans (they all belonged to the Death's Head Hussars) and they all put up their hands, and when the Belgian soldiers and the Civil Guard went towards them the Uhlans caught up their carbines and deliberately shot at people in the streets, who had been looking on. I saw two civilians close by me shot in the leg; and I was told that a third man who had been looking out of a window, and who was a civilian, was shot through the mouth. Just as the Uhlans started shooting a large number of other Uhlans, about 500 in all, came along the road, and the Belgian soldiers and the Civil Guard retreated. The civilians were all unarmed, and were standing at the corner of the street. I afterwards saw the man who had been shot in the mouth at the hospital. He was then dead. Three persons were killed, namely, a postman shot through the back, a member of the Civil Guard shot through the shoulder, and the man referred to above.

k 18

k 17

k 16

A 28740

Afterwards the Uhlans captured 200 of the citizens and placed them in a farm. The burgomaster hoisted the white flag. The Germans then burned the houses in the town of St. Trond.

I ran away from the town back to Malines and on the road from Sempst to Hofstade I saw three or four girls of about 13 to 14 years of age. The girls' clothes were in a filthy condition, and they told me that the German had run after them, and had thrown them into cesspools. They had been hiding from the Germans. As far as I know the Germans did not do anything else to the girls.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Between the taking of Liège and Namur, round about the 15th August, in the village of Linsmeau, near Tirlemont, I saw three dead civilians, a man and two children, one of them a boy of 14, the other a girl of 10. I saw their corpses in a cowshed in a farm, the name of which I do not know, but the Germans had burnt it as well as several houses. The civilians had not committed any acts of hostility against the Germans. The Germans shot these three civilians on purpose. It was not an accident. They shot about ten civilians in this particular place, and they took away the whole of the male population to do work in connection with the war.

On the 20th September the Germans burnt the church of a village near Capelle-au-Bois for pure amusement. They made a big fire in the centre of the church and underneath the belfry.

Belgian Soldier.

In August (about the 20th) close to Tirlemont I saw a civilian—an old man at least 60—hanging from a tree by his feet with his head a foot from the ground. He was burnt; there was an extinct fire under him. His hair was burnt off; his body was badly burnt and the skin was all shrivelled. His left arm was cut into three pieces at the wrist, elbow and shoulder. The pieces were lying on the ground.

I was on patrol with a corporal and two others; the corporal was on ahead with one

other, and I told him of it, when we caught them up, but we had to go on.

k 19

k 23

On another occasion, at the beginning of September, I saw a civilian of about 40 years of age lying at the side of a house with his throat cut. There was no other wound. The Germans were then retreating, and we were waiting orders at the spot. This was at Sempst, in the province of Antwerp.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

Between 26th and 27th August I was serving with my regiment at Impe, near Londerzeel. During the fighting which took place one of my comrades, who was a sergeant-major, whose name I do not know, was wounded in the arm, I saw him taken prisoner. The following day, during an advance, we found the body of the sergeant-major above referred to lying on the ground with his head smashed in. I recognised him by his hair and uniform. Between 17th and 18th September I was with my regiment at Ramsdonck, near Londerzeel, where we were entrenched near the German lines about 600 or 700 metres away. I saw a woman and two children coming towards our lines from the direction of the German lines. The two children were shot by a German patrol and the woman taken prisoner. One child was a boy of about 13 and the other a girl of about nine. I saw the bodies.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About the 5th of October we had driven a party of Germans out of a small village about 9 miles north of Ypres. I do not know the name of the village, but it did not consist of more than 12 or 15 houses. We entered the village from the south, driving the Germans before us. When we got into the village we were ordered to search the houses. I went with five other men into a small farmhouse which was standing a little way back off the main road. The door was standing open and we went in. We were met by an elderly woman, who showed us over the house. Everything had been ransacked. We went into a bedroom upstairs. On the bed were the bodies of a middle-aged woman and a baby of about 12 months. They had had their throats cut and the bed was stained with blood. I saw no blood elsewhere in the room. The woman's dress was torn as though there had been a struggle. The elderly woman could not speak English and we were unable to find out why the two had been killed. She was very terrified and kept on saying "Deutsch."

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About the 10th of October I was in the neighbourhood of Zonnebeke. I was with a patrol of 12 men under a corporal. We visited a farmhouse to get water for breakfast. The doors and windows were open. We shouted to see if there was anyone there. Getting no reply, we thought we would look round the outhouses. There were small stables and pigstye. In the pig-stye were three or four pigs and the body of a man of about 50 years old. The stye door was in two parts. The lower part was locked, the upper part was not. We forced the lock and chain of the bottom part. Two of us went into the stye. I was one, and I do not know the name of the other. We found the body lying on its face; we turned the

body over and found seven or eight bayonet wounds in the stomach. It was lying in a pool of blood. We then went round the house and found a pool of blood in front of the front door. We went into the house—about six of us. The place had been ransacked. We went upstairs and in the room over the kitchen, we found the bodies of two girls of about six and eight years of age. They had both been shot through the head, and were lying together fully dressed on the bed. The bullet wounds were in the front of the upper parts of each head. While we were in the farm a staff officer came. He saw the body of the farmer and also the children. He told us to bury the farmer, which we did before we left.

[This evidence has since been corroborated by that of another witness.]

BRITISH SOLDIER.

October 21st, at Frezenberg, Belgium, at about 6 a.m., I was with my troop, in which Trooper Dent, right section, 4th troop, B. squadron, was also. We had occasion to look into the kitchen of a detached cottage; there we saw two girls, 7 and 9 years of age, and a civilian, all lying on the floor fully dressed. They were all dead. The floor where they lay was covered with blood. There were several wounds like bayonet wounds on the bodies of each of these, many of which had bled. The day before this there had been a fight between Passchaendaele and Moorslede in which my troop had been engaged. Our fighting had finished at Frezenberg the night before, and during the night there had been no fighting at this place. I am unable of my own knowledge to say at what time prior to the morning of October 21st any German troops had been at Frezenberg. I should think that the bodies which I saw had been dead for some time. I know that there were German troops all round that district on October 20th.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I went out with the First Expeditionary Force. About October 23rd, 1914, my company (C company) entered a village near Ypres. I went into a house by myself. In the kitchen on the ground floor I saw the dead bodies of four children, three boys and a girl, aged between seven and 12. I saw wounds on their heads and faces. One had a bullet wound in the forehead. On all the bodies there were bayonet wounds. I saw an officer, not of my regiment, in the room sitting writing at a table. I did not know his regiment and by his side were two French soldiers. As they had on dark blue costume I believe they were interpreters.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

In the early part of November, I should say about the 9th, I came in with the R.A.M.C. to a village called Wytschaete. The R.A.M.C. had got separated from the Division the day before. I think it must have taken a wrong turning. About 5 a.m. we got into Wytschaete and we remained there till about 3 a.m. the following morning. The Uhlans had left the village only the night before our arrival. One of my chums, a man in the Corps, speaks French. I went with him into a house in the village while we were there in order to cook our "maconochies." A woman and two children, a little boy and a little girl, quite small, were in the house. They belonged to it. The woman was about 35 years of age. She said her husband and a son had been killed in action. She said the Uhlans had been to her house, and had taken most of her possessions, including money, and had knocked her furniture about. She was also outraged, and they had thrown her and her children into the street. They drank all the wine in the house. She said that they had behaved similarly in other houses in the village.

Two other women from the same block of houses came round while we were in the house. They said much the same as the other woman, and they said that practically every woman in the village had been raped. I cannot say whether they said if they themselves had been outraged.

Belgian Soldier.

Whilst my regiment was on duty near Roulers, a country town in West Flanders, early in October, I heard shooting, and, as one of a patrol, I went to see the cause of it.

We came to a house and on the door was chalked up in German, a statement to the effect that a dog had been barking and that the dog had been shot and that the man who owned him had been killed too.

I went to a well (or tank) on the premises to get water and found in it the dead body

He had recently been killed. There were no wounds and he had evidently been drowned. The body was bound to a rod used for getting the water up, so he could not have fallen in accidentally.

The house had been looted.

ENGLISH REFUGEE.

On the ninth of September 1914 I was in the open country between Dunkirk and Middelkerke, and I there saw in an open ditch the dead bodies of four little children between three and four years old. I examined these bodies, and found that they had all got large wounds in front, which appeared to have been made by bayonets; the wounds were not small ones k 24

k 25

k 26

k 27

such as might be made by bullets. There was also much blood upon and around the bodies.

I do not know whose children they were.

k 29

k 32

During the course of my wanderings I saw many bodies of mounted Uhlans. Some of these carried lances and some carried rifles with bayonets. I saw Uhlans quite close to the place where I found the children's bodies in the ditch.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was marching from Antwerp to Louvain, and in the third village before arriving at Louvain I saw in a well the body of a man with the water up to his breast, and the head of a human being. The inhabitants said it was the wife of the man, but as the hair was completely burnt off the head I could not tell. All the houses were burnt and completely destroyed, only the walls resting. This was on the 9th of September, I think, because I was wounded on the 12th about three day afterwards. At any rate it was about that time. About two days after I passed first and before I was wounded I passed by again. The inhabitants who had left, followed us back; some of them told us that they had taken the bodies of the owner and his wife from the well, and had found their two children underneath. I looked into the well and the bodies were no longer there—opposite was a fresh grave. Several of the inhabitants said they had buried them there. They had put a wooden cross made from wood from the house, half burnt. The whole face of the man had marks of burning. I could only tell from the place where the moustache had been being black that it was a man.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

I was marching from Antwerp to Louvain with my company, I think at the beginning of September, I saw in a well the bodies of a man and a woman. Their heads were visible only and they had no hair; it had been burnt off. I should say he was a man of about 40 or 45. It was clear that he was not bald from age; one could see it had been burnt. Their heads were about four yards from me; the well had no covering. The house had been completely burnt down, and the well was only two or three yards from the door, and all houses near had been burnt to the ground. It was the third village before arriving at Louvain from Antwerp. There were two between it and Louvain. I do not know that part of the country well enough to remember the name of the village. Two days afterwards I passed the same place. I looked down the well and saw nothing. But the inhabitants told my comrades in Flemish that they had been taken out and underneath had been found the bodies of their two children, and all had been buried in a grave close by in front of the house. I saw it. It was not there the first time we passed. I do not speak Flemish.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

well, and in it I saw the bodies of four persons. My officer asked us to try and take the civilians out of the well. I then assisted to get the bodies out of the well; there were three men and one woman in the well; and we then buried them.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On September 25th last I arrived at Melle, near Ghent, with a cousin, at 7 p.m. I saw 40 houses on fire. The German soldiers had left at 5 p.m. I went into a house on my arrival and saw the bodies of a boy and girl on the floor. I should think their ages were about 14-17 years. There was a lot of blood on the floor.

In another house I saw my wife's aunt. I saw three wounds on her right arm. She told me that she had escaped from her house to a hayrick that day. The Germans then shot at her. The hayrick was set on fire by the Germans. This compelled her to fly again, when the Germans shot at her again. She then managed to reach a cellar. This was done by some German stragglers after the main body had left. I saw her half-an-hour after it had occurred. She was also shot twice in leg.

Belgian Soldier.

Some time in October I was serving with my regiment at Melle, which is a village near Ghent. The Germans had occupied the village for a few hours. We drove them out and they afterwards retook it. They drove us out again and we retook it, and afterwards the Germans again retook the village. During the second period of our occupation I saw eight Germans surrounding a woman with a child about 1½ years old in her arms. One of the Germans, who appeared to be drunk, stabbed the child with his bayonet. The woman had her hair loose defending her child, and others seized her by the hair and dragged her over the ground. A man who was standing by got hold of the child. We then captured the eight Germans. The man, woman and child had apparently been flying from the Germans. I did not see the man, woman and child again. I think the child was killed. On the following day I saw on the road from Melle to Quatrecht, lying on the ground, one hand and two feet of a child about 7 or 8 years old, but saw no other part of the body, neither

clothing nor corpse. I picked up the hand and feet and deposited them at the police station at Ghent. I was wounded in the leg, and have since been discharged definitely from the army as being unfit for further service.

Belgian Refugee.

I was living at Tournai when the Germans arrived at Tournai for the first time before they left for Maubeuge; it was the end of August or the beginning of September. I went to the house of my sister-in-law. The Germans had defeated the French and entered the town and entered all the houses; they burnt 13, and took 500 or 600 men away with them. These men slept in the street that night guarded by soldiers and left the next at 3 p.m. for Mons. My brother-in-law was with them. I have never seen him again, and I do not know where he is. After the men had gone, about 3 p.m., I was at an upper window with my sister-in-law. I saw women standing at the doors and people running down the street. The battle had ended about mid-day, and for the rest of the time the Germans were searching the houses and getting food from them. At 3 p.m. the road was full of women and children and soldiers (German). I saw a young girl about 19 years old running down the street with the others followed by three or four German soldiers. They caught the girl and held her against a mounting-post at the corner of our street and a new street, the name I do not know. I do not know the number of my brother-in-law's house. It was just opposite the corner where the post was—only the breadth of the street between. Two soldiers held the girl's arms, another tore her blouse and pulled off her petticoats and left her in her drawers—she seemed a girl of the poor classes. The soldier outraged her, and then stepped back and shot her dead. I saw this. The girl seemed half-dead before he shot her. A little time after I saw a soldier shoot dead a civilian about 45 years of age who was trying to succour a wounded French soldier who was lying in the street. A little later I saw a boy of 13 who was lame trying to escape, and a soldier shot him. I saw him and the girl and the man buried the next day with the French soldiers.

We had a German officer billeted at my father's house in Chercy, an environ of Tournai. I went there the next Tuesday and told the officer what I had seen done to the young girl. The officer said the Belgian soldiers had maltreated the Germans at Liège. He made no inquiries. The soldiers belonged to the Death's Head Uhlans, so did the officer.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On the 6th of August I went to see my sister who lives at Groes-op-Leeuxe.* In the street of this place I saw a young fellow whose Christian name was François; I knew him before the war as he lives close to my sister. Some German cavalry entered the village, and François got frightened and tried to hide behind a house, but the Germans saw him and shot him. I saw this happen myself. I stood in the street with a number of others. François had no weapon in his hand and he was a civilian. He was shot in the side but not killed and he is still alive although paralysed. The German cavalry who shot François were the first Germans to enter this part of Belgium. They had a small badge in their caps which looked to me like a death's head. It was quite small, about three-quarters of an inch broad. I was told by German soldiers afterwards that the men who wore the badge were prisoners from the gaols in Germany who had been let out when the war began.

During the month of September I was in the house of a cousin of mine at Waremme. My cousin and his wife and three children were there. At about 8.30 p.m. on this day a drunken German soldier came into the house. He demanded some drink and we had not got any to give him. He then took out his rifle and showed us four cartridges. I saw him put one of these into his pocket. He then accused my cousin and his wife and me of having stolen one of his cartridges. We denied it, but he made us all stand in the room with our hands up and proceeded to threaten to shoot us. This went on for a full hour and we were in terror of our lives all the time. At last he left us alone and went out. The next morning I went and complained to one of the German officers and they took away the rifle from this soldier. There were others who complained of his doing the same thing to them. The soldier spoke "Plattdeutsch," which is very like Flemish and I could understand him.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

At the commencement of the war I was working in Luxembourg with my nephew. I was in the employ of a contractor in the town of Luxembourg. The Germans occupied this town and we were obliged to leave. I left and went to Arlon, in Belgium, which is close to the frontier. I started on the road to Bastogne, but was stopped by some German Uhlans and made to go in the direction of Neufchateau. I slept one night at a gendarmerie about 20 kilometers from Neufchateau. The next morning I found a sergeant of the police (gendarmes) and another gendarme who were motoring to Neufchateau. They gave me a lift. This was on the 9th of August. At Neufchateau I got a "sauf conduit" (free pass), which permitted me to go to Spa. I proceeded on my way to Spa on the 10th August, and when I had gone about half-an-hour from the inn on the road I met two German Uhlans. They

k 34

k 35

demanded to know whether I had seen any French soldiers. I told them I had seen none. I then passed a whole column of the Uhlans, and I came upon some Belgian civilian prisoners in the hands of these troops. I saw a house on fire. In front of the house I saw a man lying on the ground whose two hands had been tied behind his back. When the flames came out of the front door of the house, two German soldiers seized the bound man and held his head and arms right into the flames. They held him there by the legs until they saw that he made no further movement and was dead, and then they took him out and pulled him to the side of the road. There was a German officer whose rank I did not know. This officer spoke French very well, and he said to the other Belgian prisoners and myself, "That is how we punish those who deceive us." The regiment that did this act was a regiment that had a device of a skull and crossbones on their helmets. The helmets of the common soldiers were covered with a sort of grey linen, but you could see the device through the covering. The officers had no covering on their helmets, and the device was plainly there.

I understood that the reason why this man was burnt was because he had refused to tell the Germans of any French soldiers he had seen. I only suppose this was the reason as I

have no knowledge of the matter myself.

The soldiers did not hold the man into the flames all the time; they could not have done so as the flames were very strong. They shoved him in the first instance and then

pulled him out again.

k 37

k 38

k 39

I do not know the names of any of the Belgian prisoners who saw this incident with me as I do not come from those parts, and these prisoners were refugees just as I was. There were about 16 or 17 prisoners who saw this incident. There were four or five women among them, and one of these women fainted. The man who was burnt cried out for mercy before they put him in the fire. He was certainly a civilian, because I saw his clothes. He was only burnt in the head and arms. I heard afterwards that the man was known by the nickname of "Le Flamand" (the Fleming).

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

About the middle of September we took a motor car belonging to the German Red Cross which they were using for the purpose of reconnaissance. It contained rifles and bayonets, which I saw. In a little street near the railway station, on the left, in the court of a château we saw the chauffeur of a motor car who was dying in the street. We buried him in the garden of the château. He had been killed by bayonet thrusts, the first of which had passed through his body. The Colonel was informed of all this. The Château had been abandoned by everybody.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

At Thildonck, about 15 September, at the battle of Haecht I saw the body of a little girl of about seven or eight years of age killed in front of a house with her hands and her feet off. I think she had been killed the same day. The Germans had just vacated the village. The soldiers of my company saw it.

The sister of a soldier came up to visit her brother when we were in the trenches at Wespelaer and said that she had been raped by 17 Germans the same night. That was some days before. She was crying; and was about 22 years of age. She fled towards Antwerp. I was a prisoner of the Germans in Liège; I escaped with seven men of my company.

I was a prisoner of the Germans in Liège; I escaped with seven men of my company. I have kept a Campaign Diary in which I have written down this story. I understand German. We were illtreated and they spat in my face. They called me a pig "Schweinehund"; we were left without food.

BELGIAN LADY.

Before the war I lived in Louvain. In August I and my sister Anna left Louvain for my uncle's house at Nederbeukel. I was born in 1890, and my sister in 1882. The Germans made my uncle attend to their sick and wounded. Often private soldiers came to my uncle's house for drugs, and three or four times they took hold of me, and I had to run away to escape liberties which they attempted to take.

On 6th October I and my sister and five girl cousins left for an aunt's house at Ypres. We started by tramway, but the line being cut, we had to continue our journey on foot. Whilst we were proceeding through a wood we came across four German soldiers and one of them (a private) tried to forcibly seize my sister, but she resisted, and an officer happening to come on the scene, the private desisted and we got safely away. I explained to the officer that my uncle had been attending to their wounded, and after verifying this by reference to his note-book, we were allowed to proceed on our journey. Before the officer came up, the four soldiers had taken from us all our money and jewels.

During the continuance of our journey we came across a pool in the wood, and were going to drink from it, but found it full of dead bodies which had apparently been burnt. They were all civilians, men, women and children. A private soldier came up and lifted out of the pond, on the point of his bayonet, the corpse of child, exhibiting it with a laugh. At the same time another private soldier produced with pride to us from his haversack the breast of a woman which had recently been cut off. It was the entire breast and not merely the

nipple.

* ? Nederbuel.

BELGIAN SOLDIER.

On August 6th I arrived at Houzet.* The Germans were just leaving. I saw German Uhlans leave a house in which I saw a young man and his sister both dead, their clothes disarranged. The man had both ears cut off, both eyes put out, and three bayonet wounds in his chest. The sister had wounds in his chest. The volume of the chest had wounds in his chest. two inches wide. Shortly after I saw their bodies, French Dragoous entered the village.

Belgian Refugee.

I was asked by a traveller for a firm of timber merchants if I would take a letter for him to Brussels. I took the letter and delivered it; I travelled by Ghent and reached Brussels on September 8th. I went by train and at Lokeren the bridge was blown up, so I had to walk to Ghent, which I reached at 9 on the evening of the 6th September, and being a stranger I went to the police office and stayed there the night. On the 7th I left for Brussels and at Grammont I inquired the way by Nivose,† and was advised to go a different way by a Belgian farmer, an old man; I went that way and in about 20 minutes I came upon a German outpost—two young soldiers leaning against a tree. They questioned me and appeared satisfied and called an officer. The officer asked me, on hearing I had come from Antwerp, how many Germans there were in Antwerp. I told him repeatedly there were none. Another officer came. They made me stand to attention and questioned me and showed a map. The first officer, a very tall man, said there were three forts of Antwerp taken by map. The first officer, a very tall man, said there were three forts of Antwerp taken by Germans, pointing them out on the map. I said there were none. He struck me a very violent blow on the side of the face and then asked, "Now how many are there taken." I said, "None at all." He struck me again very hard. I repeated, "None at all." He kept asking me, "Now how many are taken," and I always replied, "None at all, not one," and after each answer he struck my face first with one hand, then with the other until my face was swollen and painful, so that for a fortnight it hurt me to eat and my mouth and face were streaming with blood. The shorter officer then kicked me out of the room into a trench. They asked me if I wanted food. I refused it; they referred to it as "grub." A German soldier digging the trenches said, "You're a fine fellow," and seemed sorry for me. He gave me a piece of bread and advised me to go away. I said it was night and I could not, and the officer said he would give me a nice place to stay the night and night and I could not, and the officer said he would give me a nice place to stay the night and pushed me into a stable where a pig had just been killed—the place was horrible. In the morning I was advised to go away, but I refused to leave without a paper to pass saying it was my first meeting with German soldiers and I would not trust myself again without

I was given a small piece of paper and I used it to get to Brussels and delivered my letter, and subsequently I got to a place where the Belgians were.

* P

The officers were not wearing anything on their heads but the soldiers were wearing round caps with two buttons on.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

On or about the 23rd September I was on the road to Harlebeke, and I saw some German soldiers (I do not know the regiment) set fire to four houses which were in a row, and the occupants of the houses fled from them, and one of them, a man, was shot in the arm. He was unarmed. I afterwards assisted to take this man to a farmhouse near by. My mistress who was with her mother, also saw this, as they were on the road at the same time.

A little further on the same road there was a farmhouse (which was notorious because a child had been violated there before the war had broken out), and I saw some German soldiers take two young men about 20 and 16, and a girl about 12 years old, out of the house. I was in the road about 50 yards away from the farmhouse, which lay back from the road. I saw the soldiers shoot at the two boys. Both of the boys were shot, and a bullet entered the right arm of the younger one, traversed his body, and came out through his left arm. The elder boy was killed instantaneously by a bullet wound in the heart. The Germans then set the house on fire. I did not see them do anything to the girl. The soldiers made a great noise, and shouted like wild animals. There were about 300 soldiers belonging to some cavalry regiment; they afterwards rushed from the place at a great pace. I heard no reason given by anyone why these two persons were shot.

Along the road from Deerlyck to Harlebeke I saw four farms burned. On the road to Ghent, near the Grand Place, I saw a heap of dead civilians who had been shot apparently with rifles, as no heavy guns had passed that way. Some of them had also been struck with

the butt ends of rifles.

FRANCE.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

In September last I was with my regiment near the River Meuse. Our artillery drove the German troops out of a village on the further side of the Meuse and we captured the village. In a yard or garden in front of one of the houses I saw the dead bodies of two

k 40

k 41

k 42

11

women, one 40 to 50 and the other about 20. Their clothes were up above their heads and the lower parts of their bodies, from the waist down, exposed to view. There were no wounds on either body and it appeared plain to me that the women had died as the result of violent ravishment by the Germans who had just left the place. They had been very recently killed. We took a large number (some 400) German prisoners just beyond this village, and most of them were in a drunken and stupefied condition.

BRITISH NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.

I was, with my battalion, advance guard to the 5th Division marching through a village named Peazie on our way to Soissons on September 9th. We reached the village about 5.30 a.m.

12

13

14

We were searching the houses for German stragglers. The first house in the village I entered with a section was a farmhouse, it seemed to belong to a well-to-do man. We found in it the corpses of a man of 45—50, dressed as a farmer, a woman of about 40, and two girls, one aged 18 and one 13 and a boy about 8. They were all lying in the kitchen shot, and all fell against the same wall—hay and straw was scattered over the floors—some German writing was on the gate. Two old men and a woman stated to us through the interpreter (a French soldier attached to us) that they had been shot as an example if anyone else showed any resistance in refusing to give supplies.

The people suggested the family were shot because the farmer refused to give up his flour. They told us the dead were all one family, and the whole family. We saw no weapons in the house. I did not report this—as other troops had been in before. I suppose cavalry scouts. Before I left, a sentry was posted. I have a note referring to this in my diary made at the time. Diary is produced.

BRITISH NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.

During the retirement of the Germans after the Marne about the 16th or 17th of September I was on patrol duty in charge of five privates. We took patrol duty in rotation and I cannot remember the names of those under me on each occasion. We took it every four days. I cannot remember the names of any places, we were not told them and always moved in the dark. We were searching a village for a patrol of Uhlans at 3.30 p.m.—a small village of about 50 houses—we found them in a house; about 10 got outside, but we did not let them get to their horses and we killed them all. On the ground floor in the front room—it was a house of about six rooms-there were ten Uhlans who immediately put up their hands, and we took them prisoners. I sent them outside in charge of my men. I searched the house; everything was in disorder. On the floor in the corner near the fireplace I saw two women and two children, the ages of the former apparently about 30 and 25. One was dead, the one I judged to be the elder. Her left arm had been cut off just below the elbow. The floor was covered with blood; I think she had bled to death; I felt her other pulse at once. I have been trained as a hospital attendant before I went into the reserve. She was quite dead, but not yet quite cold. Her clothing was disarranged, but may have been because she was rolling about in pain. The house had farm buildings attached to it, so I presume they were of the farmer class. I did not examine her for any other wounds, as I was satisfied she had died of hemorrhage. The younger woman was just alive but quite unconscious. Her right leg had been cut off above the knee. As she was on the point of death I could not summon assistance quickly enough to stop the bleeding even; I was sure she was beyond assistance then. There were two little children, a boy about 4 or 5, and a girl of about 6 or 7. The boy's left hand was cut off at the wrist and the girl's right hand at the same place. They were both quite dead and appeared to have died of hemorrhage too. They were quite cold; I suppose because if it was done at the same time they would die quicker. I tried to question the prisoners, but they either did not or pretended they did not understand. I marched them They were quite cold; I suppose back and handed them over to the guard. I immediately reported the occurrence to Major F..., my platoon leader. He was killed some time afterwards at the Aisne. I saw several women and children lying dead in various other places, but in these latter instances I cannot say that they were not accidentally caused in legitimate fighting, because I did not examine them.

When I took the Uhlans as prisoners and disarmed them, I examined their sabres; some of them showed marks of having been recently used, and had fresh blood on them. I do not think that any French or British soldiers could possibly have been in contact with them during that day and that this blood must have been that of the women.

BRITISH SERGEANT.

I was at the battle of Mons and all through the retreat. When we had begun to advance again—I should say about a fortnight after our advance had begun—we passed through Brumetz* and we came to a village about 2 p.m. We halted at the village. The Germans were holding the village against us. We captured about 100 and drove the remainder out. My troop halted outside a bakery just inside the village. It was a private house where baking was done—not like our bakeries here. There were some women—about two or three—

standing at the door. The women motioned us to come into the house as also three civilian Frenchmen who were there. They took us into a garden at the back of the house. At the end of the garden was the bakery. We saw two old men-between 60 and 70 years-and one old woman lying close to each other in the garden. All three had the scalps cut right through and the brains were hanging out. They were still bleeding. Apparently they had only just been killed. The three French civilians belonged to this same house. One of them spoke a few words of English. He gave us to understand that these three had been killed by the Germans because they had refused to bake bread for them.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

When the war between France and Germany broke out I was living with my wife and my

little boy M..., at St. Just. My son M... is between three and four years old.
On the 5th of September 1914 the German soldiers were in St. Just. I was in my house on this day, but my wife had gone out for a short time. Just as she entered the door of my house again she was shot by some German cavalry and killed on the spot. I do not know the name or number of the regiment. I saw my wife shot myself. I know of no provocation that she gave the soldiers.

The cavalry regiment, one of the soldiers of which had shot my wife, passed on, but made me and my child M... go with them. We walked on with this regiment until we got in touch with the French troops. I was then made to dig trenches for the German

regiment.

After I had been working at the trenches for about half a day some of the officers of the regiment took away my boy M... When they took him away he had not been injured in any way. My boy has a deformity in the shape of two thumbs on his left hand.

The officers brought back my boy after about two hours and told me that he now had something to remember the Germans by. I then found that they had burnt the end of his nose and had burnt one of the two thumbs on his left hand. My boy told me the soldiers had done this with their cigars. The burning of his nose was not very serious though the scar can still be seen, but the burning of his hand was very bad—almost to the bone—and his hand is still in a bad state and has to be bandaged and dressed constantly.

The nurse attending this child in England was questioned by the examiner and stated

that the child's injuries were consistent with the statement of the witness.

BRITISH OFFICER.

At the beginning of November I was at La Gorgue, Lieutenant S... told me that there were four women who were living in a house in La Gorgue. He pointed out the house. I saw four women at that house sitting in the doorway. I saw that some of them were bandaged I was told by Lieutenant S . . . that their left hands had been cut off by the Germans.

About October the 17th we were advancing towards Lorgies. In a small farm about five miles from Lorgies we saw a women and a girl. The woman had been shot in the stomach and was dead and I understood that the girl had been raped by a large number of Germans. She was beside herself. We put up for the night at this farm and a number of us were there.

BRITISH OFFICER.

We were at La Ferté-sous-Jouarre about the 7th September. It was during the battle of the Marne. Both the Germans and we were in the town. I went into a house in one of the streets to get a view over the river. In one of the upstair bedrooms lying on a bed I saw the body of a woman—she was about 45 years of age. Her throat was cut. The whole of the chest was covered in blood. The blood was not quite dry. We had thrown the Germans back from that part of the town a few hours previously. The house had been ransacked. I was alone.

SUPERINTENDENT OF COAL MINE.

I was coming back from Lille. I met all the inhabitants of Orchies. They were running away shouting that the Germans were firing the village. I went there and found that it was true. Some French soldiers had concealed themselves pretty well all round the village, and killed 100 or 120 Germans. The Germans accused the inhabitants of having put them up in their houses (which was not true), and of not having told the Germans that they were there (which was true), and so they burnt the village. They sent six men into the village about two o'clock in the afternoon to burn it. The battle had finished at half-past 11 in the morning, and there had been no French soldiers there since half-past 12.

Belgian Refugee.

In a little village called Ronchin, about half an hour from my home, there had been an engagement between the French and German troops, and as I was passing there with my brother I saw a house in which all the windows had been broken. I went into this house on the invitation of the servant, and there saw the dead body of an elderly man lying on the bed with his head smashed. I was told that this had been done by a German soldier with 15

16

17

18

19

the butt end of a rifle. On the floor of the same room was the dead body of a woman, whose head was severed from her body. The body, which I saw, was wrapped in a blanket. also saw some brains lying on the floor. The servant told me that the dead persons were husband and wife, and that the Germans had given no reason for killing them. I did not obtain the names of these persons. I could not say how the woman had been killed.

In the same street of this village I went into a public-house, and there saw a man sitting at a table on which were four pieces of bread and butter. This man had been killed by a

bayonet thrust in the chest.

In a deaf and dumb hospital near Lille I saw two men who were patients of the hospital. One of the men had been shot by a "dum dum" bullet. The shot had struck his leg and his trousers were torn, and the flesh of the leg was torn in shreds. The second man had been killed with an ordinary bullet, which had entered his heart. I was informed that some German soldiers were at the station at Lille, and that they had shot these two men as they were passing along the Pont Neuf near the station. I was told that the man who had been shot through the heart had been lifted up by some civilians, and that his mouth was full of blood. This man's clothes were not torn.

FRENCH REFUGEE.

On the 23rd August a few Germans passed my house in the evening. There had been a small engagement earlier in the day between French and German troops near the village.

Two German soldiers then took hold of a young civilian named D..., and bound his hands behind his back, and struck him in the face with their fists. They then tied his hands in front, and fastened the cord to the tail of a horse. The horse dragged him for about 50 yards, and then the Germans loosened his hands and left him. I went out of my house with my father and took this man into the house. The whole of his face was cut and torn, and his arms and legs were bruised. He had given no provocation.

French Refugee (Boy).

1 11 My father's house was a public house, and some French soldiers stopped there on a day in September, but I do not know the date, and barricaded it I afterwards heard some shots and then saw a patrol of Uhlans. I went out in the street a little later with a French sergeant, and I then saw the German soldiers firing at a woman aged about 30, who had a baby in her arms and who lived in the same street. I saw the woman fall. I then fled with the other civilians, and came back to the village two days later. I then saw the corpse of the woman whom I had seen shot down two days previously. She had been taken to the house of a man named W... I do not know what happened to the baby.

The civilians were then ordered by the French soldiers to leave the village as a

bombardment was about to take place.

BELGIAN REFUGEE.

About three or four weeks after the war began I was made prisoner by some German soldiers, infantrymen, but I do not know the name of the regiment. I was accused of being a spy, which was quite untrue. I was taken by the Germans to Louvain, Brussels, Mons, St. Amand, and Valenciennes, and at the last-named place I was released, after having been a prisoner for nine or ten days. On three of those days I had neither food nor drink, and was not even allowed to sleep. When I tried to sleep the Germans flashed an electric light in front of my eyes, and also kicked me. There were about 20 civilians, who were also prisoners with me, and we were all treated in the same way. I was also obliged to carry the kits of the soldiers, but not their rifles.

When between St. Amand and Valenciennes, in a part of the country which I do not know at all, the Germans set fire to a castle belonging to a baron (whose name I do not know). Before setting fire to the castle, they stole everything portable. After setting fire to the castle, the soldiers placed the baron, along with 20 other civilians who lived near by, consisting of young and old men, and also some women and even children, and shot them all. This was done in my presence, and in the presence of a large number of other civilians. I heard a German officer who was present order his men to place the civilians against the wall, and shoot them. The civilians begged for grace, and the officer said, in German, "There's no mercy for you; you have got to die. You must not laugh at the German Army." No other reason was given for the killing of these civilians.

After these persons were shot the Germans used a sort of stick, or something which contained some explosive, and placed it against the bodies, and at once there was an explosion,

and the bodies were burned.

I was then made to walk to Valenciennes, and had to carry the kits of some of the soldiers. The soldiers smashed the windows of every house on the way. They stopped at each publichouse on the way, broke open the doors with the butt ends of their rifles, and then went

I saw three workmen's cottages, near the castle of the baron, and five or six other houses further on the road to Valenciennes, burned by the Germans. They first shot at the houses,

110

1 12

and the occupants fled; and then the Germans fired the houses. I do not know what happened to the occupants of the houses.

I arrived at Valenciennes, and on the same day was released.

While on the way from Brussels to Mons I was chosen by one of the German officers to go with two German soldiers to the farmhouses, and obtain cattle for the use of the troops. As payment for the cattle, the Germans gave the farmers a small piece of "paper," stating that the amount due was payable after the war.

At Braine-le-Comte, Soignies, and other places, I saw numbers of houses which had been burned. I saw the Germans turn out a man and his family from one of the houses, and they

then stayed the night in it themselves, whilst the occupants had to sleep in the road.

In some of the villages through which I passed some of the German cavalry soldiers went on in front of the other troops and ordered the villagers to place pails of water in the road for the use of the troops who were following, but the troops were not allowed to stop and drink the water, and had to take a little in their hands and drink it as they walked along.

The animals which were commandeered from the farms were killed, and the flesh was

taken away by the Germans, who left the skins and the animals' organs lying in the road.

While I was a prisoner my shoes and socks were taken from me, and I was compelled to walk barefooted along the roads. There were large numbers of soldiers, both infantry and cavalry, with me during the whole of the time.

After being released I went back to St. Amand, and there saw that large numbers of the houses had been burned, and the doors and windows of others smashed. I then went to Tournai, and afterwards to Ostend, and then came to England.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On 24th August I was on outpost duty at a village close to Harmignies.* I was then a lance-corporal. We saw four Germans beating a woman tied to a tree, stripped to the waist. The Germans were infantrymen, I think, belonging to the 75th Regiment, they were fully equipped and wearing helmets. The woman had four marks across her back bleeding. We were 100 yards away when we first saw them and close to a wood from which we came; we fired shots, killed three, and one escaped. I cut the woman down, she fainted; we took her to a house in the village mentioned above and put her in the charge of some French soldiers. This was early in the morning, about 7 o'clock.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was with my regiment on the retreat from Mons and in the course of the retreat I was

sent to a farm to get butter.

The people at the farm at first refused to come out, but after a time an old man and woman, about 70 years old, came to me and the man showed me weals all over his body which he explained had been caused by German soldiers who had asked for liquors of which he had none to give them.

He said the old woman (his wife) had been treated in the same way.

He explained this to me partly by signs.

They thought at first we were going to ill-treat them and that was why they did not come out.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Some time in October (about 22nd, I think), the East Surreys were attacking a position near Richebourg St. Vaast, near La Bassée. In the advance we came across five to seven women, lying in the open fields for the most part, one in a ditch, and one between two haystacks. All had their hands tightly tied behind their backs. We at first took them for dead. One was taken to our battalion headquarters afterwards. She remained five days. She was delirious all the time, and took us for Germans. We never got any explanation during that time. Afterwards we had to advance and left her behind. We saw her portrait on the wall of one of the houses. The other regiments picked up the other women.

BRITISH NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.

The night after the German retreat from the Marne, the 8th Brigade, to which we belonged, took a village on the N.E. bank of the river, at the point of the bayonet between 7 and 8 p.m. The Germans had by this time gone clean away over the hills. I was in the leading rank and one of the first over the bridge. A woman ran out of a house to our right, directly she saw us. She was French, but knew a word or two of English. She said, simply, "My daughter." She seemed very agitated and excited. She pointed at the house. There were no officers close by at that moment. Three of us went over—one has been killed since—we saw the daughter lying in bed downstairs. The mother followed us in and gave us to understand that seven Germans had violated the daughter during the night. She explained

1 13

1 14

1 15

1 16

^{*} This is in Belgium close to the French frontier, and it is impossible to say whether the incident referred to occurred in France or Belgium.

this by holding up all the fingers of one hand and two of the other and pointing to the bed and saying "Allemands." She said "night," and I took it that it happened the night before. For all I know it may have been continuous as the Germans had been there some time. She looked to be 19 or 20. We remained in the village all night, but left the house immediately to rejoin, as the roll was being called outside. The other man was a reservist and I cannot remember the name.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On 12th August 1914, our battalion left Bordon Camp, Hants, and embarked at midnight the same day at Southampton. We disembarked the following day at Le Havre. We proceeded to march at once in the direction of Paris. We marched between 20 and 30 miles a day. When within about 10 miles from Paris we turned to the left, leaving Paris on our right. We marched to Laon, where we fortified a big house; that was Saturday night—about a fortnight after we left Le Havre. It might have been Saturday, 29th August. On Sunday we were digging trenches. On our left flank there was a great artillery duel between the Gormans and the English, and the villages were all on five. About midden on between the Germans and the English, and the villages were all on fire. About midday on Monday we saw five German mounted scouts on the sky line-580 yards in front of our Monday we saw five German mounted scouts on the sky line—580 yards in front of our trenches. We killed three of them and two got away with information that we were there. This was the first we saw of the Germans. Then they started shelling us. Our captain said it was getting a bit too warm, so we retired. Then they shelled the trenches for four hours and then charged them and found no one there. This was during the Mons retreat—but we never got so far north as Mons. I remember we put up for that night at Chailvet. I also remember we retreated further to Braisne. I should say it was somewhere along the line of this retreat we marched through a village with a very mide street. It was just an ordinary street. There was nothing also to distinguish it. wide street. It was just an ordinary street. There was nothing else to distinguish it. Uhlans must have been through it. We saw women and children lying dead. There were about 10 women and six or seven little children. One or two of the bodies of the women had no heads. The children had not been cut up. They were just lying dead in different places, some by the side of the women. It was a terrible sight which I shall not forget. I was with my platoon all the time. I remember we said to one another we would like to stick the Germans with the bayonet. They were frightened of the bayonet and used to run away. We had not charged them with the bayonet up to that time. We were told that by the Hussars. That village had not been burnt down. There were bottles all about the street and the people that were left were turning out of their houses as quickly as they could. The women and the little children were crying. They were saying something which we could not understand. Windows were smashed and doors were broken open. We marched right through this village. I do not think we halted there—but I cannot remember. There was nothing further than what I have stated to show that the Germans had been there. We continued to march to Braisne. About two or three nights after marching through the village where we saw the dead women and children, we were in a farm house where we were going to sleep for the night. I cannot remember the name of the place.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

One day at the beginning of September on the retreat from Mons we passed through a small village. There was a bridge and waterfalls just before we got into the village. I do not know the name of the village. The regiment halted for about 10 minutes and I went into a kind of back place which we used as a latrine. It was a sort of yard behind houses and was filled with rubbish. On the ground were two boys' bodies. One was about 8 and the other would be 5 or 6. The bodies were lying together. The hands had been cut off both bodies. The stumps were torn and the blood was black. It was in the afternoon that I saw them. It was not yet dusk. The hands were not lying near. There was blood on the ground near where each stump had been lying. I did not touch the bodies nor examine them to see if there were other wounds. In the yard about four feet away from the other bodies was the body of a girl of about 10 years old. She had a jagged wound in the stomach. It looked like a bayonet wound. She was fully dressed. There was a lot of blood by the girl's body. This blood was dry and black. Her clothes were saturated in blood.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About the 16th of October I was with the regiment in the trenches, before we got to Laventie. We relieved an Alpine Regiment and the next morning advanced from our trenches and drove the Germans back; they had been holding a farm just behind their front line of trenches. When we got to the farm we saw a woman tied with a rope to a tree; she was nearly unconscious and could not speak; the upper part of her dress was torn and in disorder—she was between 40 or 50 years of age. On her neck and shoulders were bad bruises, as if she had been used with great violence; I do not mean blows. The woman was taken by one of our men to a farmhouse in the rear which was used as a brigade hospital as soon as the field hospital came up.

1 17

1 18

1 19

APPENDIX B.

All the diaries and papers which appear in the Appendix in German and English were submitted to the Committee by the Prisoners of War Information Bureau. In some cases they were taken from German corpses; in others from German prisoners of war. Some of the writers had not been identified at the time when the documents passed into the possession of the Committee; in these cases the diaries were distinguished by a number, and we have preserved this number for the purposes of the Appendix, although, in some cases, the identity of the writer has since transpired, as will be seen by a reference to the text.

The Committee inspected the actual documents and were absolutely satisfied of their authenticity. See page 4 of the Report. Photographs of some pages from the diaries will be found at pages 197-199. The extracts from a diary of a Saxon officer, which are printed last, were forwarded to the Committee by Professor Morgan. The diary from which they were taken

is in the hands of the French Authorities and has not been seen by the Committee.

OBERJÄGER AFFELDT.

Translation.

Machine Gun Company of the Guards Rifle Battalion, Berlin, Lichterfelde: Ville-du-Bois, 7th Aug. 1914. Live in a fine country house. Beds. Good cheap wine. On the 10th August crossed the Belgian border at 9 o'clock in the morning. Village Bastogne, mid-day. Very great plunderings. 12th Aug. 1914.—Marche. This is rather a small town. It was not well disposed. Burgomaster was at once arrested.

Original.

Maschinen-Gew. Komp., Garde-Schützen-Batl., Berlin-Lichterfelde. 7. August, 1914, Ville-du-Bois: —Wohnung in feinem Schloss, Betten, guter, billiger Wein.

10. August. Um 9 Uhr die belgische Grenze überschritten . . .

Dorfe Bastogne angelangt .

e Bastogne angelangt . . . Sehr grosse Plündereien.

12. August. Um 4 Uhr in Marche angekommen. Es ist eine kleinere Stadt. Dieselbe war nicht gut gesonnen. Der Bürgermeister wurde gleich verhaftet.

EITEL ANDERS.

Translation.

[It appears that there is no name in this diary. We give the name as supplied by See Plates the War Office, who evidently obtained the name from a field postcard, which we have 1 to 4 at not seen, as per letter from G.S.O. on back of the diary. No description.] We crossed p. 197. the Belgian frontier on the 15th August 1914 at 11.50 in the forenoon, and then we went steadily along the main road until we got into Belgium. Hardly were we there when we had a horrible sight. Houses were burnt down—the inhabitants chased away and some of them shot. Not one of the hundreds of houses was spared. Everything was plundered and burnt. Hardly had we passed through this large village before the next village was burnt, and so it went on continuously. Even the mayor and priests were shot down immediately because they shot at our comrades who were sentries at night when we were asleep. The blackguards have simply crept into the church and crawled right up to the steeple and have fired down from there, so we have immediately set the whole church on fire. The whole rabble which was in it was shot, and hardly was this finished when there was shooting from the next house, where the dogs had simply put up a white flag with a red cross. This also was immediately smashed up and burnt down, and so it went on continuously. On the 16th August 1914 the large village of Barchon was burnt down. On the same day we crossed the bridge over the Maas [Meuse] at 11.50 in the morning. We then arrived at the town of Wandre. Here the houses were spared, but everything was examined. At last we went out of the town, and everything went to ruins. In one house a whole collection of weapons was found. The inhabitants without exception (Samt-und-sonders) were brought out and shot. This shooting was heart-breaking, as they all knelt down and prayed, but that was no ground for mercy. A few shots rang out and they fell back into the green grass and slept for ever. In spite of this, the robber rabble did not cease shooting us down from behind—never from in front, but now it got too much for patience, and furious and roaring we proceeded further and further, and everything that got in our road was smashed and burnt and shot. At last we have had to go into bivouac; half tired and worn out we settled down. Then we quickly satisfied our thirst a little, but we only drank wine. The water has been half poisoned and half left alone by the beasts. Well, to eat and to drink, we have much too much here. Wherever we espy a pig or a fowl or a duck or even pigeons, everything was shot down and killed, so that at least we had something to eat. It is real sport. Now we are lying 15 kilometres from the enemy. I believe either to-day or to-morrow we shall have a big and decisive battle. And yet it won't come off, because the Belgians run like mad when they see our machine guns. The blackguards [i.e., the Belgian soldiers] simply lie down, throw the weapons away, and with uplifted hands approach us, and are taken prisoners or partly shot and pushed back.

In happy mood and high spirits, we passed through the aforesaid village (Tatur-a-ges) the next morning, that is to say, on the 24th of August, before we had cleared up the suburb of the town of Mons and burnt the houses. Inhabitants came out of the houses in crowds into the open plain. Here many heart-breaking scenes occurred, it was really terrible to watch.

Original.

See Plates 1 to 4 at p. 197.

15.8.14.—Vorm. 11.50 die Belgische Grenze ueberschritten und nun gings immer die Hauptchaussee entlang bis wir in Belgien hereinkamen, kaum waren wir dort drin da bot uns ein schauriger Anblick entgegen, Häuser wurden niedergebrandt, die Einwohner fortgejagt und zum teil erschossen: es blieb von den ganzen Hunderten Häuser kein einziges verschont, alles wurde ausgeräubert und niedergebrandt, kaum waren wir durch dieses grosse Dorf hindurch, dann wurde auch schon das nächste Dorf angesteckt und so gings immer weiter, sogar wurde der Bürgermeister und die Pastoren sofort erschossen weil die uns auf unsere Kameraden des Nachts wo wir schliefen die als Posten stehen sollten geschossen. Die Hallunken haben sich einfach in die Kirche geschlichen bis auf den Turm hinaufgekrochen und von dort heruntergeschossen, dann haben wir sofort die ganze Kirche in Brand gesteckt und die ganze Bande die darin waren erschossen; kaum war dies beendet, wurde schon aus dem nächsten Hause geschossen wo die Hunde einfach harmlos die weisse Fahne mit dem roten Kreuz auf dem Hause wehen liessen, auch dieses wurde sofort in Trümmer geschlagen

und heruntergebrannt und so gings immer weiter.

am. 16.8.14.—Wurde das grosse Dorf Barchon in Brandt gesteckt; am selben Tage haben wir die Brücke der Maas oder der Mars überschritten; um 11.50 vorm. kamen dann in die Stadt Wandre, hier wurden die Häuser geschont aber alles untersucht, endlich waren wir aus der Stadt heraus gings wieder alles in Trümmerhaufen; in einem Hause wurde sogar ein ganzes Waffenlager gefunden, die Einwohner wurden samt und sonders herausgeholt und erschossen, aber dieses erschiessen war direkt herzzerreissend wie sie alle knieten und beteten aber dies half kein Erbarmen: ein paar Schüsse krachten und die fielen rücklings in das grüne Gras und verschliefen für immer. Und trotzdem liessen die Räuberbande nicht nach uns einfach von rückwärts niemals von vorne über den Haufen zu knallen aber von jetzt ab wurde uns die Geduld doch zu arg und wütend und brüllend gings jetzt immer weiter und alles was im Wege kam wurde zerschlagen, verbrandt und erschossen. Endlich mussten wir im Biwack einrücken, halb müde und ermattet liessen wir uns nieder, dann wurde schnell etwas der Durst gestillt aber nur Wein haben wir getrunken, das Wasser haben die Bestien halb vergiftet und halb verschont gelassen, na zu essen und zu trinken haben wir hier viel zu viel wo sich irgendwo ein Schwein sehen liess oder eine Henne oder eine Ente sogar Tauben alles wurde nieder geschossen und abgeschlachtet dass wir wenigstens was zu essen hatten, ein richtiges Abenteuer ist es. Und jetzt liegen wir ungefähr 15 klm entfernt von dem feind, ich glaube entweder heute oder morgen werden wir eine grosse entscheidungsschlacht haben, und doch gelingt es noch nicht denn die Belgier laufen sich ja völlig todt wenn sie unsere maschienengewehre sehen. Die Hallunken (i.e., Belgian soldiers) legen sich einfach hin werfen die Waffen fort und mit gehobenen Händen kommen die uns entgegen und werden gefangen genommen oder zum Teil erschossen und zurückgedrängt.

Mit frohem Muthe und heiterem Sinn zogen wir am nächsten Morgen durch das Dorf Taturages (sic) also am 24.8.14 bevor wir die Vorstadt der Stadt Mons gesäubert hatten und die Häuser in Brand gesteckt hatten durch das genannte Dorf. Es zogen sogar Einwohner scharenweise aus den Häusern heraus in die weite Flur. Hier spielten sich viele herz-

zerreissende Scenen ab es war wirklich schrecklich mit anzusehen.

[This is an exact copy with all grammatical and orthographical errors.]

RICHARD ARLAND or (ARLUND). Translation.

Volunteer, Infantry Regiment 179. Attached to Infantry Regiment, Crown Prince, 104; Leipzig, Aagerwurzner Str. 16 III, 15th Oct. 1914:—Great requisition on goods station by the men. Object—boxes of biscuits, but what rotten luck, the Captain appeared and there was trouble for those whom he caught. Everything was taken away from us . . . At a place called Deulmont on the 15th occupied the ferry and made trenches, in which work the French inhabitants had to take part.

Original.

Leipzig, Aager Wurzner Str. 16 III. Kriegsfrv. I.R. 179, zugeteilt dem I.R. Kronpprins

[sic] 104.

15.10.14.—Grosse Requisation auf dem Güterbahnhof durch die Manschaften Objeckt (sic) Bisquitkisten. Aber o Pech! da kam der Hauptmann dazu, jetzt gab es Schelten für diejenigen welche Er erwischte. Sämtliches wurde abgenommen. . . . Am 15. Abmarsch nach Delmont wo die Fähre besetzt wurde und Schützengräben angefertigt woran sich die französische Bevölkerung beteiligen musste.

Pioneer Baltes.

Translation.

2nd Pioneer Battalion No. 7, 4th Field Company, 13th Reserve Division, 7th Army Corps:—Liège, 20th. We had there to make trenches, for which purpose 50 to 60 civilians had been allotted to us.

Original.

2. Pionier Bataillon No. 7, 4. Feld-Kompagnie, 13. Reserve Division, 7. Armée Corps. 20. August, Liège.— . . . Wir warfen dort Schützengräben wobei uns noch ca 50-60 Civilmannschaften zugeteilt waren . . .

K. BARTHEL.

Translation.

[This man worked his way up to the rank of sergeant and standard-bearer, and received the Iron Cross (2nd class)]: "This book belongs to my father, to whom I wish it to be sent "with the last greetings from a loving heart: Berlin O. 17 Frucht Str. 12/13. The 2nd "Company of 1st Guard Regiment on Foot is to be permitted to see it for the purpose of complementing the war diary of the Company."

10 Aug. 1914.—We had dinner at Minden in a brewery. We were everywhere received most courteously and looked after. We heard here of the deeds of terror and cruelty committed by the Relainer at Library Appropriate received with the Charlesian and the company."

by the Belgians at Liège. A surgeon-general was quartered with the Oberbürgermeister. When he sat down to eat, he was caught from behind by his host and his throat was cut. Some wounded were taken into an alleged hospital. When the Red Cross man returned with bandaging material the eyes of all of them have been put out and their hands tied behind On one of the prisoners were found some fingers which had been cut off their backs. an officer with rings on them. A transport of 300 Belgians came through Duisburg in the morning: of these, 80 including the Oberbürgermeister, were shot according to martial

- Aug. 16.—The inhabitants are very friendly towards us. The communal administration calls upon the inhabitants by placard to give water to the passing troops, so that we march as if in our own country on manœuvre
- Aug. 17.—Les Arins. The local solicitor and his family are extremely charming. given up everything. Have sold 250 bottles of wine and more and looked after officers and men. When I wanted a place to write I immediately got wine and cigars into the bargain. In the evening I received in addition 10 boiled eggs and a large piece of bread and
- Aug. 18.—The bells ring; in this way the priests are said to betray our advance. Patrols have often noticed this.
- Aug. 19.—Héron. The people give us coffee, eggs and jelly, whatever they have got. They cry and embrace us. They did not want the war—yes, neither did we: our decent people are therefore behaving most respectably. At 8 o'clock in the morning, we march through Hannech: several, and particularly one sergeant-major and the non-commissioned officers, do not behave themselves as they ought to. Grass and Schutt are acting as accomplices (Helfersdienste leisteten) of the aforesaid sergeant-major. We have our midday rest at Hemptinne. Here we have just had wine in huge quantities from a deserted château. The men are quite mad on it. But one told me that he could not stand the sight of the stuff any more.
- Oct. 2.—The Bavarians take no more prisoners. The French say if you have the Bavarians we might just as well have the Zouaves to help us.
- Oct. 7.—In front of Wailly. "Then a terrible bombardment for 15 minutes exactly on " our position; this is reported to commanding officer, whereupon the attack which had been " ordered is countermanded, as our people have sunk morally below zero."

Original.

Einj.-Freiw, 2. Komp. 1. G.R.z.F., seit 23.8.1914 abends 12. Sergeant und Fahnenträger beim I./1. G.R.z.F., am 21.9.14 das "Eiserne Kreuz II." erhalten:—Dieses Buch gehört meinem Vater . . . dem ich es zuzusenden bitte mit meinen letzten lieben Herzensgrüssen. Berlin O. 17. Fruchtstr. 12/13. Der 2. Komp. Ersten Garderegiments z. F. ist Einsicht zu

erlauben zwecks Ergänzung des Kompagnie-Kriegstagebuches.
10.8.1914.—In Minden Mittagessen (Brauhaus). Ueberall herzlichst aufgenommen und verpflegt. Greuel- u. Schandtaten der Belgier in Lüttich erfahren. Oberstabsarzt zum Oberbürgermeister ins Quartier. Als er sich zum Essen hinsetzt, wird er hinterrücks vom Quartiergeber überfallen und Hals abgeschnitten. Einige Verwundete werden in ein angebliches Lazarett gebracht. Als der Sanitäter mit Verbandszeug zurückkommt, sind allen die Augen ausgestochen und die Hände auf den Rücken gebunden. Bei einem Gefangenem einige abgeschnittene Finger eines Offiziers mit Ringen gefunden. Ein Transport von 300 Belgiern morgens durch Duisburg gekommen. 80 davon, darunter der Oberbürgermeister, erschossen.

26.8.1914. . . . Die Bevölkerung verhält sich sehr freundlich. Die Gemeindeverwaltung fordert die Bewohner durch Anschlag auf, den durchziehenden Truppen Wasser

zu reichen, und so ziehen wir gerade wie im eigenen Lande manövermässig weiter.

17.8.1914.—Les Arins . . . Der Rechtsanwalt und seine Familie sind äusserst liebenswürdig. Haben das Letzte hergegeben, 250 Flaschen Wein und mehr verkauft, Offiziere und Mannschaften verpflegt. Als ich Platz zum Schreiben haben wollte, bekam ich gleich Wein und Zigarren dazu. Abds. erhielt ich noch 10 gekochte Eier und eine grosse Butterstulle

18.8.1914.— Die Glocken läuten, so sollen die Pfaffen unsern Anmarsch

verraten. Patrouillen haben dies des öfteren erfahren

19.8.1914.—Héron . . . Leute geben uns Kaffee, Eier, Gelee, was sie nur haben. Weinen und fallen uns um den Hals. Sie wollten den Krieg nicht. Ja wir auch nicht. Unsere anständigen Leute benehmen sich deshalb auch höchst anständig. . . . 8.°° Weitermarsch durch Hannêche. Manche, besonders 1 Feldwebel u. die Unteroffiziere, betragen sich nicht so, wie sie sollten. Grass und Schütt tuen dem betref. Feldwebel Helfersdienste.

11.30. Mittagspause in Hemptinnes . . . Wein gab es soeben in Massen aus einem verlassenem Schlosse. Die Leute sind ganz wild danach, einer sagte aber schon, er könnte

das Zeug nicht mehr sehen.

2.X.1914. . . . Die Bayern machen keine Gefangenen mehr. Franzosen sagen: Wenn

Ihr die Bayern holt, holen wir ebensogut die Zuaven zu Hülfe.
7.10.1914.—Stellung gegen Dorf Wailly. . . . Dann aber ein fürchterliches Bombardement von 15 Minuten genau auf uns, dies an höherer Stelle gemeldet, woraufhin der befohlene Angriff unterbleibt, da die Leute moralisch unter Null gesunken sind.

ERICH BUSCH. Translation.

This is a diary apparently of one Busch, a corporal in the 4th Company of a Jäger Regiment whose identification number was evidently 231 and gun number 118] (Between Soven and) Avanche.—I and three oberjägers were quartered with 19 men in the house of the Catholic priest. He himself had cleared out. We looked through everything, fetched the wine out of the cellar and ate Army bread and drank wine with it. One bottle I had put in my pocket extra, but when I was to go on patrol this morning it fell out of my pocket and broke. I have also taken along a letter opener as a keepsake.

24th Aug.—We marched to a village in the neighbourhood of Maamont. they plundered a shop. I also fetched out for myself some foot wraps. They struck the

teacher on the head with a violin because he would not give them wine (Dragoons).

25th Aug.—In the morning I went into a house after wine. I fetched five bottles of

Two more I took along with me.

28th Aug.—Near village of Arven to-day I had at breakfast time already red wine and one bottle I still have in my bread bag. [The following day.] When we came through the village of Vaux, Count von Donau brought us the report that the English had been completely beaten and taken prisoners by the 1st Army. We now march still nearer to Paris. To-day is the 28th August . . . To-day is Sunday, the 30th August. One civilian has been wounded by a shot

5th Sept.—A village in the neighbourhood of La Butte. We lay in an ironfoundry. I was in command of the sentry and had with me Bulow, Pieper, Liest and Lutche. There was a shop in the house where we plundered thoroughly. From here we went to a village which we took. It was set on fire. It is called Reso-

8th Sept. - Count Finkenstein had got drunk and so we could not leave . . . then the English came and took us prisoners. Of our company there will not be many left. Twenty-six men are already said to have been buried . . . they took us along with them and in a shed we got food and they also gave us water.

Original.

4. Co., Gewehrnummer 118, Erkennungsnummer 231 . . Avange (sic) Ich bin mit 3 Oberjägern und 19 Mann im Hause des Katholischen Pastors einquartiert gewesen. Er selbst war ausgerückt. Wir haben da alles durchstöbert. Den Wein haben wir aus dem Keller geholt und Komissbrot gegessen und Wein dazu getrunken. Ich hatte mir noch eine Flasche eingesteckt. Als ich heute früh eine Patrulie gehen sollte viel sie mir aus der Tasche und war kaput. Ich habe mir auch noch einen Briefössuer zur Erinnerung mitgenommen.

24. August.—Wir sind dann bis nach einem Dorfe maschiert in der Nähe von Maamont. In dem Dorfe haben sie einen Kaufladen geplündert. Ich habe mir auch Fuslappen geholt. Dem Lehrer haben sie mit der Geige auf den Kopf gehauen, weil er keinen

Wein geben wollte. (Dragoner)

. .-Früh bin ich in ein Haus nach Wein gegangen. Ich habe 25. August . . . — Früh bin ich in ein Haus nach Wein gegar fünf Flaschen rot Wein geholt. Zwei Flaschen habe ich mir mit genommen.

28. August.—Arven. Heute habe ich zum Frühstück schon Rotwein getrunken und eine Flasche habe ich noch im Brotbeutel . . . Als wir durch das Dorf Vaut kamen brachte uns Graf zu Donau (sic) die Kunde dass die Engländer vollständig geschlagen und gefangen genommen sind von der 1. Armee. Wir maschieren jetzt immer näher nach Paris . . . Est ist der 28. August heute . . . Es ist Heute Sonntag der 30. August . . . Ein Zivilist ist angeschossen worden.

5. September.—Wir sind jetzt in einem Dorfe in der Nähe von La Butte lagen hier in einem Eisenlager. Ich musste als Wachhabender aufziehen mit Bülow, Pieper, Liest u. Lutsche. Es war ein Geschäft in dem Hause, wo mächtig geplündert wurde. Von hier sind wir nach einem Dorfe maschiert, welches wir erobert haben. Es wurde in Brand

gesteckt. Es heisst Reso.

8. September . . .—Graf Finkenstein hatte sich betrunken, und deshalb sind wir nicht weg gegangen . . . Die Engländer kamen dann und nahmen uns gefangen . . . Von unserer Co. werden nicht viel da sein. 26 Mann sollen schon begraben sein . . Sie haben uns dann mit genommen und in eine Scheune haben wir gegessen zu Essen und Wasser haben sie uns auch gegeben.

[Bad grammar and spelling as in original.]

JÄGER OTTO CLEPP.

Translation.

2nd Company of the Reserve-Buckeburg. [On the opposite page] Property Otto Clepp, U. Barmen, Haspelerschul Str. No. 1:—Aug. 17th.—But to-day I cried to see such misery.

Aug. 22nd., 3 a.m., Liège.—Two infantry [regiments] shot at each other. Nine dead

and 50 wounded—fault not yet ascertained.

Original.

2. Comp. der Reserve, Bückeburg. Eigentum, Otto Clepp, U. Barmen, Haspelerschulstr.

Montag, 17. August. . . . Lan-Don. Heute habe ich aber sehr geweint so ein Elend

Samstag, 22. August, Liège, 3 Uhr, Nacht, 2. Infanterie gegenseitig beschossen; 9 Tote und 50 Verwundete. Schuld noch nicht bestimmt.

HEINRICH CORDES.

Translation.

[This is an English officer's book. Army Book 153. First comes loose leaf, evidently letter to girl from Wilhelm Schwabe. Note from British Intelligence Department on inside back cover shows that diary was begun by Schwabe—the name and address of whose lady friend appear in inside of front cover—and continued by Cordes. It appears that it was a joint book to be continued by the survivor, and after death of both to be sent to address given by Schwabe. Both then belonged to the 2nd Company Reserve Jager 7, 13th Division.]

On loose sheet:—"I hope that we shall not have to go out again until to-night, and Cordes, Jaeger and I can [enjoy ourselves, or rest] with a good bottle of red wine this afternoon, of which there is so much here that one can literally swim."

Diary.

[A number of pages torn out at beginning. The pages appear to be carbon copies of writing on a page which has been torn out.

5th Aug. 1914 [should be 5th Sept. 1914].—Château Bergie à Havy. Just at this moment Heinrich C[ordes] fetches some bottles of champagne and red and white wine out of the wine cellar, in which there are hundreds of bottles and many casks. This is permitted by the battalion.

10th Sept. 1914, Bachant, evening, 7.45.—This night at 12.20 (a.m.) command came from the general commando that we should start for Paris at 5.10. The command came as a great surprise, because all our officers thought we should march on Antwerp because we had taken this direction from Maubeuge. The marches to Paris are to be made in the shortest possible time. These will be strenuous days, but the objective is "Paris," and what German soldier would not like to take part in the entry into this town of the hereditary enemy. Therefore merrily forward. The morale of the battalion is most excellent in spite of the exertion and the preceding strenuous days. It is stated that the road to Paris is not very much held by the enemy, and we will probably only have a few small skirmishes. The inhabitants of

France are much more friendly than in Belgium. Everywhere along the roads in villages and towns the inhabitants place water in the streets—I would not like to say whether it is really well meant.

13th Sept. 1914.—The place in which is the division which we are to attack is called Bussy. They are English troops whom we are to attack. They will make a determined resistance, that is certain, because they know they will not be given much quarter. [On the 19th September 1914 is the last entry in the handwriting of Schwabe; on the afternoon of the 20th begins the diary of H. Cordes, who states that Schwabe was shot.]

At Courtecon, 24th Sept. 1914.—The inhabitants of the village are collected and led away. The second burgomaster is shot, as he has telephonic communication with the French

Army and thus betrayed our movements.

Joint with WILHELM SCHWABE.

Original.

5/8 [should be 5/9], Schloss Bergu à Havy, 130 Uhr, Mittag.

. Gerade holt Heinrich C. aus dem Weinkeller, in welchem Hunderte von Flaschen und viele Fässer liegen, einige Flaschen Seckt, Rot und Weisswein. Vom Batl. ist dies gestattet.

Bachant d. 10/9, 14 Abends 7.45 Uhr. Heute Nacht um 12.20 traf vom General-komando der Befehl ein dass wir um 5.10 Uhr uns auf den Marsch nach Paris zu machen sollten. Der Befehl traf sehr überraschend ein, denn unsere Offiziere glaubten alle, wir würden auf Antwerpen zu marschiren, weil wir von Maubeuge aus diese Richtung eingeschlagen hatten. In möglichst kurzer Zeit sollen nun die Märsche bis Paris gemacht werden. Das werden anstrengende Tage, aber es gilt "Paris" und welcher Deutsche Soldat möchte nicht den Einzug in diese Stadt des Erbfeindes mitmachen. Darum frisch drauf los. Die Stimmung im Batl. ist trotz der Anstrengung und den vorhergehenden schweren Tagen eine ganz vorzügliche. Wie es heisst ist der Weg bis Paris nicht sehr vom Feinde belegt und werden wir wohl nur einige kleine Scharmützel zu bestehen haben.

Die Bevölkerung in Frankreich ist viel freundlicher wie in Belgien. Überall an den Strassen (in Dörfern u. Städten) stellen die Bewohner Wasser an die Strasse, ob dass nun

wirklich so gemeint ist, möchte ich nicht behaupten.

13/9. 14. Der Ort, in dem sich die Division, welche wir angreifen sollen, befindet, heisst Bussy. Es sind englische Truppen die wir angreifen sollen. Sie werden sich hartnäckig wehren, das ist gewiss, denn sie wissen, dass ihnen nicht viel Pardon gegeben wird.

[Schwabe is shot on the 19/9 and on the 20th Cordes begins.]

Courtecon, 24 Sept. Die Bewohner des Dorfes werden zusammengebracht und abgeführt. Der 2te Bürgermeister erschossen, da er telephonische Verbindung zur frz. Armee hat, und so unsere Bewegungen verriet.

Jäger Hans Georg Harwart.

Translation.

Bttn. of the Jagers of the Guard, 4th Company. [Address before the war] Brandenburg. Trois-Ponts, Aug. 9.—To-day a proclamation was published demanding that all weapons should be delivered up which the inhabitants had in their possession. The people immediately carried out the orders and brought in a large number, among them some of the most impossible shooting-irons.

Vielsalm, Aug. 12.—We have just shot a cow which we take along. Of course it is not paid for. That is revenge; up to now we have paid for everything honestly, but this morning, at 3 o'clock, a non-commissioned officer of the 73rd Regiment was shot by a peasant on the railway line. Thereby the civilians also have begun war on us and must take take the

consequences.

Aug. 23.—Courselles is a town in the industrial district. Here there are very many mines. The inhabitants are charming and put out buckets of water in front of the door for us when we passed. They also offered us tobacco, fruit, milk and cake and beer. I believe they

do it only out of fear, but it is very pleasant for us.

Aug. 24.—A woman told us that the proprietress of the shop, a widow, had left the place yesterday being afraid of the English. Eh bien! Hinrichs and I proceeded to smash a window at the back. We got into the kitchen and found here a round loaf. From there down to the cellar, where we took five bottles of wine and four bottles of beer along. Then finding all the communicating doors upstairs locked, we broke down one after another. So we got

into the shop. There we found practically everything we were looking for—socks, shirts, trousers, cigars and so on. At least 12 lbs. bonbons and 20 lbs. apple cake, very fine stuff, we took to the company.

Aug. 26.—Blamont. Here H. and I looted a villa; unfortunately nothing useful fell into

our hands except letter paper and stamps.

Aug. 30th.—We had permission to get underwear and eatables from the houses, and soon the "Chasseurs de Garde" appeared in faultless shirts, pants, and socks. Also sausages, ham, and cakes and preserved fruit were lugged out. We are not doing at all badly and are glad to have these quarters.

Oise, Aug. 30.—I used the intervening period to procure a bicycle. I asked the sergeant-

major if I might use it and he gave me permission.

Sept. 2.—Englishmen and Belgians do not exist for us any more.

3rd Sept. 1914.—We fried some eggs and bread we had with us. We got the owner to

give us glasses and had champagne with the eggs.

5th Sept. 1914.—Here we have three roast rabbits which we ate cold, and the usual champagne and red wine was not missing. . . . I went to my company (at La Fère Gauche) with the rest of my goods over my arm and lay down in my overcoat in the garden to sleep on the green silk eiderdown bed which I had brought along.

Original

Garde-Jäger Batl., 4te Comp., Address: Brandenburg:-

Trois-Ponts, Aug. 9 . . . Heute wurde in einem Aufruf aufgefordert, alle Waffen abzugeben, die die Bewohner in ihrem Besitze hätten. Unverzüglich kamen die Leute diesem Befehle nach und brachten eine grosse Zahl, teilweise aber auch ganz unmögliche

Schiessprügel an.

Vielsalm, Aug. 12.—Soeben (haben) wir eine Kuh erschossen, die wir mitnehmen. Bezahlt wird sie natürlich nicht. Das ist die Rache. Bis jetzt haben wir alles ehrlich entrichtet doch heut früh um 3 Uhr wurde von einem païsant ein Unteroffizier von dem 73. auf der Bahnstrecke erschossen. Damit haben uns auch die Zivilisten den Krieg erklärt und müssen die Folgen tragen.

Courselles, den 23.8.14. . . . Es giebt hier sehr viel Bergwerke. Die Einwohner sind nett und stellten uns als wir vorüberkamen, Wassereimer vor die Tur. Auch bot man uns Tabak, Milch, Obst und Kuchen, auch Bier an. Ich glaube, die Leute tun das Alles nur

aus Angst, für uns aber ist's jedenfalls ganz angenehm.

Aug. 24.—Eine Frau sagte mir die Besitzerin des Geschäftes, eine Wittwe, habe gestern den Ort verlassen aus Furcht vor den Engländern. Eh bien. Ich machte mich nun mit Hinrichs daran, eine Fenster der Hinterfront einzuschlagen. Wir gelangten in die Küche und fanden hier ein rundes Brot. Von hier gings in den Keller, wo wir 5 Flaschen Wein und 4 Flaschen Bier mitgehen hiessen. Dann schlugen wir oben, da alle Verbindungstüren verschlossen waren, eine Türfüllung nach der andern ein. So gelangten wir in den Laden. Wir fanden hier nun so ziemlich alles, was wir suchten. Strümpfe, Hemden, Hos. Cigarren und so weiter. Mindestens 12 Pfund Bonbons und 20 Pfund Apfelschnitte, ein sehr schönes Zeug, brachten wir zur Kompagnie.

Asvesnes, den 26. Aug. 1914. . . . In Blamont plünderten wir (Hinrichs und ich) eine Villa, wobei uns allerdings ausser Briefpapier und Marken nichts Brauchbares in die

Hände fiel.

Aug. 30.—Es wurde uns erlaubt uns Wäsche u. Esswaren aus den Häusern holen zu dürfen und bald kommen die Chasseurs du Garde mit tadellosen Hemden und Unterhosen und Strümpfen an. Auch Würste und Schinken Kakes und eingemachte Früchte wurden angeschleppt. Man lebte hier garnicht schlecht und jeder war froh, hier ein Quartier zu bekommen.

Oise, den 30. August.—Ich hatte die Zeit inzwischen benutzt, mir ein Rad zu besorgen fragte den Feldwebel ob ich dasselbe benützen konnte und bekam auch die Erlaubniss.

Soissons, 2.9.14.—Engländer und Belgier giebt es nicht mehr für uns Farme Nampteulle sür Murel 3.9.14. Wir brieten Eier, Brot hatten wir mit. Wir liessen uns von dem Besitzer

Gläser geben und tranken zu den Eiern Sekt.

5.9.14.—Auch drei gebratene Kaninchen wurden kalt verzehrt und der übliche Sekt und Rotwein fehlte nicht. . . . Ich suchte mit dem Rest meiner Habe im Arm meine Kompagnie auf und legte mich mit dem Mantel auf das mitgebrachte grünseidene Daunenbett im Garten zum Schlafen nieder.

HERMANN ----.

Translation.

[A letter written by one, Hermann [evidently Christian name], to his parents and brother, from Vieville near Lens, dated 11th October 1914.]:—Then we marched as far as Douai, where we had a long rest, and in the morning we had with our breakfast (dry bread), champagne.

Pont à Vendin.—In one house we found a store of about 100 boxes, which contained sardines in oil packed in tins; of course everyone took what he could carry—I, also, 30 tins. One must in fairness say that our soldiers take only food, also wine, and those who require it

also underwear; apart from that we do no plundering. I myself have already taken shirts and pants, that is necessity, because nothing is replaced by the army. We can no longer wash our things, because restdays are a luxury. It is not prohibited, nobody says anything. Here is an episode of the street fighting. A platoon of the 4th Company lay well covered opposite the railway station. One saw an old woman coming from the direction of the station (there was no shooting) in our direction. She gesticulated and ran along the whole front of the platoon. Then she again disappeared into a house, and she was hardly in it when the French fired at this platoon like mad. The result was the platoon had to go back, but with a loss of three dead, and two seriously, and eight slightly wounded. (Strength of the platoon 48 men.) In this way one can report a lot of all the little fights. The woman was shot later on in the town as a warning example. The 9th Company had caught three civilians who had fired. When storming a barricade (every street was barricaded) he [the officer] had these three driven in front of the firing line, all three were shot by their own countrymen.

Original.

[A letter written to his parents and brother signed "Herman," from Vieville near Lens, dated 11th Oct. 1914]:—Wir marschierten dann bis Douai, wo wir eine längere Rast machten,

und morgens zum Frühstück (Stück trockenes Brot) Sekt tranken.

(Pont à Vendin.) In einem Hause fanden wir ein Lager von 100 Kisten, in denen in Büchsen verpackte Ölsardinen waren, natürlich nahm sich jeder mit, was er tragen konnte; ich selbst auch 30 Büchsen . . . Man muss anerkennen, dass unsere Soldaten nur Lebensmittel, auch Wein und dann wer nötig hat auch Wäsche mitnehmen geraubt wird sonst nichts. Ich selbst habe mich schon Hemden und Unterhosen genommen. Das ist Not, vom Heere bekommt man keinen Ersatz. Waschen kann man nicht mehr da Ruhetage Luxus sind. Es ist nicht verboten, es sagt auch keiner was. So noch eine Episode aus dem Strassenkampfe. Ein Zug der 4. Kompagnie lag gut gedeckt dem Bahnhof gegenüber. Eine alte Frau sah man vom Bahnhofe her kommen (geschossen wurde nicht) zu uns herüber, gestikulierte und lief an der ganzen Front des Zuges herunter. Dann verschwand sie wieder in ein Haus und kaum war sie drin, da schossen die Franzosen wie wild auf diesen Zug. Die Folge er musste zurück, er kam auch zurück, aber mit einem Verluste von 3 Toten, 2 Schwer und 8 Leichtverwundeten (Stärke des Zuges 48 Mann). So kann man eine Menge berichten von all den kleinen Kämpfen. Die Frau ist darauf in der Stadt erschossen worden als abschreckendes Beispiel. Die 9. Kompagnie hatte 3 Zivilisten gefangen die geschossen hatten. Beim Sturm auf eine Barrikade (jede Strasse war verbarrikadiert) liess er die 3 vor der Schützenlinie hertreiben, alle drei sind erschossen von ihren eigenen Landsleuten.

Hussar W. Hiller.

Translation.

4th Squadron, 2nd Regiment. 6th Aug. 1914:—After we had taken three houses we proceeded. The village Wahrheit burnt at all corners because the inhabitants had fired on troops. Here one saw only burning houses and heaps of dead people and horses every three steps.

7th Aug. 1914.—Friday at 8.30 came the news that English had landed in Belgium. We broke up immediately everything, and we went on. On the road we saw many people

hanging.

Original.

4te Schwadron, 2tes Regiment:—

6.8.14.—Nachdem wir 3 Häuser genommen hatten ging es weiter. Das Dorf Wahrheit (?) brannte an allen Ecken, weil die Bewohner Militär beschossen hatten. Hier sah man also nur brennende Häuser. Haufen toter Menschen und Pferde alle 3 Schritt.

Freitag d. 7.8.14.—Um 8.30 kam die Nachricht das Engländer in Belgien landen, sofort wurde Alles abgebrochen und es ging weiter. Auf dem Wege sah man viel aufgehangene

Leute.

KURT HOFFMANN.

Translation.

See Plates 5 and 6 at p. 198.

Einj. 1st Company Jäger No. 4, Naumberg-on-Saale:—Aug. 4th, Herve.—Hardly had we gone to bed dead-beat at 9.30, when there were shots, crack, crack! It struck against our wall—everybody out, nothing to be seen. Our field patrol supposed to have shot at the relief patrol (?).

Aug. 5th (in front of Fort Fléron).—The position was dangerous. As suspicious civilians were hanging about, houses 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, were cleared, the owners arrested (and shot the

following day). Suddenly village A. was fired at. Out of it bursts our baggage train, and the 4th Company of the 27th Regiment, who had lost their way and been shelled by our own artillery. From the point D. P. *, I shoot a civilian with rifle. At 400 metres, slap through

the head, as we afterwards ascertained.

Field patrol established in house 31, Gantert arrives with a cyclists patrol. A man approaches who does not give the countersign: a shot, another one: ten minutes later people approach who are talking excitedly—apparently Germans. I call out "Halt! who's there?" Suddenly rapid fire is opened upon us, which I can only escape by quickly jumping on one side—with bullets and fragments of wall and pieces of glass flying round me. I call out "Halt, here field patrol." Then it stops, and there appears Lieutenant Römer with three platoons. A man had reported that he had been shot at out of our house: no wonder, if he platoons are size the countersign. does not give the countersign. . . . We were supposed to go viâ Micheroux, &c., to Fléron. However, already in Micheroux the enemy appeared—no military, but civilians supposed to have been soldiers in mufti, because shot after shot came out of the houses at Micheroux. There were flashes from all the attic windows. Result, in half an hour the village was a mass of flames. That was the beginning of the fight of the 6th August, the details of which it is too horrible to describe.

Original.

Einj. der 1. Jäg 4, Naumburg, Saale:—4. Aug. Herve. Kaum lagen wir todmüde See Plates um 9.30 im Bett, als Schüsse fielen. Klatsch, klatsch schlugs gegen unsere Mauer. Alles 5 and 6 at raus! Nichts gesehen! Unsere Feldwache "sollte" auf die Ablösung geschossen haben (?). p. 198.

Abends richtet sich die Feldwache im Hause 3 ein. Gantert mit einer Radfahrpatrouille kommt. Da naht ein Mann, der die Parole nicht giebt, Schuss. Noch einer. Nach 10 Minuten kommen Leute, die aufgeregt sprechen. Anscheinend Deutsche. Ich rufe: "Halt, werda!" Plötzlich geht ein Schnellfeuer auf uns los, dem ich nur durch schnelles Beiseitespringen entgehen kann. Um mich prasselts von Kugel-Mauer-und Glassplittern. Ich rufe: "Halt, die Feldwache!" Da hörts auf. Sichtbar wird Lt. Römer mit 3 Gruppen: Ein Mann hätte gemeldet, er wäre aus unserm Hause beschossen worden. Kein Wunder wenn er die Parole nicht giebt. worden. Kein Wunder, wenn er die Parole nicht giebt. . . . Wir marschierten also ab, der Weg sollte führen über Micheroux . . . nach Fléront. Doch schon in M. war der Feind, allerdings kein Militär sondern Civilisten—es sollen "Soldaten in Zivil" gewesen sein. Denn Schuss auf Schuss erfolgte aus den Häusern von Micheroux. Aus allen Dachluken blitzte es. Folge: in einer halben Stunde ging das Dorf in Flammen auf. Das war der Anfang des Gefechtes am 6. Aug. Donnerstag, dessen Einzelheiten zu schildern zu grauenvoll ist.

FRITZ HOLLMANN.

Translation.

1st Squadron, 2nd Westphalian Hussar Regiment, No. 11, 9th Cavalry Division, See Plates 7th Army Corps. [Extract from letter dated October 11th and written from near Lille.]— 7 and 8 at The only good thing is that one need not be thirsty here. We drink five or six bottles of p. 198. champagne a day, and as to underlinen—only silk, as if one has no more underlinen, one simply goes into a house and changes. Mostly of course there are no people in the houses, but when there are any they say: "Monsieur, there is no more," but for us there is no such thing as "no more." These poor people are really to be commiscrated, but of course it is no war. When I get it, I will send you 80 marks. [Judging from what appears to be the envelope of a field post letter pasted into the back of this diary, the diarist's relations reside at Hotel Central, Heiligenhaus, Lower Rhein, and the sender of the letter is Fritz Hollmann. Enclosed with the Hollmann letter is another document—a letter addressed to parents—obviously not in the same handwriting, which contains the following extract]: "We have been very hungry "now we are pursuing the Belgians, and we soon shall be in France on the frontier but we "went collecting [for food] and when we came to a farmer they shot at us. Then we went in "went collecting [for food] and when we came to a farmer they shot at us. Then we went in and took everything away and stabbed them to death. When we got into a village "the people shot at us out of the houses, so we burnt the houses, but it is impossible to " describe how it looked. God knows what will happen to us in France."

Original.

1. Escadron, 2. Westph. Husaren Regiment No. 11, 9. Kaval.-Division, 7. Armeekorps:— See Plates Frankreich, d. 11.10.13 [meaning of course 11.10.14, written from near Lille]. Das einzig gute 7 and 8 at

man braucht nicht zu dursten. 5-6 Flaschen Sekt nehmen wir jeden Tag zu uns und Wäsche nur Seiden. Hat man keine Wäsche mehr, so geht in ein Haus rein und wird sich erst umgekleidet. Meistens zind ja keine Leute da sind aber welche da dann sagen Sie, Mosjö Laplü (sic) aber bei uns giebts kein Laplü. Ja wirklich die armen Leute sind zu bedauern aber es ist eben Krieg. . . . Du schreibst von Geld, wir haben seit dem 1. Sept. keine Löhnung mehr bekommen; wenn ich die Löhnung bekomme so werde ich 80 M. schicken.

A letter, not in the same handwriting as the above, and written by a very illiterate

person :--

Aber wir haben sehr grossen Hunger gehabt, jetzt gehen wir immer nach den Belgien hinter nach und wir sind balt in Frankreich auf der Grenze. Aber wir sind Fechten gegangen wie ich zu einem Bauer kam, da haben sie geschossen, da sind wir rein gegangen und haben alles wekgenommen und haben sie totgestossen, wen wir in ein Torf kamen da haben die Leute aus den Häuser geschossen aber wir haben die Häuser in Brant gesteckt. Aber das kan ja nicht so beschreiben wie es aus gesehen hat. Gott weiss wie es uns in Frankreich gehen wird.

Josef Gisi. Translation.

Musketeer, 3rd Company, 114th Regiment, 6th Baden Infantry Regiment, 57th Infantry Brigade, consists of two letters written near Lille, addressed: Hauptlehrer Seitz, Adr. Riedern a/Wald, Baden, in which it is stated: "I expected that you would have come as an "aspirant to a commission. We particularly want officers urgently because the damn Frenchmen shoot them all." [In the other letter to his father he writes]:—"There is plenty of wine in "the houses once you are in them, but there is the rub. Every village and every house has to be stormed because the first day when we arrived here by rail and marched forward there was firing out of all houses. We broke open the houses and searched them, but no persons were found except some civilians. They also must surely have fired and many were taken along. Hardly had we finished with one house and wanted to cross the street when shots again came from all directions. Now we set fire to the houses as far as we could. Of course the women howled, but one gets into such a fury when one takes part in such an occurrence. We had one dead and a few wounded. Afterwards the village was also bombarded by artillery. Then the French cleared the village."

Original.

Musketier, 3. Komp., 114., 6. Bad. Inf. Reg., 57. Inf. Brigade.

Two Letters.

One letter to Herrn Hauptlehrer Seitz, Riedern a/Wald, Baden, containing passage:— Ich hätte gedacht, Sie wären auch mit als Offiziersaspirant, die Offiziere brauchen wir nämlich

nötig, die verd. Franzmänner schiessen uns alle weg.

Other letter to Lieber Vater u. Geschwister containing passage:—Wein gibts Genug in den Häusern wenn man mal drin ist, aber das ist eben die Sache. Jedes Dorf u. jedes Haus muss gestürmt werden, denn den ersten Tag wo wir hier ankamen mit der Bahn u. vormarschierten, so wurde aus allen Häusern geschossen. Wir brachen die Häuser auf u. untersuchten sie aber kein Mensch wurde mehr gefunden ausser einigen Zivil; jedenfall haben die auch geschossen es wurden viele mitgenommen; kaum waren wir mit einem Haus fertig u. man wollte über die Strasse, so knallte es wieder aus allen Ecken, nun steckten wir so weit wir konnten die Häuser in Brand. Die Frauen haben zwar geheult aber da bekommt man so eine Wut, wenn man so was mitmacht. Wir hatten 1 Toten u. paar Verwundete. Nachher wurde das Dorf dann noch von der Artillerie beschossen. Da machten die Franzosen das Nest leer.

Stephan Luther. Translation.

Einjähriger, 1st Mounted Battery, Field Artillery, Regiment No. 3. [No address.] 5th Aug. [near Liège.]—At midnight we captured a spy in German uniform who of course was shot like all the others.

On Monday, 10th.—Marching viâ Laden, and several friendly disposed villages, one of them bombarded in error, and after several further mistakes temporary quarters on the hill behind the village, which was again completely on fire. In the village below, the saddest scenes; naturally many misunderstandings occurred because officers understood no French. There was terrible destruction; in one farmhouse was a woman who had been completely stripped and who lay on burnt beams. There was of course reason for such procedure, but how savage.

12th August 1914. (Halen.)—Conditions in the village indescribable. Near Rossoux We live like God in France; the villa of a Belgian general on the 17th wine by the cask.

supplies everything.

29th August 1914. Near Libons.—Quartered in the completely deserted village on a poor 77-year old man. With the greatest difficulty got hold of some eggs; otherwise nothing. Near Libons.—Quartered in the completely deserted village on a Terrible conditions in the destroyed houses.

Original.

Einj. Freiwilliger, 1. reitende Batterie, F.A.R. No. 3.

5. August. . . . [near Liège.]—Um Mitternacht fassten wir einen Spion in deutscher

Uniform, der natürlich sofort wie alle Andern erschossen wurde.

Montag, d. 10. Aug.—Marsch über Laden u. div. freundl. gesinnte Dörfer, irrtümliches Beschiessen des einen. Danach nach verschiedenen Verwechslungen Notbiwack auf der Höhe hinter dem Dorfe, das wieder vollständig brannte. Im Dorfe unten die traurigsten Scenen, dadurch, dass die Offiziere kein französisch verstanden kamen natürlich viele Missverständnisse vor. Schreckliche Verwüstungen, in dem einen Bauernhaus war ein Weib, das man vollständig ausgezogen hatte, u. auf verkohlten Balken lag. Grund zu solchem Vorgehen war natürlich da, doch wie roh.

12. Aug. (Halen). Zustand des Dorfes unbeschreiblich. 17. Aug. Wein fassweise. Wir leben wie Gott in Frankreich. Die Villa

vom belgischen General liefert alles.

29. Aug., bei Libons. Quartier in dem vollständig verlassenen Dorfe bei einem armen 77-jährigen, mit Mühe u. Not einige Eier aufzutreiben, sonst nichts, schreckliche Zustände in dem verwüsteten Häusern.

MATBERN.

Translation.

[4th Company of the Jäger No. 11, from Marburg]. Aug. 6th crossed frontier.—Inhabitants See Plates on border very good to us and give us many things. There is no difference noticeable. 9 and 10 Aug. 12th.—The (French) aviator recently fired upon was again fired on by dragoons of p. 199.

guards and had to come down. He had previously thrown down a letter to the mayor of Bastogne asking him for help and that he should meet him at an appointed place. This

mayor was shot.

Aug. 23rd, Sunday (between Birnal and Dinant, village of Disonge).—At 11 o'clock the order comes to advance after the artillery has thoroughly prepared the ground ahead. The Pioneers and Infantry Regiment 178 were marching in front of us. Near a small village the latter were fired on by the inhabitants. About 220 inhabitants were shot and the village was burnt-artillery is continuously shooting-the village lies in a large ravine. Just now, 6 o'clock in the afternoon, the crossing of the Maas begins near Dinant All villages, châteaux, and houses are burnt down during this night. It was a beautiful sight to see the fires all round us in the distance.

Aug. 24th.—In every village one finds only heaps of ruins and many dead.

Aug. 26th.—In the afternoon at 4.30 we crossed the French frontier amidst great cheering. Now come the good hours. Eggs, wine, and especially champagne we fairly bathed in. We have never had such a time after four days of starvation.

Aug. 27th.—This night we lived gorgeously and had a fine time. We had champagne,

cream, poultry, and wine.

Original.

4. Komp., 11. Jäger Batl., Marburg.

Aug. 6.-Ueber die Belgische Grenze. Die Bevölkerung ist sehr gut zu uns und giebt 9 and 10 at p. 199.

See Plates

uns Vieles. Man findet kein Unterschied.

12.8.14.—Der zuletzt beschossene (französische) Flieger wurde von den Garde-Dragonern nochmals beschossen und musste er dann nieder gehen. Er hatte vorher einen Brief an den Bürgermeister von Bastonne (sic) runtergeworfen und denselben um Hilfe gebeten dass er sich an einer bezeichneten Stelle mit ihm treffen sollte. Dieser Bürgermeister wurde erschossen.

Sonntag, 23.8.14. . . . [near Dinant]. Um 11 Uhr kommt der Befehl zum Vorgehen, nachdem die Artillerie tüchtig vorgearbeitet hat. Vor uns marschierten die Pioniere und Infanterie 178. Bei einem kleinen Dorf sind Letztere von den Bewohnern beschossen worden. wurden ca 220 Einwohner erschossen und das Dorf verbrannt. Artillerie schiesst fortwährend. Das Dorf liegt in einer grossen Schlucht. Soeben Nachm. 6 Uhr beginnt der Uebergang über die Maas bei Dinant. . . . Sämmtliche Dörfer, Schlösser, Häuser sind niedergebrannt in dieser Nacht. Das war ein herrlicher Anblick im weitem Umkreise die Feuer

Montag, 24.8.14 In jedem Dorfe finden wir nur einen Trümmerhaufen und viele Tote.

Mittwoch, 26.8.14. Am Nachm. um 4.30 Uhr überschritten wir unter lautem Hurra die franz. Grenze Jetzt ging es an die guten Stunden, in Eier und Wein besonders Seckt badeten wir nur so. Sowas hatten wir noch nicht erlebt nach 4 Tagen langes Hungern. . .

27.8.14. . . . Die Nacht lebten wir herrlich und in Freuden. Seckt, Rahm,

Geflügel, Wein wurden genossen.

Bruno Meyer.

Translation.

[No regiment or address]:—Louveignie. Leave quarters in the evening at 8.30 as several soldiers have been shot by the inhabitants. Louveignie is partly set on fire by artillery, also [inhabitants] shot. Back to Theux.

[No date, but somewhat further on].—Three houses are set on fire, one considerable farmhouse. The owner of the farmhouse hangs himself.

Original.

Quartier (in Louveignie) wirds Abends 8.30, verlassen da die Soldaten von Einwohnern erschossen. Louveignie wird teils in Brand geschossen, auch erschossen zurück nach

3 Häuser werden in Brand gesteckt, 1 grösseres Gehöft. Der Besitzer des Gehöfts erhängt sich.

Dr. Wolfgang Muller.

Translation.

Government Assessor, Lieutenant, Volunteer Automobile Corps, attached to 9th Cavalry Division, Breslau XVIII., Ahornallee 84:—On the 20th August requisitioned 20 bottles of red wine from the farm of Mr. Auguste.

On the 25th further viâ Somain-Lourche to Douchy, where I was first shot at together with the staff, and then, by myself, by francs-tireurs. Peculiar singing sound of the flying bullets. Execution of nine inhabitants at Douchy. The lives of 12 others I saved by pleading for them.

Original.

Regierungsassessor, Leutnant im Freiwilligen Automobilkorps zugeteilt der IX. Kavallerie Division. Friedensadresse: Breslau XVIII., Ahornallee 8a.

20. Aug. . . .—Requiriere unterwegs 20 Fl. Rotwein in der ferme des Herrn Auguste.
25. Aug.—Weiter über Somain—Lourche—nach Douchy, wo von Franctireurs erst mit dem Stab, dann allein beschossen. Eigentümliche Singen der fliegenden Kugeln. Hinrichtung von 9 Bewohnern von Douchy—12 anderen rette ich durch Fürsprache das Leben.

SCHILLING.

Translation.

Lance Corporal (Reservist), 1st Squadron Brunswick Hussar Regiment, No. 17:-Sunday, 9th Aug. Crossed the Belgian frontier. The inhabitants are very hostile. In the afternoon at 4 o'clock in Louveigne, which has been completely burnt out and all

On the 10th Aug.—Belgium has surrendered, otherwise everything quiet.

Original.

Reservist Gefreiter, 1. Escadron, Braunschweiger Husaren Reg. No. 17:-Sonntag d. 9. Aug. die belgische Grenze überschritten. Die Einwohner sind sehr gehässig. Nachmittags 4 Uhr in Louveigne, welches vollständig eingeäschert ist, sämmtliche Einwohner sind tot

10. Aug.—Belgien hat sich ergeben sonst ist alles ruhig.

JOH. VAN DER SCHOOT.

Translation.

Reservist of the 10th Company, 39th Reserve Infantry Regiment, 7th Reserve Army Corps:—16 Aug., Liège. The villages we passed through had been destroyed. . In the night of the 17th to the 18th at Liège, 40 railway pioneers and 2 officers were killed, the houses were destroyed, otherwise the people are quiet, but only from fear. Aug. 19. In

the morning at Utterich: Wynken, 10 o'clock, marched out; quartered University. Afternoon, 'gefickt'' and boozed through the streets of Liège, lie on straw, enough booze, little food, or we must steal.

Aug. 20th.—March out as escort for prisoners to Cologne (?), 11 o'clock at Cologne, depart at 12.15. In the night the inhabitants of Liège became mutinous. Forty persons were shot and 15 houses demolished, 10 soldiers shot. The sights here make you cry.

Aug. 21st.—Everything quiet during the day; in the night the soldiers were again fired

on, we then demolished again several houses.
On the 23rd August everything quiet. The inhabitants have so far given in. Seventy

students were shot, 200 kept prisoners. Inhabitants returning to Liège.

Aug. 24th.—At noon with 36 men on sentry duty. Sentry duty is A 1, no post allocated to me. Our occupation, apart from bathing, is eating and drinking. We live like God in Belgium.

Original.

Reservist 10. Co. 39. Reserve Inf. Regt., 7. Reserve Armee-Corps:—

16. August, Liège. Die Dörfer wo wir durchzogen waren zerstört. In der Nacht vom 17. auf d. 18. in Lüttich 40 Eisenbahner u. 2. Offiziere umgebracht, die Häuser wurden zerstört, das Volk ist sonst ruhig jedoch nur aus Angst.

19. Aug.—Morgens Utterich Winken 10 Uhr Abmarsch. Einquartier Universität. Nachmittags gefickt und gesoffen durch die Strassen von Lüttich, liegen auf Stroh, zu Saufen

genug, Essen wenig oder wir müssen stehlen.

- 20. Aug.—10 Uhr Abmarsch zum Gefangentransport nach Köln (?), 11 Uhr Ankunft in Köln. Abfahrt um 12.15. In der Nacht wurde in Lüttich die Bevölkerung aufständig; 40 Personen wurden erschossen und 15 Häuser zerstört, 10 Soldaten erschossen; es sieht zum Heulen hier aus.
- 21. Aug.—Den Tag über ist es ruhig, in der Nacht wurde wieder auf Soldaten geschossen; es wurden dann wieder verschiedene Häuser zerstört.

23. Aug.—Alles ruhig. Die Bevölkerung hat soweit gefügt, 70 Studenten wurden erschossen, 200 in Gefangenschaft behalten. Die Bevölkerung kehrt nach Liège zurück.

Aug. 24.—Mittags mit 36 Mann auf Wache, die Wache ist tadelos; bin zu keinen Posten eingeteilt. Baden, ausserdem essen u. trinken, ist unsere Tagesbeschäftigung, wir leben wie Gott in Belgien.

W. Schweigner.

Translation.

Sharpshooter of the Reserve, 3rd Company, Guard Rifle Battalion:—Sunday, 23rd Aug. Depart 4.30 in the morning through large (coal-mining) towns; friendly people, did us very well.

24th Aug.—In Estirmes great booty, wine and so on.

29th Aug.—[Between St. Quentin and Ham] 5 o'clock; beat the enemy and took several villages. Many prisoners and dead on the side of the French; plundered.

Original.

Schütze d. Reserve, 3. Komp., Garde-Schützen Batl.

Sontag 23.3.—Abmarsch morgens 4½ Uhr durch grossere (Kohlenrevier) Städte, freundliche Leute, gute Bewirtung.

24/8.—Grosse Beute Wein (u. s. w.) Estimes. 29/8.—[Between St. Quentin and Ham.] Um 5 Uhr Feind geschlagen und Einnahme verschiedener Dörfer, viele Gefangene und Tote auf Seite der Franzosen. Plündern.

HERMANN BERNHARD STEINBACH.

Translation.

Jäger, 3rd Company, 25th Regiment, 27th Army Corps, 53rd Division:—Oct. 25th. (Whilst waiting for ambulance near Zonnebeke] I went to the window and suddenly saw Frenchmen in front of me. I said to my comrades "We are captured." Quite right, a little while after we were captured. The Frenchmen are not, as has been stated, evil people, on the contrary very good ones. They have treated us perfectly. At 11 o'clock a shell from our artillery struck our house, but without doing any damage except a big hole in the house. We carried the wounded into the cellar. Great consternation.

Original.

Jäger, 3. Komp., 25. Regt., 53. Division, 27. Armeekorps, Kaufmann, Adr. Limbach, Kreis: Chemnitz, Schützenstr. 12:—25.10.14 [in Field Hospital, Zonnebeke, waiting to be fetched away in Ambulance].

^{*} A coarse expression better left untranslated.

Ich raffte mich auf und ging an das Fenster da seh ich auf einmal Franzosen vor mir, ich sagte zu meinen Kameraden wir sind gefangen und richtig einige Zeit darauf waren wir gefangen, die Franzosen sind nicht wie gesagt wird schlechte Leute, im Gegenteil sehr gute. Sie haben uns tadelos (behandelt). Ganze Nacht im Granatfeuer, früh 11 Uhr schlug in unser Haus eine Granate ein; jedoch ohne Schaden anzurichten, nur grosses Loch im Haus. Die Verwundeten haben wir in den Keller geschafft, grosse Bestürzung.

JÄGER TENSETAN.

Translation.

On the 15th August, from the village of Thynes, a priest is taken along because he rang the storm bell when we passed. In the next village a verger was also taken along.

23rd Aug. 1914.—We come through the large town of Zur-sell. The inhabitants stand

in the streets and give us whatever they have got.

30th Aug. 1914.—The morning: marching off, destination unknown. We come through the garrison town of Noyon. We are shot at from the houses and a main bridge is blown up shortly before we came to it. We receive fire out of all the houses which lie in front of us. Immediately all the houses are entered and everything is turned topsy turvy. We came by accident into a hotel and everything that any of us could use was taken along, a steel watch falls into my hands. A baker shop is stormed and all shops are cleaned out. To-day we have a good day through this, as we eat what we like—biscuits, figs, chocolates, preserves, marmalade An English officer and four men were shot because he wanted to blow up a bridge, otherwise everything quiet.

1st Sept. 1914.—Soissons. Everything usable is taken along. Wine is literally treated

like water.

3rd Sept. 1914.—At 3 o'clock we pass the village of Varennes, where we are received with heavy fire, and the battalion has four dead and some wounded. Corpses are lying about everywhere in the street.

6th Sept. 1914.—The village is set on fire because the civilians have also shot.

Original.

15.8.14. Im Dorfe Thynes wird ein Pfaffe mitgenommen weil er Sturm geläutet hat als wir durchkamen, im nächsten Dorfe ein Kirchendiener.

Sonntag, 23.8.14.—Wir kommen dann durch die grosse Stadt Zur-Sell. Die Leute stehen

auf den Strassen und geben was sie haben.

Sonntag, 30.8.14.—Morgens 7 Uhr Abmarsch, Ziel unbekannt. Wir kamen durch die Garnisonstadt Noyjoyn (sie! for Noyon), wir werden aus den Häusern beschossen; eine Hauptbrücke wird kurz vorm überschreiten gesprengt, wir bekommen Feuer aus sämmtlichen Häusern die vor uns liegen. Sofort geht alles in den Häusern (sic) und es wird alles umgewühlt. Wir kommen zufällig in ein Hôtel und es wird alles was jeder gebrauchen kann mitgenommen. Mir fällt dabei eine Stahl Uhr in den Händen (sie), es wird eine Bäckerei gestürmt und alle Läden werden ausgeräumt. Heut haben wir einen guten Tag dadurch, denn wir essen was wir wollen: Zwieback, Feigen, Chocolade, Conserven, Marmelade. . . . Ein Englisher Offizier mit 4 Mann wird erschossen weil er eine Brücke in die Luft sprengen wollte, sonst verläuft alles ruhig.

1.9.14, Soissons. . . . Es wird alles brauchtbare mitgenommen. Wein wird direckt

wie Wasser behandelt.

3.9.14.—Um 3 Uhr passieren wir das Dorf Varennes, wo wir mit sharfem Feuer empfangen werden. Das Batl. hat dabei 4 Tote und einige Verwundete. Leichen liegen auf der Strasse überall umher.

6.9.14.—Das ganze Dorf wird in Brand gestochen (sic) weil Zivielisten mitgeschossen haben.

Book belonging to WESTPHAL.

Translation.

No Christian name. Address: Minhaus District, Oldenburg, Holstein:—About 7th or 8th Aug. [Probably just over the Belgian frontier] I had supper in a butcher's shop; fried brains. The people are extremely nice and obliging; cigarettes and tobacco are very cheap here. It was very jolly this evening in our stable. Some are drinking champagne because a bottle does not cost much.

10th Aug. [near Bastogne].—A ganger on the railway shot at our cyclists, but without effect. He was killed by a sergeant-major. In addition, a civilian was also shot down who attacked patrol. He was burnt with his property. The roads were constantly blocked by encrmous felled trees. The inhabitants had to remove these under threats of revolvers. In the deep cellars of the convent the smart riflemen found a lot of wine. Unfortunately, the captain objected.

14th Aug., Braibant.—What did not come of its own accord was plundered—fowls,

eggs, milk, pigeons, calves. Many jolly happenings during the plundering.

19th Aug.—In the evening we had nothing to do and lived like "Landsknechte." One section cooked and roasted, others smoked and played cards. The time passed very pleasantly.

20th Aug. - The cavalry and the Marburg Jagers ravaged terribly in the surrounding

villages.

25th Aug., Beailmont (?).—The inhabitants had cleared out. Some regiments of infantry marauded frightfully.

26th Aug., Wednesday.—In the village a dairy establishment was plundered. Several

hundreds of cheeses were requisitioned.

3rd Sept., Thursday.—Crossed the Marne. A fine town, remained for the night. We broke open a dwelling-house; [the name of a soldier illegible] and I captured food of all descriptions and other things. Much champagne also was captured.

Original.

Adr.: Minhaus, Kreis Oldenburg in Holstein. [About 7th or 8th Aug., having crossed frontier into Belgium on the 6th]:—In einer Schlächterei habe ich Abendbrot gegessen Gehirn gebraten. Die Leute äusserst nett und zuvorkommen. Cigaretten u. Taback ist hier äusserst billig. In unserem Pferdestall gehts heute Abend sehr viedel zu. Einige trinken Seckt,

denn Flasche nur wenig kosten.

Montag, 10. Aug. (near Bastogne).—. . . Ausserdem wurde von einem Bahnwärter auf unsere Radfahrer geschossen ohne Erfolg. Er wurde vom Feldw. d. R. K. niedergestreckt. Ausserdem wurde noch ein Civilist niedergeschossen, der eine Patrouille angriff, und mit seinem Eigentum verbrannt. . . . Unterwegs waren dauernd die Wege mit riesigen seinem Eigentum verbrannt. . . . Unterwegs waren dauernd die Wege mit riesigen abgeschlagenen Bäumen versperrt. Einwohner mussten dieselben mit vorgehaltener Pistole wegräumen. . . . Im tiefen Klosterkeller wussten denn auch gleich die gewandten Schützen eine Menge Wein aufzuspüren. Leider legte sich unser Haupt dagegen auf.

Freitag 14, Braibant.—Was nicht freiwillig kam wurde geräubert, Hühner, Eier, Milch,

Tauben, Kälber. Viele viedele Sachen beim räubern.

Mittwoch d. 19.8.—Abends hatten wir vollständig frei führten ein Leben wie die Landsknechte. Ein Teil kochte und briet, andere rauchten u. spielten Karten und die Zeit verging guter Laune.

Donnerstag, 20.8.—Kavallerie u. Marburger Jäger hausen sehr in den umliegenden

Dörfern.

Dienstag, 25.8.14, Beailmont (?).—Die Bewohner waren ausgerückt. Einige Infanterie Reg. marodirten mächtig.

Mittwoch, 26.8.14.—In dem Dorfe wurde noch eine Molkerei geräubert. Mehrere hundert

Käse wurden requiriert.

Donnerstag, 3.9.14.—Ueber die Marne. Eine vornehme Stadt, blieb für die Nacht Quartier. . . . Wir erbrachen eine Wohnung.—(?) u. ich erbeuteten Esswaren aller Art und sonstiges. . . . Viel Seckt ist auch erbeutet worden.

WETZEL.

Translation.

Bombardier, 2nd Mounted Battery, 1st Kurhessian Field Artillery, Regiment No. 11:-

Aug. 8th. First fight and set fire to several villages.

Aug. 9th.—Returned to old quafters; there we searched all the houses and shot the mayor [this is in France], and shot one man down from the chimney pot, and then we again set fire to the village.

On the 18th August Letalle (?) captured 10 men with three priests because they have shot down from the church tower. They were brought into the village of Ste. Marie.

Oct. 5th.—We were in quarters in the evening at Willekamm. Lieut. Radfels was quartered in the mayor's house and there had two prisoners (tied together) on a short whip, and in case anything happened they were to be killed.

[In neighbourhood of Lille] on the 11th of October.—We had no fight, but we caught

about 20 men and shot them.

Original.

Kanonier, 2. reitende Batterie, 1. Kurh. Feldart. Regt. 11:-

8. August, das erste Gefecht, und mehrere Dörfer in Brande gesteckt.

9.—Arlarmirt und dann wieder in das alte Quartier. Da haben wir sämmtliche Häuser abgesucht und den Bürgermeister erschossen und einen fon Schornstein herausgeschossen und dann wieder das Dorf angesteckt.

18.8.—Letalle (?) 10 Mann gefangen mit 3 Pfarrer, da sie fam Kirchturm herab geschossen

haben, wurden in das Dorf St. Maria gebracht.

Am 5. October .-- (Willekamm) waren wir Abend in Quartier und Leutnannt Radfels war beim Bürgermeister Einquartiert und hate da zwei Gefangne an einer Geisel im Falle es passirte Was wurden sie gedöted.

Am 11. Ocktober [near Lille] kein Gefecht gehabt aber zirka 20 Mann gefangen wurden

erschossen.

(Very illiterate person.)

No. 3. Translation.

Corporal of the Reserve Käse, Second Regiment of Uhlans. Gardelegen, Altmark. Entry, 17th August:—"We belong to the 7th Corps, 14th Infantry Division, "Lieut.-General v. Flech's Corps, Commander v. Bülow.":—On the 8th Aug. at 10. Crossed Belgian frontier then rested 1 km. from Salem, where a country seat was completely robbed of its wine, so that we got into a good humour. Here we lay about four hours near the place Montrier, where we cleared out an ammunition factory.

9th Aug.—Departed in a southerly direction towards Renny. Here the 2nd squadron had ravaged fearfully as they had been shot at out of all the houses. Many houses burnt

11th Aug. [Liège].—We lay in the barracks and did not know what we should do for sheer high spirits. Some played the mouth organ—others drummed on cooking pots, others sang and whistled, and in addition we had a continuous supply of wine and champagne.

19th Aug.—Could not find regiment and remained with ammunition column. when we halted, plundered a villa; had much wine.

22nd Aug.—Bivouac near Anderleus. Ravaged terribly; fed magnificently.

26th Aug.—6 p.m., we went into bivouac. As invariably, the surrounding houses were immediately plundered. We found four rabbits, roasted them, dined splendidly; plates, cups, knives and forks, glasses, &c. Drank 11 bottles of champagne, four bottles of wine, and six bottles liqueur.

27th Aug.—6.30 p.m., marched out. Everyone still well loaded with wine and champagne bottles.

28th Aug.-Arrived in St. Quentin, had to bivouac in the market place. Emptied the houses; carried the beds on to the square and slept on them. Drank coffee like noblemen.*

No. 3. Original.

Grefr. d. Reserve Kase, 2. U. R., Gardelegen, Altmark:

[17. Aug.-Wir gehören zum 7. Corps, 14. Inf. Div., Gen. Lt. v. Fleck, Corpsführer v. Bülow.

8. Aug.—Um 10 Uhr die Belgische Grenze passirt, lagen dann 1 km. vor Salem, wo ein Schloss total vom Wein geplündert wurde, sodass wir in gute Laune kamen. Hier lagen wir zirka 4 Std. dicht an dem Orte Montrier, wo wir eine Waffenfabrik ausräumten.

9. Aug.—7 Uhr ausgerückt in südlicher Richtung auf Renny. Hier hatte die 2. Eskdr. furchtbar gehaust, da sie aus allen Häusern Feuer bekommen. Viele Häuser sind nieder-

gebrannt.

11. Aug. [Liège].—Lagen noch in der Kaserne, wussten aus übermut nicht was wir anfangen sollten. Etliche spielten Mundharmonika, andere trommelten auf Kochtöpfen, wieder andere sangen oder pfiffen, dazu kam immer Zufuhr an Wein u. Seckt.

19. Aug.—Konnten das Regiment nicht finden, blieben bei der Munitionskollonne. Haben

dann, als wir halt machten, eine Villa geplündert, viel Wein gehabt.

22. Aug.—Biwack bei Anderleus. Furchtbar gehaust, grossartig gespeist.

26. Aug.—Um 6 Uhr bezogen wir Biwack. Wie immer wurden gleich die umliegenden Häuser geplündert. Fanden 4 Kaninchen, gebraten. Grossartig diniert. Teller, Tassen, Bestecke, Gläser u. s. w. 11 Fl. Seckt, 4 Fl. Wein und 6 Fl. Lickör getrunken.

27. Aug.—¹/₂ 7 Uhr ausgerückt. Alles noch mit Wein- und Secktflaschen versehen.

28. Aug.—"St Quenthin (Senkenteng)" [sic] Mussten auf dem Marktplatz biwackieren.

Häuser ausgeräumt, Betten auf den Platz getragen und drauf geschlafen. Nobel Kaffee getrunken.

No. 14. Translation.

[No name; no address.] 9th Aug. [near Mühlhausen] .- At 2 o'clock (a.m.) we are again fired on from the village; we get our rifles ready, but do not shoot, as it is reported that they are troops of the 114th Regiment who take us for Frenchmen. By blowing German bugle signals and singing the

"Wacht am Rhein" we finally put some sense into these fellows, and they stop shooting.

10th Aug.—Now we moved off to Mülhausen. There is a great reception by the inhabitants, who receive their old 112th Regiment with cheers. Hardly, however, have we been in the barracks an hour when violent rifle and machine gun fire comes from all corners of the town. We fall in and one company of the regiment is detached to search the town, but after about half-an-hour the noise decreases and we fall out again. The infantry which searched the town found houses in which there were still 40 to 50 Frenchmen, chiefly with the priests. The soldiers (French) said that they had not been informed when their own people left. The next morning we get the order that civilians with whom Frenchmen are found in hiding are to be shot immediately. That was probably the best means to bring the partly still very Francophile inhabitants to their senses, because, as we now heard, when the French marched in they were greeted with cheers of "Vive la France" and bouquets of flowers were thrown to their officers. No wonder they fancied themselves as masters.

20th Aug.—Saarburg suddenly seems to come to life again. Out of all windows and attic openings Frenchmen who have remained behind fire on the Bavarians who are passing through. As the searching of the houses had involved unnecessary danger, we vacate the town, and the battery just referred to wheels round and fires round after round in the firest round. houses; always the best means to clear the houses because generally there are none left after

that.

No. 14. Original.

[Nameless.]

9. Aug. [near Mülhausen].—Gegen 2 Uhr (a.m.) erhalten wir wieder Feuer aus dem Dorf. Wir bringen die Gewehre in Stellung schiessen aber nicht da gemeldet wird das es Truppen des Regt. 114 sind, welche uns für Franzosen halten. Durch blasen deutscher Singnale und singen der Wacht am Rhein kommen die Kerle endlich zur Vernunft und stellen das Feuern ein.

10. Aug.—Jetzt rücken wir ab nach Mülhausen. Dort grosser Empfang durch die Einwohner, welche ihre alten 112er mit Jubel begrüssen. Kaum sind wir 1 Stunde in der Kaserne als von allen Ecken der Stadt heftiges Gewehr und M. G. Feuer ertönt. Wir treten wieder an. Das Regt. schickt Komp. fort zum Durchsuchen der Stadt. Nach etwa einer halben Stunde lässt der Lärm nach—wir treten wieder weg. Die Inftr. welche die Stadt durchsuchte fand Häuser in denen noch 40-50 Franzosen waren. Vornehmlich bei Geistlichen. Die Soldaten erklärten man hätte sie nicht benachrichtigt als die Franzosen abgerückt seien. Am andern Tag kommt der Erlass dass Zivilpersonen bei denen noch versteckte Franz. gefunden würden sofort erschossen. Das war wohl das beste Mittel die teilweise noch sehr franzosen freundlichen Einwohner zur Vernunft zu bringen. Denn wie man jetzt erfuhr wurde beim Einmarsch der Franz. Vive la France gerufen und den Offizieren Blumensträusse zugeworfen. Kein Wunder wenn die sich gleich als Herren fühlten.

20. August.—In Saarburg wird es auch wieder lebendig, aus allen Fenstern und Dachlucken schiessen die zurückgebliebenen Franz, auf die durchziehenden Bayern. Da ein Durchsuchen der Häuser nur unnötige Opfer gekostet hatte wird die Stadt geräumt. Die eben erwähnte Battr. macht kehrt und Salve um Salve kracht in die Häuser hinein. Immer das beste Mittel

zur Säuberung der Häuser den meistens sind nachher keine mehr da.

No. 19. Translation.

[The writer of the diary was in the 1st Battalion of the 1st Regiment of the Guards. The See Plate 11 German Army List for June 1914 gives the names of five of six officers referred to in a note at p. 199. under Aug. 24th as belonging to the Guards, viz., Lt. von Oppen, Graf. Eulenberg, Capt. von Roeder, 1st Lt. Engelbrecht, 1st Lt. von Bock und Pollack, Lt. Graf Hardenberg.

No name. No address. A blue book interleaved with blotting paper.]

24th Aug. 1914.—In front of village of Ermeton we took about a thousand prisoners. At least 500 were shot. The village was burnt because the inhabitants also had shot. Two civilians were shot at once. While searching a house for beds we had an exceptionally good feed—bread, wine, butter, jelly, preserved fruits, and many other things, were our booty. . . we washed ourselves from the blood, cleaned the bayonets. . . . In the evening we got into our quarters—the best up to now—plenty of clean linen—preserved things, wine, salted meat and cigars.

5th Sept. 1914.—Received news that Denmark had declared war on Germany. English-

men are already on the Danish frontier.

A 28740

No. 19. Original.

See Plate 11 [No name.] 24/8. Vor einem Dorfe Ermeton. . . . An Gefangenen machten wir 1000; Gefangene at p. 199. mindesten 500 erschossen. Dorfe wurde weil auch Einwohner schossen in Brand gesteckt.

2 Civilisten wurden gleich erschossen. Beim Durchsuchen eines Hauses nach Betten assen wir uns nach Herzenslust satt Brot, Wein, Butter, Chillee, eingemachte Früchte und noch vieles mehr waren unser Mundraub. . . . Wir wuschen uns von dem Blute, reinigten die Seitengewehre. . . . Abends kamen wir ins Quartier das beste bis jetzt. Reine Wäsche reichlich, eingemachte Sachen, Wein, Fleisch gesalz. und Cigarren.

5/9. Nachricht dass Dänemark an Deutschland Krieg erklärt, Engländer sind bereitz an

der Dänischen Grenze.

No. 21. Franz Moker (?) Translation.

[No description.]

[As a guide to locality the writer says he passes through Waterloo on the 21st August.]

19th Aug. 1914, Wednesday.—About midday we arrived in a village which had been terribly ravaged. Houses burnt; everything broken to pieces; bellowing animals which were wandering about the streets, and inhabitants who had been shot. A company of the Infantry Regiment No. 75, who had encamped not far from the village the previous night was attacked by the inhabitants and carried through a massacre. 69 brave soldiers were killed or wounded. As a punishment the village in question was completely wiped out.

20th Aug.—We passed again through villages where the inhabitants had been shooting,

and the usual punishment had been inflicted.

No. 21. Original.

19/8/14. Gegen Mittag kamen wir in ein Dorf das schrecklich verwüstet war. Häuser abgebrannt, Alles entzwei geschlagen, brullendes Vieh das verlassen auf den Strassen umherirrte und erschossene Einwohner. Eine Kompagnie des Inf. Regiments No. 75, die in der vorhergehenden Nacht nicht weit vom Dorfe biwakirte, wurde von den Bewohnern überfallen und richtete ein Blutbad an. 69 brave Soldaten wurden getötet oder verwundet. Zur Strafe wurde das betreffende Dorf vernichtet.

20/8. Wir kamen wiederum durch Dörfer, wo die Einwohner geschossen hatten. Die

übliche Strafe war eingetreten.

No. 27.

Translation.

[Name and address of writer not apparent.]

Monday, 19th Oct. 1914.—A short distance from our position I hear the following has been announced by the regiment. Holland has declared war on the English, Italy on the French, and America on the Japanese. Whether this is confirmed nobody knows, but anyhow

there was great cheering.

Tuesday, 20th Oct. 1914.—In the morning I heard that the houses next door were empty, (occupiers) partly emigrated, partly shot, in which (houses) therefore Sergeant-Major Nuss and his comrades acted as the masters of the house and took several things along with them, especially eatables and bicycles as it had been a cycle shop. . . In the fields, in the gardens, and in the houses there were 60 dead francs-tireurs who had shot at our Jägers. On the right-hand side there was a grave of six Jägers, one non-commissioned officer, and five men. On a post a cap and frog indicated this, several others of this picket of Jägers on cycles were wounded. They are said to have been shot at from the roofs with machine guns. By accident a 12-year old girl was also shot, otherwise priests and other people. Franctireur rifles which had been rendered useless were lying about. A mill in flames which had been going round as our troops moved. The proprietor had fled. Several other houses were also still burning—rest were fired towards evening.

other houses were also still burning—rest were fired towards evening.

21st Oct. 1914.—The farm building to the left was empty. Several cheeky comrades went into it and plundered what there was—fruit, milk, corned beef; caught hares, fowls, ducks, and speared them with their bayonets and held them over an open fire until the colonel

forbade it.

On Friday, 23rd Oct. 1914, early, written in the trenches.—About 4 in the morning the Red Cross company came along, which in spite of calling out and whistling were fired on again and again by our own troops.

No. 27. Original.

Montag d. 19. Oct. 14. Ein Stück vom Stellplatz wurde wie ich hörte, durchs Regiment bekannt gemacht, dass Holland dem Engländern, Italien den Franzosen, Amerika den Japanern den Krieg erklärten. Ob es bestätigt ist, weiss niemand, aber trotzdem war

allgemein ein Hallo.

Am Dienstag den 20. Oct. 1914. Früh hörte ich, dass Häuser nebenan leer standen, teils ausgewandert, teils erschossen waren, worin deswegen Feldw. Nuss u. Kameraden die Herren im Hause spielten u. Verschiedenes mitnahmen, vor allen Essbares u. Räder, da Fahrradhandlg . . . Auf Feldern, in Gärten u. Häusern lagen 60 tote Franktireur, die unsere Jäger beschossen hatten, auf der rechten Seite ein Grab von sechs Jäger, ein Unteroffz., 5 Mann; auf Pfahl, Kopfbedeckung u. Trottel, wiesen darauf hin, mehrere andere von dieser Spitze von Jägern auf Rädern wurden verwundet, sie sollen von Dächern herunter mit Maschinengewehren beschossen worden sein. Versehentlich wurde ein 12-jähriges Mädchen mit erschossen, sonst Pfaffen u. andere Personen. Unbrauchgemachte Franktireurgewehre sah man liegen, eine Mühle brennen, die sich drehte, wie unsere Truppen sich bewegten. Der Besitzer war geflohen. Div. andere Häuser standen ebenfalls noch in Flammen, bezw. gegen Abend noch in Brand gesetzt.

Das Gehöft links davon stand leer. Verschiedene dreiste Kameraden 21. Oct. . . . gingen hinein u. räuberten, was es gab, Obst, Milch, Pöckelfleisch, fingen Hasen, Hühner, Enten; spiessen sie an Seiten-Gewehr und hielten sie über offnes Feuer, bis es vom Oberst

Am Freitag den 23. Okt. 14, früh im Schützengraben geschrieben. Etwa früh 4 Uhr kam die Sanitätskomp., die trotz zurufen u. pfeifen von eigenen Truppen immer u. immer wieder beschossen wurde.

No. 29. Translation.

[The writer is evidently a lieutenant in command of a platoon. Name and address unknown.]

On 20th October marched on to Dadizeele. The first impression one got of the war was hardly beautiful. Several houses had been burned down because the inhabitants fired on our troops. The bread we found was said to be poisoned. . . . The artillery began again. In a village in front of us the francs-tireurs had been again at their old game, and soon a farm building was on fire. Suddenly 1st Lieutenant Reimann, who had remained behind with his 9th Company to cover the artillery, came and said that he had just had a fight with francs-tireurs in the village through which we had marched two hours ago. Regiment 244 was also present. Some inhabitants were shot, but Regiment 244 also had to mourn the loss of one man. About four farm buildings were set on fire. The night was brightly illuminated by burning houses in front and behind us. We turned back, being drenched to the skin, and looked for quarters, opening the doors with axes and searching the houses from top to bottom.

23rd Oct. 1914.—Some aviators flew over us and several infantry bullets whistled over our heads. It was assumed that they came from francs-tireurs. A house was burnt down and some people locked up. In advancing I saw a terrible picture. In the meadow lay a man and his wife dead—clearly the parents of a child of about five years wandering about wounded. I would have liked to have taken the poor youngster into safety, but duty called me to lead my men on. The child cried pitiably. All houses round about us were burning—probably also the home of the child.

> Original. No. 29.

The writer is evidently a lieutenant in command of a platoon:

October.—Am 20. 8 Uhr weiter marschiert nach Dadizeele. Der erste Eindruck, den man vom Kriege bekam, war nicht gerade schön. Mehrere Häuser waren niedergebrannt, da die Einwohner gegen unsere Truppen geschossen hatten. Das gefundene Brot sollte Die Artillerie setzte wieder ein. In einem Hofe vor uns waren wieder Franktireurs rebellisch geworden und bald brannte ein Gehöft. Plötzlich kam Obl. Reimann, der mit seiner 9. Komp. zur Art.-Bedeckung zurückgeblieben war und sagte, soeben hätte er einen Kampf mit Franktireurs gehabt in dem Dorfe durch das wir vor 2 Stunden marschiert waren. Reg. 244 war auch dabei. Einige Bewohner wurden erschossen, doch hatte auch Reg. 244 den Verlust von 1 Mann zu beklagen. Ca. 4 Gehöfte gingen in Flammen auf, die Nacht war hell erleuchtet. So brannte es vor und hinter uns . . . Wir kehrten, nachdem wir von dem Regen völlig durchnässt waren, um und suchten uns Quartier, indem wir mittels Beilen die Türen öffneten, die Häuser von oben bis unten durchsuchten.

23.10.—Etliche Flieger überflogen uns und mehrere Inf. Geschosse zischten über unsere Köpfe hinweg. Man nahm an es seien Schüsse von Franktireurs. Ein Haus wurde niedergebrannt, einige Leute eingesperrt. . . . Beim Vorspringen sah ich ein Bild des Entsetzens. Auf der Wiese lagen ein Mann und eine Frau tot, offenbar die Eltern eines umherirrenden verwundeten Kindes von 5 Jahren. Gern hätte ich das arme Wurm in Sicherheit gebracht, aber die Pflicht rief mich, meine Leute vorzubringen. Das Kind weinte jammerlich, sämtliche Häuser um uns herum brannten, wahrscheinlich auch dessen Wohnstätte.

No. 30.

Translation.

[Loose leaves from a diary. No name, no address.]

25th Sept. 1914, Lehan.—In excursions through the town all sorts of extraordinary things were brought to light, for instance, our whole (carriage load?)* was fitted out with slippers, then came under-shirts, towels, sweaters, &c., and so on:

No. 30. Original.

25.9.14, Lehan.—Auf Streifzügen durch die Stadt wurden die undenklichsten Sachen zutage gefördert, z. B. wurde unser ganzes Kuppee (?) mit Hausschuhen versehen. Dann wurden Unterhemden, Handtücher, Sweaters u. s. w. eingeholt.

No. 32.

Translation.

Apparently the diary of a very highly educated man, written on leaves of a commercial order book. No name or address of writer. Evidently some pages missing at the end.

13th Sept. 1914, Dolhain [close to frontier].—The inhabitants are, to our surprise, courteous, some even friendly.

14th Sept. 1914.—Wake up in Tirlemont on the way to Louvain. Many houses destroyed. In Louvain, what a sad scene! all the houses surrounding the railway station completely destroyed—only some foundation walls still standing. In the station square captured guns. At the end of the main street the town hall, which has been completely preserved with all its beautiful turrets; a sharp contrast. 180 inhabitants are stated to have been shot after they had dug their own graves.

On the 16th Sept. 1914, just behind Mons.—Here also again, innumerable houses have

been destroyed, and the population looks bitter and scowling.

No. 32.

Original.

13.9.—Dolhain [close to frontier]. Bevölkerung zu unserm Erstaunen zuvorkommend,

zum Teil sogar freundlich.

14.9.—Erwachen in Tirlemont auf dem Wege nach Löwen. Vielfach zerstörte Häuser. Und nun in Löwen. Welch ein trauriger Anblick. Alle Häuser in der Umgebung des Bahnhofes vollständig zerstört. Einzelne Grundmauern nur ragen noch auf. Auf dem Bahnhofplatze eroberte Geschütze Am Ende der Hauptstrasse das vollkommen erhalten gebliebene Rathaus mit all seinen prächtigen Türmchen. Ein krasser Gegensatz. 180 Einwohner sollen, nachdem sie sich selbst ihr Grab geschaufelt hatten, erschossen worden sein.

16.9.—Hinter Mons. Hier sind auch wieder unzählige Häuser zerstört und die

Bevölkerung schaut verbittert und finster drein.

No. 33.

Translation.

[No name of writer; addressed to brother-in-law:]—"You wrote about the Belgians. They have themselves to thank that their country has been laid waste in this way. I have seen all "the large towns like Visé and the villages behind it in flames. In Tongres we were in the evening, when it was dark, also attacked by the inhabitants. There was a tremendous exchange of fire, because we were fired on from four sides. Fortunately only one man was injured. He died the following day. We had shot two women, and the men were shot the "following day."

No. 33.

Original.

[Unfinished letter addressed to brother-in-law:]—

Du schreibst von die Belgier, dieselben haben sich es selbst zuzuschreiben das ihr Land so verwüstet ist. Die grosse Städte wie Viesé und die Dörfer dahinter habe ich alle in Flammen gesehen. In Tongres sind wir Abends wie es dunkel war auch von der Bevölkerung angegriffen worden, es war ein mächtiger Kugelwechsel, denn wir bekamen von 4 Seiten Feuer, und wie zum Glück war nur 1 angeschossen, welcher am nächsten Tag gestorben ist. Wir hatten 2 Frauen erschossen und die Männer wurde am nächsten Tage erschossen.

^{*} May refer to railway compartment, but the word is very indistinct.

No. 38.

Translation.

Evidently, originally, the cash book of a waitress named Marie F. near Riksheim (Alsace):]—When we entered Riksheim on the 10th August, at 1 o'clock in the morning, after the storm we had asked the inhabitants whether there were any more French left in the houses, so everybody said "no," and gave us drink. When we wanted to go to rest, suddenly there were shots from all houses. The regiment had heavy losses: many officers and a general of the 84th Brigade fell.

22nd Aug.—We marched into the French village of Sarburg. Here the soldiers had plundered. Whatever there was to eat was taken along. On the 23rd and 24th August there were great fights. We had heavy losses, and the French artillery also had heavy losses. Here wounded Frenchmen had again shot on Red Cross assistants, then came the order that no more prisoners were to be made.

No. 38. Original.

[No name, no address; originally a cash book of a waitress named Marie F——, near Ricksheim (Alsace):]—Als wir am 10. August morgens 1 Uhr nach dem Sturm durch Ricksheim zogen hatten wir die Einwohner gefragt ob in den Häuser noch Franzosen sind, da sagte alles nein und gab uns zu trinken. Und alls wir zur Ruhe übergehen wollen da knalte es auf einmal aus alen Häusern raus; das Regiment hate shwere Verluste, viele Offiziere und ein General der 84. Briegade ist gefallen.

22. August.—Wir marschirten in die Franzosische Ortschaft Sarburg, hier haben die Soldaten geplündert, was zu essen war wurde mitgenommen. Am 23.-24. August waren grosse Gefechte; wir hatten schwere Verluste, die Französische Atelire hate auch schwere Verluste; hier hatte verwundette Franzossen wieder auf Sanitätsgehilfen geschossen, dann kam der Befehl es werden keine Gefangene gemacht.

TRANSLATION forwarded by Professor Morgan of Extracts from a Diary in the Possession of the French Military Authorities.

Extracts from the field notebook of an officer in the 178th Regiment, XIIth (Saxon)

Corps:

"August 17th.—In the afternoon I had a look at the little château belonging to one of the King's secretaries (not at home). Our men had behaved like regular vandals. They had looted the cellar first, and then they had turned their attention to the bedrooms and thrown things about all over the place. They had even made fruitless efforts to smash the safe open. Everything was topsy-turvy—magnificent furniture, silk, and even china. That's what happens when the men are allowed to requisition for themselves. I am sure they must have taken away a heap of useless stuff simply for the pleasure of looting."

"August 23rd.— . . . Our men came back and said that at the point where the valley joined the Meuse we could not get on any further as the villagers were shooting at us from every house. We shot the whole lot—16 of them. They were drawn up in three ranks;

the same shot did for three at a time.

"Two 6-inch howitzers succeeded in getting into position, and in 20 shots reduced the village of Bouvines to ruins. The 8th Company then entered the village. We took up a position in a house overlooking the Meuse. At the door I stepped over the body of the owner. The men had already shown their brutal instincts; everything was upside down.

"It is probable that the high ground opposite was only weakly held, as we didn't see

a single Frenchman.

"The sight of the bodies of all the inhabitants who had been shot was indescribable. Every house in the whole village was destroyed. We dragged the villagers one after another out of the most unlikely corners. The men were shot as well as the women and children who were in the convent, since shots had been fired from the convent windows; and we burnt it afterwards.

"The inhabitants might have escaped the penalty by handing over the guilty and paying

15,000 francs.

"The losses in our regiment (30 killed and many wounded) were caused chiefly by villagers who shot at us from the houses. The men were absolutely mad at this sneaking way of fighting. They wanted to burn everything, and they succeeded, too, in setting light to several houses. In the afternoon our artillery fairly sprinkled the principal buildings in the place, the whole length of the village, with incendiary shells. It was a marvellous sight, the high ground from Dinant to Leppe (?), overlooking the Meuse, all in flames. Every building was burning. The reflection of the fire made the waters of the Meuse run red as blood. It was almost as light as day, and helped our sappers to build a bridge."

blood. It was almost as light as day, and helped our sappers to build a bridge."

"August 26th.—We marched to Nismes. After passing Merlemont we came to Villersen-Fagne. The inhabitants had warned the French of the arrival of our troops by a signal from the church tower. The enemy's guns opened on us and killed and wounded quite a

few. So in the evening we set fire to the village; the priest and some of the inhabitants were shot.

"We passed through Pettigny and Couvin. Couvin had been partially looted. We reached Bruly and crossed the Belgian frontier. The villages all round were on fire. We

billeted at Gue d'Ossus, the first French village that was burnt.

"The inhabitants fired on our men again. The division took drastic steps to stop the villages being burnt and the inhabitants being shot. The pretty little village of Gue d'Ossus, however, was apparently set on fire without cause. A cyclist fell off his machine and his rifle went off. I said he had a shot at. All the inhabitants were burnt in the houses. I hope there will be no more such horrors.

"At Leppe apparently 200 men were shot. There must have been some innocent men among them. In future we shall have to hold an inquiry as to their guilt instead of

shooting them.

"In the evening we marched to Maubert-Fontaine. Just as we were having our meal

the alarm was sounded—everyone is very jumpy.

"September 3rd.—Still at Rethel, on guard over prisoners. . . . The houses are charming inside. The middle class in France has magnificent furniture. We found stylish pieces everywhere and beautiful silk, but in what a state! . . . Good God! . . . Every bit of furniture broken, mirrors smashed. The Vandals themselves could not have done more damage. This place is a disgrace to our army. The inhabitants who fled could not have expected, of course, that all their goods would have been left intact after so many troops had passed. But the column commanders are responsible for the greater part of the damage, as they could have prevented the looting and destruction. The damage amounts to millions of marks; even the safes have been attacked.

"In a solicitor's house in which, as luck would have it, all was in excellent taste, including a collection of old lace and Eastern works of art, everything was smashed

to bits.

"I could not resist taking a little memento myself here and there. . . . One house was particularly elegant, everything in the best taste. The hall was of light oak; I found a splendid aquascutum under the staircase and a camera for Felix."

APPENDIX C.

PROCLAMATIONS.

PROCLAMATION DISTRIBUTED ON THE 4TH AUGUST 1914, at Warsage (on the road from Aix-la-Chapelle to Visé.)*

To the Belgian Nation:

I regret very much to find that German troops are compelled to cross the frontier of Belgium. They are constrained to do so by sheer necessity, the neutrality of Belgium having already been violated by French officers who have been through Belgium territory in a motor car, disguised, on their way into Germany. Belgians, our dearest wish is that means may still be found to avoid a combat between two peoples who have always been friendly till now, and who formerly were even allies. Remember the glorious day of Waterloo when German arms assisted in founding and establishing the independence and prosperity of your country.

But we must have a free passage. The destruction of bridges, tunnels, and railway lines

will be looked upon as hostile actions. Belgians, it is for you to choose.

I hope, therefore, that the army of the Meuse will not be constrained to fight you. A free

passage to attack those who wished to attack us is all that we ask.

I offer formal guarantees to the Belgian population that they will have not have to suffer from the horrors of war, that we will pay in gold coin for the supplies which we shall have to take in the country, and that our soldiers will show themselves the best friends of a people for whom we feel the highest esteem and the greatest sympathy. If you wish to avoid the horrors of war you must act wisely and with a true appreciation of your duty to your country.

The General Commanding in Chief the Army of the Meuse,

VON EMMICH.

Proclamation distribuée le 4 août 1914.

"Au Peuple belge!

"C'est à mon plus grand regret que les troupes allemandes se voient forcées de franchir la frontière de la Belgique. Elles agissent sous la contrainte d'une nécessité inévitable, la neutralité de la Belgique ayant été déjà violée par des officiers français qui, sous un déguisement, avaient traversé le territoire belge en automobile pour pénétrer en Allemagne.

'Belges! C'est notre plus grand désir qu'il y ait encore moyen d'éviter un combat entre deux peuples qui étaient amis jusqu'à présent, jadis même alliés. Souvenez-vous du glorieux jour de Waterloo où c'étaient les armes allemandes qui ont contribué à fonder et

établir l'indépendance et la prospérité de votre patrie.

"Mais il nous faut le chemin libre. Des destructions de ponts, de tunnels, de voies ferrées devront être regardées comme des actions hostiles.

"Belges, vous avez à choisir.

"J'espère donc que l'armée de la Meuse ne sera pas contrainte de vous combattre. Un chemin libre pour attaquer celui qui voulait nous attaquer, c'est tout ce que nous désirons.

"Je donne des garanties formelles à la population belge qu'elle n'aura rien à souffrir des horreurs de la guerre; que nous paierons en or monnayé les vivres qu'il faudra prendre du pays; que nos soldats se montreront les meilleurs amis d'un peuple pour lequel nous éprouvons la plus haute estime, la plus grande sympathie.

"C'est de votre sagesse et d'un patriotisme bîen compris qu'il dépend d'éviter à votre

pays les horreurs de la guerre.

"Le Général commandant en chef l'armée de la Meuse, "Von Emmich."

PROCLAMATION POSTED AT HASSELT ON THE 17TH AUGUST 1914.

Dear fellow citizens:

Acting in conjunction with the High German military command I have the honour to advise you again to abstain from any kind of provocative demonstration and from all acts of hostility which might bring terrible reprisals upon our town.

Above all you must abstain from acts of violence against the German troops, and

especially from firing on them.

* Taken from the Sixth Report of the Belgian Commission.

[†] An original of this proclamation was submitted to the Committee by the Belgian Government.

In case the inhabitants fire upon the soldiers of the German Army a third of the male population will be shot.

I recall to your notice that groups of more than five persons are strictly forbidden and that persons who disobey the order to this effect will be arrested forthwith.

Hasselt, the 17th August 1914.

The Burgomaster, FERD. PORTMANS.

Affiche placardée à Hasselt, le 17 août 1914.

"Chers Concitoyens,

"D'accord avec l'autorité militaire supérieure allemande, j'ai l'honneur de vous recommander à nouveau de vous abstenir de toute manfesitation provocante et de tous actes d'hostilité qui pourraient attirer à notre ville de terribles représailles.

'Vous vous abstiendrez surtout de sévices contre les troupes allemandes et notamment

de tirer sur elles.

"Dans le cas où des habitants tireraient sur des soldats de l'armée allemande, le tiers de

la population mâle serait passée par les armes.

Je vous rappelle que les rassemblements de plus de cinq personnes sont strictement défendus et que les personnes qui contreviendraient à cette défense seront arrêtées séance tenante.

"Hasselt, le 17 août 1914.

"Le Bourgmestre, Ferd, Portmans."

EXTRACT FROM A PROCLAMATION ISSUED TO THE AUTHORITIES OF THE COMMUNE OF THE Town of Liège, 22nd August 1914.*

"The inhabitants of the town of Andenne after protesting that their intentions were pacific made a treacherous surprise attack upon our troops.† With my consent the General Commanding has burnt the whole neighbourhood and about 100 people have been shot. I bring this fact to the knowledge of the town of Liège in order that the people of Liège may picture to themselves the fate which awaits them if they take up a like attitude.

"The General Commanding-in-Chief,

'Von Bülow."

Extrait d'une proclamation aux autoritès communales de la ville de Liége.

"Le 22 août 1914.

'Les habitants de la ville d'Andenne, après avoir protesté de leurs intentions pacifiques, ont fait une surprise traître sur nos troupes.

"C'est avec mon consentement que le général en chef a fait brûler toute la localité et que

cent personnes environ ont été fusillées.

Je porte ce fait à la connaissance de la ville de Liége pour que les Liégeois se représentent le sort dont ils sont menacés, s'ils prenaient pareille attitude.

'Le Général commandant en chef, "Von Bulow."

Proclamation posted at Namur, 25th August 1914.*

"1. Belgian or French soldiers must be handed over as prisoners of war before 4 o'clock, in front of the prison. Citizens who fail to obey this order will be sentenced to penal servitude for life in Germany.

"A rigorous inspection of houses will begin at 4 o'clock. Every soldier found will be shot

at once.

"2. Arms, powder, dynamite must be handed over at 4 o'clock. Penalty—to be shot. "Citizens who know of any place where arms or ammunition are deposited must inform the burgomaster under a penalty of penal servitude for life.

'3. All the streets of the town will be held by German guards who will seize 10 hostages in each street which is under their charge. If any hostile action is attempted in the street

the 10 hostages will be shot.

"4. Doors must not be locked, and at night from 8 o'clock onwards three windows must

be lighted up in each house.

5. No one must be out in the street after 8 o'clock. The people of Namur must understand that there is no crime greater nor more horrible than to endanger the existence of the town or the lives of its inhabitants by hostile action against the German Army.

"The Commandant of the Town, "Von Bülow."

"Namur, 25th August 1914."

* Taken from the Sixth Report of the Belgian Commission.

[†] This assertion is vehemently denied by the witnesses from Andenne. See Appendix A., b. 1, 2, 3.

Proclamation affichée à Namur, le 25 août 1914.

"Les soldats belges et français doivent être livrés comme prisonniers de guerre avant 4 heures devant la prison. Les citoyens qui n'obéiront pas seront condamnés aux travaux forcés à perpétuité en Allemagne. "L'inspection sévère des immeubles commencera à 4 heures. Tout soldat trouvé sera

immédiatement fusillé.

"2.—Armes, poudre, dynamite doivent être remis (sic) à 4 heures. Peine: fusillade.

"Les citoyens connaissant un dépôt doivent en prévenir le bourgmestre, sous peine de

travaux forcés à perpétuité.

"3.—Toutes les rues seront occupées par une garde allemande qui prendra dix otages dans chaque rue qu'ils garderont sous leur surveillance. Si un attentat se produit dans la rue, les dix otages seront fusillés.

"4.—Les portes ne peuvent être fermées à clef et, la nuit à partir de 8 heures, trois

fenêtres doivent être éclairés dans chaque maison.

"5.—Interdiction de se trouver dans la rue après 8 heures. Les Namurois devront comprendre qu'il n'y a pas crime plus grand et plus horrible que de compromettre, par des attentats sur l'armée allemande, l'existence de la ville ou la vie des habitants.

"Le Commandant de la place, "Von Bulow.

"Namur, 25 aoùt 1914."

Proclamation Posted at Reims on the 12th September 1914.* Proclamation.

In case fighting takes place to-day or in the near future in the neighbourhood of Reims or in the town itself the inhabitants are warned that they must keep absolutely calm and must make no sort of attempt to take part in the fighting. They must not attempt to attack either isolated soldiers or detachments of the Germany Army. Raising barricades or taking up the paving of streets is expressly prohibited in order that the movements of troops may not be impeded. In a word nothing must be attempted which can be in any way injurious to the German Army.

In order adequately to assure the safety of the troops and to guarantee a calm attitude on the part of the population of Reims, the persons named below have been taken as hostages by the German High Command. These hostages will be hanged if the least attempt is made to create a disturbance, and if any infraction of what has been laid down above is committed the town

will be wholly or partially burnt and the inhabitants hanged.

On the other hand, if the town keeps absolutely peaceful and calm the hostages and inhabitants will be taken under the protection of the German Army.

By order of the German Authorities,

The Mayor, Dr. LANGLET.

Reims, the 12th September 1914.

LIST OF HOSTAGES.

(Eighty names follow, and a note is appended that some other hostages have been taken in addition to the 80 whose names appear. Amongst the 80 names are five priests and a number of persons of distinction.)

PROCLAMATION.

Dans le cas où un combat serait livré aujourd'hui où très prochainement aux environs de Reims ou dans la Ville même, les habitants sont avisés qu'ils devront se tenir absolument calmes et n'essayer en aucune manière de prendre part à la bataille. Ils ne doivent tenter d'attaquer ni des soldats isolés ni des détachements de l'armée allemande. Il est formellement interdit d'élever des barricades ou de dépaver des rues de façon à ne pas gêner les mouvements des troupes, en un mot de n'entreprendre quoi que ce soit qui puisse être d'une façon quelconque nuisible à l'armée allemande.

Afin d'assurer suffisamment la sécurité des Troupes, et afin de répondre du calme de la population de Reims, les personnes nommées ci-après ont été prises en otages par le commandement général de l'armée allemande. Ces otages seront pendus à la moindre tentative de désordre. De même, la ville sera entièrement ou partiellement brûlée et les habitants pendus, si une infraction quelconque est commise aux prescriptions précédentes.

Par contre, si la ville se tient absolument tranquille et calme, les otages et les habitants

seront pris sous la sauvegarde de l'armée allemande.

Par Ordre de l'autorité Allemande,

Le Maire, Dr. LANGLET.

Reims, le 12 Septembre 1914.

LISTE DES OTAGES.

Followed by 80 names and the note "several others."

^{*} An original of this proclamation was forwarded to the Committee by Professor Morgan.

PROCLAMATION.

I. All arms and ammunition are to be deposited at

Any person whosoever found in possession of arms hereafter will be shot instantly.

II. The gathering together of groups of people is strictly forbidden.

III. DURING THE HOURS OF DARKNESS no person is allowed to be in the streets without the written permission of the German local commandant.

Every house must be entirely OPEN and LIGHTED and the streets must also be lighted.

IV. German currency, including German notes, must be universally accepted, at the rate of exchange of 1 mark = 1.25 frs. Any refusal to do so will be severely punished.

V. ALL PERSONS WILL BE SHOT FORTHWITH WHO ATTACK GERMAN SOLDIERS OF even threaten them.

The Divisional Commandant.

Printing office of Joseph Lenzen, Herzogenrath.

^{*} An original of this proclamation was submitted to the Committee by Sir William Lawrence. It was evidently prepared and printed beforehand in Germany. The French is very faulty. A photograph appears on the opposite page.

Bekanntmachung.

I. Waffen und Munition sind

abzugeben.

Wer später im Besitze von Waffen betroffen wird, wird erschossen.

- Ansammlungen sind verboten.
- Während der Dunkelheit darf Niemand ohne schriftliche Erlaubnis des Ortskommandanten die Strasse betreten,

 sind die Häuser dauernd unverschlossen und beleuchtet zu halten, desgl. die Strassen.
- Deutsches Geld, einschl. Papiergeld, hat Jedermann als Zahlung

 1 Mark = 1,25 fr. anzunehmen Zuwiderhandlungen
 werden streng bestraft.
- V. Wer deutsche Soldaten angreift oder mit einem Angriffe bedroht, wird sofort niedergeschossen.

Divisionskommando.

Proclamation!

I. Toutes les armes et munitions sont à déposer à

N'importe quelle personne qui se trouve plus tard en possession d'armes sera fusillé instantanément.

II. Tous rassemblement est strictement défendu.

III. Personne doit se trouver dans la rue pendant qu'il fait nuit sans permission écrite de la part du commandant allemand du village ou de la ville.

Toutes les maisons doivent rester completement ouvertes et eclaireés, le rues doivent rester eclairés également.

- IV. Je faut accepter la monnaie allemande, y compris les billets allemands, la Mark au cours de 1 fr. 25. Tous refus sera punis sevèrement.
- V. Sera fusillé sur le coup toute personne qui attaque des soldats allemands ou qui fait des menaces seulement.

Le Commandant de Division.

The imprint is too small to be legible when photographed. It runs as follows:—
"Buchdruckerei Jos. Lenzen, Herzogenrath."

APPENDIX D.

Second Peace Conference held at the Hague in 1907.

Convention concerning the Laws and Customs of War on Land.

Section II.—Of Hostilities.

CHAPTER I.

Means of Injuring the Enemy. Sieges and Bombardments.

ARTICLE 22.

Belligerents have not got an unlimited right as to the choice of means of injuring the enemy.

ARTICLE 23.

In addition to the prohibitions provided by special Conventions, it is particularly forbidden-

(a) To employ poison or poisoned weapons;

(b) To kill or wound by treachery individuals belonging to the hostile nation or army; (c) To kill or wound an enemy who, having laid down his arms, or no longer having means of defence, has surrendered at discretion;

(d) To declare that no quarter will be given;

(e) To employ arms, projectiles, or material calculated to cause unnecessary suffering; (f) To make improper use of a flag of truce, of the national flag, or of the military insignia and uniform of the enemy, as well as of the distinctive signs of the Geneva Convention;

(q) To destroy or seize enemy property, unless such destruction or seizure be imperatively demanded by the necessities of war;

(h) To declare abolished, suspended, or inadmissible the right of the subjects of the hostile party to institute legal proceedings.

A belligerent is likewise forbidden to compel the subjects of the hostile party to take part in the operations of war directed against their own country, even if they were in the service of the belligerent before the commencement of the war.

ARTICLE 24.

Ruses of war and the employment of measures necessary for obtaining information about the enemy and the country are considered permissible.

ARTICLE 25.

The attack or bombardment, by any means whatever, of undefended towns, villages, dwellings, or buildings, is forbidden.

ARTICLE 26.

The officer in command of an attacking force must do all in his power to warn the authorities before commencing a bombardment, except in cases of assault.

ARTICLE 27.

In sieges and bombardments all necessary steps must be taken to spare, as far as possible, buildings dedicated to public worship, art, science, or charitable purposes, historic monuments, hospitals, and places where the sick and wounded are collected, provided they are not being used at the time for military purposes.

It is the duty of the besieged to indicate such buildings or places by distinctive and

visible signs, which shall be notified to the enemy beforehand.

ARTICLE 28.

The giving over to pillage of a town or place, even when taken by assault, is forbidden.

Section III .- Military Authority over the Territory of the Hostile State.

ARTICLE 42.

Territory is considered occupied when actually placed under the authority of the hostile

The occupation extends only to the territory where such authority has been established

and is in a position to assert itself.

ARTICLE 43.

The authority of the power of the State having passed de facto into the hands of the occupant, the latter shall do all in his power to restore, and ensure, as far as possible, public order and safety, respecting at the same time, unless absolutely prevented, the laws in force in the country.

ARTICLE 45.

It is forbidden to force the inhabitants of occupied territory to swear allegiance to the hostile Power.

ARTICLE 46.

Family honour and rights, individual life, and private property, as well as religious convictions and worship, must be respected.

Private property may not be confiscated.

ARTICLE 47.

Pillage is expressly forbidden.

ARTICLE 48.

If, in the territory occupied, the occupant collects the taxes, dues, and tolls payable to the State, he shall do so, as far as is possible, in accordance with the legal basis and assessment in force at the time, and shall in consequence be bound to defray the expenses of the administration of the occupied territory to the same extent as the national Government had been so bound.

ARTICLE 49.

If, in addition to the taxes mentioned in the above Article, the occupant levies other money contributions in the occupied territory, they shall only be applied to the needs of the army or of the administration of the territory in question.

ARTICLE 50.

No collective penalty, pecuniary or otherwise, shall be inflicted upon the population on account of the acts of individuals for which it cannot be regarded as collectively responsible.

ARTICLE 52.

Requisitions in kind and services shall not be demanded from local authorities or inhabitants except for the needs of the army of occupation. They shall be in proportion to the resources of the country, and of such a nature as not to involve the inhabitants in the obligation of taking part in military operations against their own country.

Such requisitions and services shall only be demanded on the authority of the commander

in the locality occupied.

Contributions in kind shall as far as possible be paid for in ready money; if not, a receipt shall be given and the payment of the amount due shall be made as soon as possible.

ARTICLE 53.

An army of occupation shall only take possession of cash, funds, and realizable securities which are strictly the property of the State, depôts of arms, means of transport, stores and supplies, and, generally, all movable property belonging to the State which may

be used for military operations.

Except in cases governed by naval law, all appliances adapted for the transmission of news, or for the transport of persons or goods, whether on land, at sea, or in the air, depôts of arms, and, in general, all kinds of war material may be seized, even if they belong to private individuals, but they must be restored at the conclusion of peace, and indemnities must be paid for them.

ARTICLE 56.

The property of local authorities, as well as that of institutions dedicated to public worship, charity, education, and to science and art, even when State property, shall be

Any seizure or destruction of, or wilful damage to, institutions of this character, historic monuments and works of science and art, is forbidden, and should be made the subject of

legal proceedings.

APPENDIX E.

DEPOSITIONS TAKEN AND PAPERS FORWARDED BY PROFESSOR MORGAN.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Near Armentières, some time in November, one morning about 6.30, the Durhams got surprised and retired; we reinforced to retake the trenches. Our major led us up and we retook the trenches; Major C. . . . put a field-dressing on the arm of a wounded German, and when he turned away the German shot him. We bayonetted him.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

When we were approaching Ypres from Hazebrouck, we met several refugees, chiefly of women and children. All the men civilians, we found afterwards, were kept by the enemy for the purpose of making trenches. The women were in an exhausted state—with their children—some with their hands deliberately cut off—deliberately off—not blown off by shell. The women told us this by signs. The cutting off of the hands of the women and children was in order to get the bangles off the wrists. The women—their clothes (skirts) were torn and they were crying—had also been insulted. I mean outraged. In the village, whose name I forget, it is about 3 miles this side of Ypres (the Belgian headquarters were very close here, in a big fine chateau a lovely place), there is a publican who was made to pay 800 fs. to save his house from being fired. The publican, who spoke English very well, told me this, and so did his wife. Two doors off lived a poor old lady who had no money for the Uhlan patrol, so they fastened her down in her own house with ropes and outraged her.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Somewhere between Chantilly and Villers-Cotterets, about end of August, just after we started advancing, we were marching through a village, and the villagers called us into a house and showed us the body of a middle-aged man, with both arms cut off by a sword, pointed to him and said "Allemands." They told our R.A.M.C. men in French that be had been killed when trying to protect his daughter.

In the next village, before we got to the Aisne, the villagers showed us the dead body of of a woman, naked, on the ground, badly mutilated, her breasts cut off and her body ripped

up. They said "Allemands."

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Oct. 18th, in a suburb of Armentières, we were advancing, and saw the body of a woman lying in a doorway, half naked, the upper part of her body exposed; one of her breasts cut clean off, as if by a sword cut; blood all over the doorway. There were no signs of shell-fire; no débris. Lieutenant B. . . ., of our regiment, said she had been outraged.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About 19th October, about two days' march from Poperinghe, we made a forced march that morning and got to a bit of a village, and the Commanding Officer told us to attack a village about two miles up the road. We had got about 200 yards when we received an order to take up a position in a field to await the Queen's on our left. Our men on the right went forward, and we lost our connecting files on either side. About 3 we had the order to retire. Their shrapnel fire ceased and the enemy advanced with the bayonet. I was wounded in the foot by a rifle bullet and lying on the ground. A German came up and shot, at the distance of about two or three yards, the man lying next to me. I got up and tried to crawl away, and he shot me in the shoulder. All round our wounded were being shot on the ground, and I could hear them crying out. I crawled to the hedge, and I remained there from Wednesday till Friday night, when I was picked up by a trench ambulance.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About October 15th I was with my regiment outside Ypres; Germans overlapped us on both sides, and we had to retire. As the Germans came on singing and shouting, I saw them—they were quite close—not more than the length of this ward—sticking their bayonets into those lying on the ground. We got into the wood with other details. The Germans thought we were another regiment, and so they retired, and we retook the trenches.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On 14th November, at Ypres, the Germans broke into our trenches and as we tried to get out most of us were shot. As they retreated, after being driven back from the communication trenches, at about 4.45 on the Saturday (14th November), I was lying wounded in the leg at the bottom of the trench unable to rise and a German officer stooped down and shot me in the thigh. I saw the same thing done by other Germans to other men of my company.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About 7th September, 2 miles from Braisne, I saw an old man of about 70 lying in a garden with his head split up open by a sabre, and a young man on the ground shot dead. In the next garden I saw another young man, about 20, tied to a tree riddled with shot as if they had been practising at him. There had been a lot of destruction there and the people starving. We gave some of our biscuits to them.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Near Ypres, in November, on a Saturday, in the evening, the Germans advanced and broke through our trenches, and we retired. We had left Major L. . . . in our trench wounded. I was about 50 yards off and I saw a German, I think an officer, go up to Major L. . . ., who put his hands up, but the German officer shot him dead. We retook the trenches about an hour later.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

During the advance to the Aisne (from the Marne) I saw homes destroyed in thousands, ransacked, and furniture with everything else smashed. On one occasion I saw a child, about five or six years old, lying on the road side, practically beaten to pieces. The injuries were not from shell-fire, but as if beaten about the head with blunt heavy things. About the same time I went into a public-house when the owner told me that on his wall was a picture of the King and Queen of the Belgians. Germans ordered him to take the picture down. On his refusing the Germans nearly strangled him in a corner. I saw the marks of the injuries on the man's neck. I understood quite what he meant by the man's gestures. I understand a good deal what these French people mean now. He put the chair in the corner, sat upon it, and showed how he had been illused. After all the picture remained in its place and was not taken down.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On Tuesday, September 1st, we halted at a village to wait for orders. We were asked into a house and offered milk. We wanted to buy eggs. We had with us Gunner B. . . ., who knew French well (he was born in Guernsey); the sergeant and officers used to take him as interpreter. The man in the house said he wanted all the eggs he had for his daughter and another woman—he showed the two women to us in a room on the same floor. They were in bed, one of them with her breasts bandaged. I saw them. He told Gunner B. that his daughter had been outraged and her breasts cut off.

CORPORAL.

After Meaux, at a place called Chantilly, or Chantilly de Nord (or de Sud), just before you get to the River Marne, in one house which I went into, I saw (with others) one young girl, I should say her age was about 17, tied to the table. She had been brutally maltreated, I mean outraged. I saw her myself with the blood running down her legs. We cut her down at once, and she was taken to hospital where she was treated by our own Red Cross people. Immediately afterwards I took part in a big charge. We drove out the Germans, capturing 70 prisoners. Of these at least 50 were drunk. From here we went in the Battle of the Aisne and Ypres.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About November 6, at Lindenhoek, we were sent into the village of Messines to observe, and we laid our line of communication with our battery and carried our observation instruments to the church tower. We were there all that day, and the Germans made two or three charges during the night. Next morning they came into the village, and as we could not escape without leaving our instruments we stopped there and broke them up. Some German officers came up with their men, up the tower, and told us to put our "Hands up," and, as we had no rifles, we did so. They asked us what regiment we belonged to. We said we belonged to the Royal Fusiliers. They said "You do not" (the officer spoke English), and said we must either be spies or artillery observers (we had no badges on—we had given them all away), and asked to see our identification discs. When they saw them they asked where the battery was, and told us if we did not tell them they would shoot us as spies. We would not tell them—there were four of us altogether (two on the telephone, two on the observation instruments)—and they said they would give us till the next morning. They kept us in the church all night, with two sentries at the door. The next morning they marched us out, stood us up against a wall, and said they were going to shoot us. Another officer came up and said something, and we were marched back again. They gave us nothing to eat all day. The next day they gave us two raw potatoes and a piece of bread each. Just after, the officer came and took us up the tower, one at a time, with four or five soldiers. When he got me up he asked where the battery was situated. I said I did not know. He then said, "No one will ever know if you tell; and which would you rather have—to be well-treated in Germany or to be shot." I still refused. He then struck me in the mouth and knocked me backwards. I was then marched below. Each of our other men also refused. The next night we heard a lot of

infantry firing, and we saw that one of the two sentries was standing without his rifle. One of our men, D., snatched it up and shot at him, and we all rushed away, except D. . . ., who was shot. After a day concealed in a house, we were caught up one of the Lancashire regiments.

CORPORAL.

At the village of Radnumi(?),* near the Bois Granne† Road, about seven weeks ago, I think, I saw a horrible sight. We were told to find out about a house where a light was shining. We went there and found in it an old lady and three children, but saw nothing particular. The next house had the door open, so me and the sergeant entered with fixed bayonets. The place was all upside down. We went upstairs to the bedroom. To our surprise we found a large pool of blood in the middle of the bed. The rest of the clothes were pulled over the foot of the bed. The bedroom was all ransacked and upside down. Even the image of the Virgin Mary was lying down there broken up. On the bed was a chemise, just as it had been taken off, with blood on the tail part. Then we came downstairs, and a Frenchman, a civilian, made us understand that a girl had been outraged in the room above by the Uhlans we had driven out of the village. They had gone away in a great hurry, because he found a table outside another house—a white house—with bottles half full of wine and some quite full with corks only just drawn. I smashed all these bottles myself, for I was in charge of a section, and I thought there might have been poison in the bottles.

CAPTAIN, R.A.M.C.

At Troyon, on the Aisne, on 20th September (our first day there), about 12 noon, a number of Germans were seen coming over the crest of the hill in front of the West Yorks, holding up their hands and also holding up white flags. The officer in command of one company of the West Yorks ordered his men to lay down their arms and then advance to receive the Germans, who were to surrender. On getting within speaking distance he was informed in English that if they did not all surrender they would all be shot down. At the same moment the front (German) rank dropped on their faces and disclosed a machine gun behind. Moreover, the Germans in front had rifles on the ground beside them, which they took up and began firing. The company officer of the West Yorks was killed; the rest surrendered. This was about a mile from where I was; I was looking through my field-glasses.

At Château Thierry, about 15th September, we were billeted for the night. The place was in an indescribable state of filth; everything in the houses was smashed to atoms, including the heavy furniture. A large private house which we entered, intending to make it the headquarters of the battalion, was made so filthy that we found it impossible to clean it, and the colonel could not sleep there. The whole house, from the front door to the

living-rooms, &c., had been used as latrines.

At a small village, I think St. Remy, north of Château Thierry, we were billeted for the night (about 13th September). We were going round looking for billets for the men and met a woman in great distress, who told the interpreter and myself that her daughter, who was seven months pregnant, had been outraged successively by 11 Germans, and had been sent to hospital, and that it was very doubtful if she would recover.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On the retreat from Mons in August we came upon a woman tied to a tree. She was quite dead. Her throat was cut. I believe she had been outraged. We all believed it. The time was about 5 p.m. It was quite light. I should say the woman's age was between 18 and 22. The men cut her down. I saw them do it. I do not know what became of the body as we had to go on. 'I suspect it was Uhlans who had done this.

BRITISH SOLDIER—SERGEANT.

During the first week in November at Zonnebeke, near Ypres, we were in the trenches, and the white flag was raised in the German trenches about 150 yards opposite to us. The moment our officer got up above the parapet they shot him.

BRITISH SOLDIER—SERGEANT-MAJOR.

- (1) About 14th September, on the Aisne, I was informed that there were some men unburied in the woods behind our trenches on the heights of Soupir. I found a guardsman wounded in the leg‡; he had his trousers down and his field dressing in his clenched hand. Evidently he had been in the act of putting it on when surprised by the Germans. They had given him three bayonet wounds.
- (2) Near Armentières on Monday, 2nd September, one of my company was sent down from the trenches crushed, owing to the trench being blown in. As he was being carried down the road covered by German snipers he was shot through both hands. It was so common for stretcher-bearers to be sniped that we had to give up carrying the wounded by day.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About two months ago, at Laventie, we were billeted there after having cleared the Germans out the day before. We were coming back with a gun limber, when an R.A.M.C. called us into a house to come and look. Two men were with me, one was a friend of mine. We entered the house, and in a bedroom on the ground floor a young woman of about 30 was lying on a bed, the bedclothes were covered with blood. A German soldier's jackboot was in the kitchen. The house was turned upside down. The woman seemed almost dead. The R.A.M.C. man fetched a doctor. The next day I was told by the R.A.M.C. man that the woman had been stabbed with a bayonet in the lower part of the body. I saw her dead body being brought out of the house.

BRITISH SOLDIER-CORPORAL.

In September, at a village (the name I forget) between Coulommiers and Rebaix, while we were on the march, we entered a house to see if we could get bread. The house had a red cross on the door. Inside, on a bed on the ground floor, was the body of a woman, covered with a sheet. In the house was a priest who talked to our orderly, who understood French, and drew back the sheet. She had been stabbed between the breasts, and was quite dead. She looked like an ordinary French working woman of about 30. The priest said she had been outraged. The Germans had, I think, left the village the night before. The house and all the other houses had been ransacked and turned upside down.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

On Saturday, November 28th, at Ypres, we were in the trenches with, I think, the Scots Guards on our right. The men on our right took about 75 German prisoners, at about 10 a.m. Some two hours afterwards some more Germans, about 50 or 60 yards off, on the edge of a wood, held up the white flag. A company of our regiment was sent to take them, and when they got up to them they were fired upon by the Germans who had put up the white flag, they had a machine-gun concealed behind them, and opened fire with this. We lost a great many men, and had to retire.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

About seven miles from St. Jans Capel, not very far from Ypres, four weeks and two days ago—it was on a Monday, and about 11 o'clock in the morning, I was in the trenches. The German trenches were hardly 100 yards away. Private G . . . crept out of the trench to get water and when coming back he got it—hit in the leg, I think. Two stretcher-bearers from about half a mile—they had to come through a wood—placed Private G . . . on a stretcher, and taking him away, got about fifty yards, walking with him when Private G . . . was hit again, I do not know where; he died afterwards, I do not know what day. There was no firing going on at the time—just sniping. The snipers who shot Private G . . . a second time would be about 200 yards off.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I was in the dug-out at the time the incident mentioned by the last witness occurred. I was on the right and not more than 50 yards away. I saw Private G... being taken away on the stretcher. I knew it was Private G... because all his pals with me knew who it was. I went back to my dug-out while Private G... was being carried away to the dressing station. I heard afterwards that he had been shot on the stretcher by a sniper and that he died from the shot.

British Soldier.

On the 17th December—I think that was the date—I was in the trenches. I had lost my company and was attached to B. I saw Private G... coming back from getting water; I knew Private G... because he was my chum. He was hit by a sniper and fell on his knees, he was a wild chap and he shouted out. A big fellow took him by the arm and tried to drag him towards the trench, but he could not, so he came back into the trenches himself alone. I watched Private G... being put on the stretcher crying with pain. He was carried away. I was told that he was wounded again. I never saw him again. I think it was not in broad daylight but about half past four in the afternoon.* It was quite clear and you could see. There was no firing, just an odd sniper now and again. The men got out to get water if they got permission from the corporal—I mean the section commander. The men stoop down and crawl as low as possible.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

I do not know where it was, but we came under a heavy fire on the 8th September which I think was the battle of the Marne. We marched again and came under fire on the 10th. Between this date and the 13th, but I cannot say which day for sure, we marched through a village and I saw a child's face at a window, not on the ground floor, but

up one flight of stairs, and of course, having a child of my own, I thought I would wave my hand to this child, thinking of my own child. As I waved my hand, fellows chaffed me, saying "Get away, this is a doll." We went on a little further and halted. Afterwards, two men, I think, of the K.R.R.'s, came and told us that what I had waved at was a little girl about $2\frac{1}{2}$ years which had been strangled.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

Some time in October near a place which I think is called Soissons, I and an artillery fellow went into a farmhouse to get some water. The farmer's son showed us the dead body of a young girl not more than 14 or 15. She was lying on the floor with the top of her head smashed, I am sure, by a revolver shot. The farmer's son spoke a little English as well as French. He told us that his sister had been raided and murdered by the Germans, and he pointed to upstairs to signify that some one was there. We went up and found a German corporal asleep on the floor. He had had some drink evidently. As soon as we wakened him up he jumped for his rifle but we had got his rifle. We fetched him down and asked him in English (he could speak English) who had done it. He said that his other fellows who had gone away from the farmhouse, had killed the girl. While I was trying to pick up the girl, the corporal broke away from the artillery fellow, who, seeing that he could not catch him, shot him with a revolver which he had, straight through the back. It must have gone straight through his heart. He put about four shots into him. I do not know who the artilleryman was. I had lost my regiment and picked up this chap. I parted with him about four miles after we had left the farmhouse and never saw him again. The farmer's son was in great taking. He said he had been out at the time in the field. When he returned he found the Germans in the house, so he ran away again. When he saw us go in he came into the farmyard with us. We had seen some Germans leaving the farm. The farmer's son then went into the house before us and showed us the body: we followed him in.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

It was on the Wednesday when we came out of the trenches: it must have been about the 16th of December. One of our chaps went to get water from a spring a few yards in front of the trench. He was shot through the right leg by a sniper. We were in the reserve trenches —for the last day. There was no general firing, only occasionally by snipers. Another chap attempted to go to the same place for water, and he was shot through the shoulder. One man jumped back into the trench and we pulled the other in; he was only a yard or two away. The ambulance was sent for. It had to come through a wood to get to our trench. And as it got to the exact spot, where the first man was shot, one of the stretcher-bearers was shot through the right shoulder, and he walked back by himself. Two or three of us put the first man—him shot in the leg—on to the stretcher. We had no arms of any kind on us while doing this. Another chap volunteered to take the stretcher bearer's place. The stretcher had proceeded about five yards when the man lying in it was again shot through the leg. The day was dull but the light was good. It was deliberately a case of firing on the wounded.

BRITISH SOLDIER.

One day, about a week after we came into action on August 24th, I was on patrol duty with a corporal and two other men. On the outskirts of a village which we had just left we came across the bodies of two or three Uhlans and of their horses with their kit lying all about. Close to them by the roadside was a rick, not more than 6 feet high, on fire. Leaning against the rick was a motor-bicycle (a Douglas). On the rick was the body of a despatch rider. We pulled it off; it was scorched, the clothes burnt off and the flesh of the legs and arms almost burnt away. In the body were about half a dozen bullet wounds and one of the hands had the marks of a lance-thrust. Close by were two rounds of German ammunition which had been used. On the road we traced the wheel marks of his bicycle; they suddenly swerved towards the hedge. There were about 18 A.S.C. motor-lorries half turned round in the opposite direction to which they must have been going, but there were no drivers or men to be seen. An A.S.C. captain came along from the village to find out what had become of the column. We had been told about an hour before that the column had been surprised and our squadron had been sent ahead to support it. While we were examining the body the rest of our squadron came up. We were ordered to go ahead on patrol again. The A.S.C. driver who was driving the car in which the A.S.C. captain was, said he knew the despatch-rider. The face of the body was quite recognisable. The villagers who crowded round told our lieutenant who was present, and they told us, that the column had been surprised by Uhlans and that they had seen the despatch-rider, who was leading the column, trying to escape across the fields.

I can't remember the exact date, but it was the day the R.E.'s blew the breech out of four

German guns which had been captured.

Another day, about the third day of the advance, I was on patrol duty and we came to a village. In the church there were 700 German prisoners who had been captured at that place on that day. The Germans had been chased out about two hours before and their transport was lying all about the road. I saw lying near a manure heap in a garden off the road

the bodies of an old lady and an old man with their heads battered in as if by a rifle-butt. lives, crowded round, and pointing to our rifles made a motion as if striking someone and said "Allemands." There had been no shell-fire there. The villagers, who seemed frightened right out of their

Procès—Verbaux.*

Gendarmerie Nationale.

Cejourd'hui vingt trois septembre mil neuf cent quatorze, à dix heures. Nous soussignés, Guillin Auguste François, maréchal des logis chef, et Flornard Victor, gendarme à pied à la résidence de La Ferté-Gaucher, département de Seine-et-Marne, revêtus de notre uniforme et conformément aux ordres de nos chefs, agissant en vertu de la note N° 996, de M. le chef d'escadron commandant la Compagnie, en date du 18 septembre 1914, à l'effet de rechercher les crimes et délits, etc., commis par les allemands et autres troupes dans la commune de La Ferté-Gaucher, nous avons reçu les déclarations suivantes :--

"M. Larieux, adjoint au Maire de La Ferté-Gaucher, en l'absence de ce Magistrat,

"Le dimanche, six courant, les allemands sont allés chez M. Quenescourt, propriétaire du château de la Masure, commune de La Ferté-Gaucher, où ils ont déjeuné. Le soir, ils y sont retournés étant, parait-il, pris de boisson; ils ont alors violé la bonne du propriétaire, ainsi que Mad^o N..., cultivatrice au hameau du Buisson, qui s'était réfugiée à la Masure. Voyant cela, M. Quenescourt a tiré un coup de revolver sans atteindre les allemands, ce qui n'a pas empêché ces derniers de le fusiller immédiatement. Je ne connais pas les détails de cette scène, car j'étais moi-même prisonnier des allemands depuis la veille."

(A signé) LARIEUX.

Mademoiselle G. . . . A. . . ., âgée de 54 ans, domestique de feu M. Q. . . ., à la Masure, commune de La Ferté-Gaucher, déclare :—

"Le dimanche, six courant, un officier allemand et un soldat cycliste de même nationalité sont arrivés vers 14 heures, au château de la Masure, appartenant à M. Q. . . E. . . . , âgé de 77 ans. Ils ont demandé à déjeuner, et mon maître a obtempéré à leur désir et les a bien reçus. Une heure environ après, deux cavaliers allemands sont arrivés à leur tour, puis ils sont partis tous quatre vers 15 heures 30. Le même jour, vers 19 heures, ces quatre allemands sont revenus paraissant fortement pris de boisson, surtout l'officier. Ils ont commencé par tirer des coups de fusil à travers la grille, et l'un des chiens de garde ayant été atteint par une balle, a dû être abattu. M. Q. . . . est allé ouvrir la grille et l'officier a demandé à diner pour 4 hommes, et à coucher. N'ayant plus de pain à la maison, on leur a fait cuire des œufs et des pommes de terre. Cependant, comme M. Q. . . . ne voulait pas les recevoir pour la nuit, ils ont tiré des coups de fusil dans les appartements. Comme je faisais cuire le diner, les allemands ont fait monter de force au grenier, Made N. . . ., du hameau du Buisson, qui était venue se réfugier ici; ils l'ont alors déshabillée complètement et lui ont volé son porte-monnaie contenant une trentaine de francs, puis tous ont abusé d'elle. Voyant cela, M. Q. . . . s'est armé d'un revolver, et du bas de l'escalier, a tiré dans leur direction, mais sans les atteindre; ils l'ont alors fusillé immédiatement; une balle lui a traversé la tête, et 2 ou 3 autres l'ont atteint à la poitrine. Prise de peur, je me suis enfuie à la ferme du château, mais l'officier est venu me rejoindre, en disant que si je ne le suivais pas, il allait brûler le château, ainsi que la ferme, et tuer les habitants. Craignant pour ma vie, je l'ai donc suivi et j'ai dû coucher avec lui. Quant à Made N. . . ., l'officier l'a remise aux trois soldats qui l'ont emmenée dans une grange, où elle a dû passer la nuit avec eux. lendemain, 7 septembre, ils sont partis tous vers huit heures.'

(A signé) GUILLEMOT.

From Lieut. M. . . . to Officer Commanding, First Cavalry Field Ambulance, First Cavalry Division.

I HAVE the honour to inform you that the following is the statement made to me this

day by M^{me} V . . ., of Bailleul. M^{me} C . . ., being ill and in danger of her life at her home in Bailleul, M^{me} V . . was nursing Mme C . . .'s two-months-old baby at her house, situated between Bailleul and

Méteren. The position of the house is shown hereon.

On Thursday, 8th October, 23 German soldiers entered her house, when she was alone there, and demanded coffee. Subsequently, on demanding more, and being told there was none, one of the Germans, presumably with the object of forcing M^{mo} V . . . to produce more coffee, picked up the baby and dipped the top of its head into some boiling water which had been prepared and was standing on the table. This was at about 4.30 p.m. Immediately after this a shell burst in the street outside, and the Germans quickly took their departure. Thereupon M^{me} V . . . escaped with the baby, first to the mother's house, and then to St. Jans-Cappel.

M^{me} V . . . farther stated that the German soldiers were Uhlans (that they rode horses and had lances); that the man who committed the outrage had on his shoulder three gold

^{*} These are selected from a large number of similar documents forwarded by Professor Morgan.

bands, but that three other of the soldiers also had these; that the other soldiers standing round at the time made no effort to interfere, but rather laughed and looked on with approval.

I saw the infant to-day and found that its condition was quite compatible with

M^{me} V . . . 's statement, the whole of its scalp being one large scab.

I have, &c. C. E. M., Lieut., R.A.M.C.

LIEUTENANT IN BRITISH ARMY.

On or about September 10th or 12th I was at Doue, a day's march south of Nanteuil and 25 miles S.E. of Soissons. I entered a house to seek for a billet and found an old lady in great distress of mind. When I asked for a room she burst into tears and said that she would do what she could for me, but that the German officers who had just left had treated her home in such a manner that she knew not what to do. I saw for myself how they had behaved. The house was, or rather had been, neat and refined, but the German officers had deliberately polluted and wrecked it. In one room they had pulled the old lady's fine linen sheets out of the presses where they were kept in lavender, piled them in a heap on the floor, and then "made water" all over them. The linen was still lying there when I entered the room and was in a disgusting state. They had also pierced some charming old prints and pictures with their swords and knocked her furniture and china about.

LIEUTENANT-COLONEL IN BRITISH ARMY.

On February 14th I examined one of our wounded who had been brought in No. 84 Field Ambulance. The soldier had been hit the same day at Ypres. A bullet had entered the palmar surface of his left wrist, and was located under the skin of the dorsal surface (i.e. the other side). It was a reversed bullet. It must have been deliberately reversed before firing. It could not have been a ricocheting bullet, because there were no marks of any kind upon it. The fact that it did not go right through the wrist pointed to reduced momentum, and as the firing had been at close range, this can only be explained by the reduced rifling due to the bullet having been reversed before it was placed in the breech.

I regard this as a clear case. I examined the wound and also the bullet, and so did

two other officers. We all three came to the same conclusion.

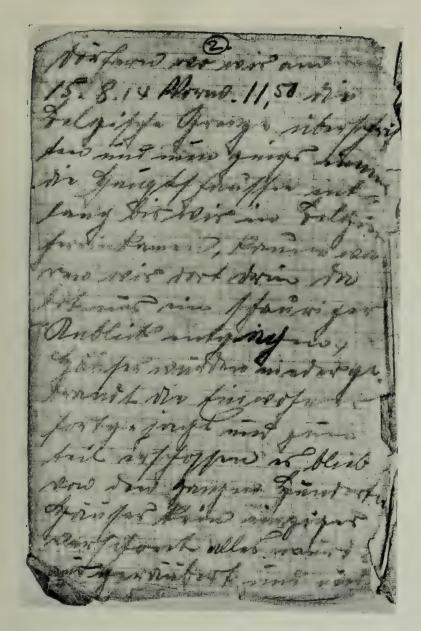
Note.—The three officers in question are doctors.

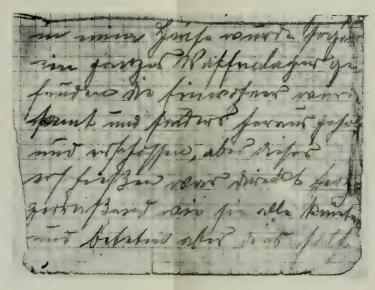
BRITISH OFFICER.

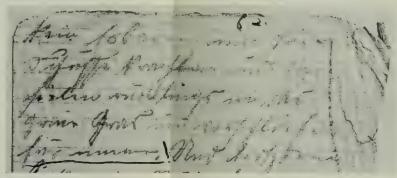
At Nesle, near Fère-en-Tardenois.

I was in this neighbourhood for about ten days examining German requisition forms, my object being to discover from them what the formations of the German troops had been. The requisition receipts given to the peasants for small sums bore genuine signatures, but wherever goods of considerable value had been taken (e.g. 400 francs and upwards) the receipts were fraudulent, the signature being:—

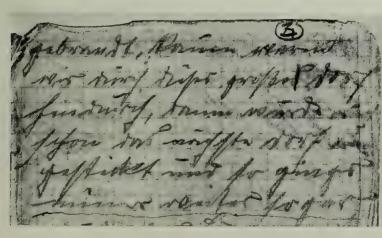
Herr Hauptmann von Koepenick.







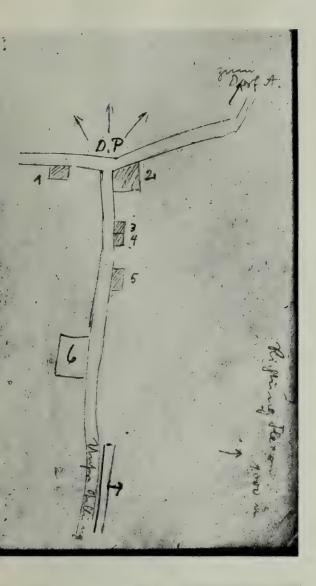
Plates 3 and 4.



Plates 1 and 2.

Plates 1-4.—Eitel Anders.





Ju einer tillne siche verstarkt.

Der Porten war erfatel, ch. Da

erdäcklige Zivilisten under ihr

lwierten wurden die Kainser

1,2,3,4,5 gerämint du Br

altzer verhaftet (and am andi

ren Togo erfoffun). Proplich

aversie da. Daf et beschoos un.

Heraus mitzt amser Bagage

ind eine Canfen batten und von

segene ihrt leie befoffun find.

Von O,P. ams ert foßt ich einen

givilisten mit Grevelis. Ind.

400 m geran derich den Schädel

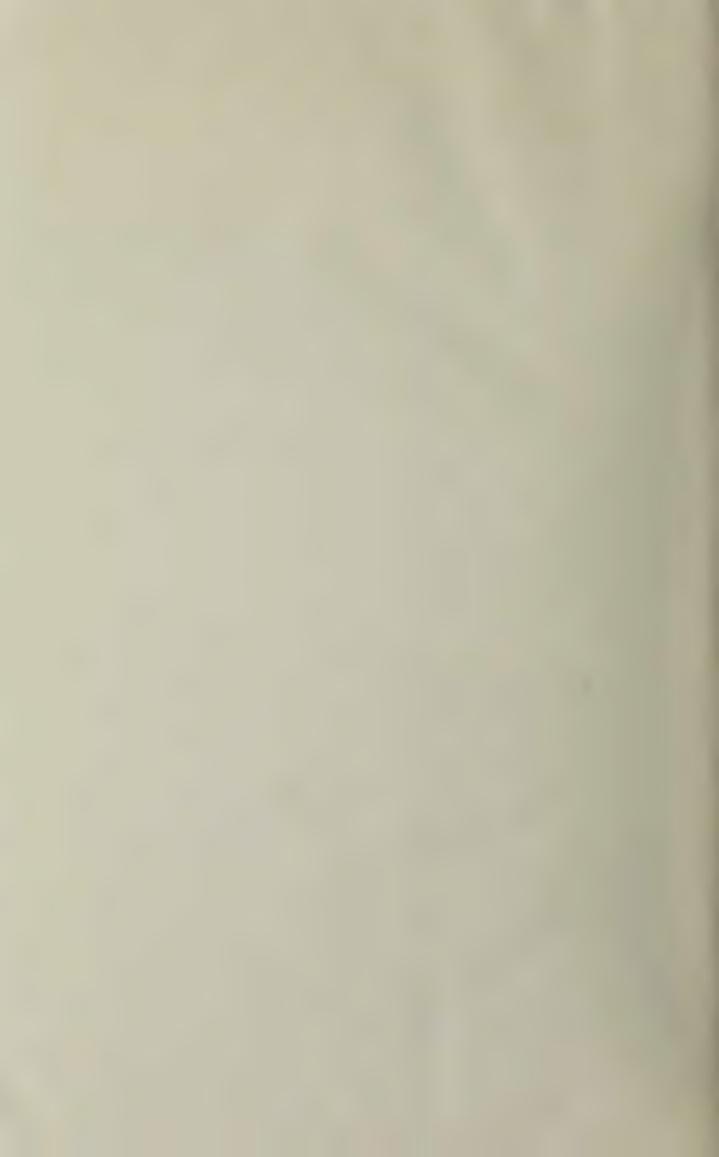
wie wir späterhin feststelltere.

Plates 5 and 6. Kurt Hoffmann.

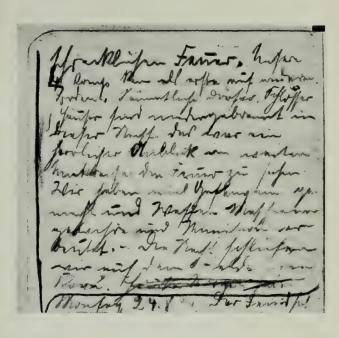
Togethe morn boss ing wings gir den flow 5 6 terfore Talls organia

Jost war Main Marily Jane Sund Sund Se from Jane South South South of the State of

Plates 7 and 8. HOLLMANN.



Longith 1/2 Think I mand . Her layer his 10 42 Town and the state of the song and the state of the song and the fine down the first song and a song and a first song and a song and a first song and a song an



Plates 9 and 10. MATBERN.

Gefol film bot

Sent fraf Hardender

30 miseum an marghen

and 1000 gefangun

and 1000 ge

Plate 11. From Diary No. 19, of Soldier in 1st Battalion of 1st Regiment of the Guards.



FOREIGN OFFICE. Treaty Series, 1915.

No. 1.—Declaration between the United Kingdom, France, and Russia, engaging not to conclude Peace separately during the present European War. Signed at London, 5th September, 1914.
[Cd. 7737.]

Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 2.—Convention between the United Kingdom and France relating to Prizes captured during the present European War. Signed at London, 9th November, 1914.

[Cd. 7739.] Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 4.—Accession of Russia to the Convention of 9th November, 1914, between the United Kingdom and France relating to Prizes captured during the present European War.

[Cd. 7858.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

Miscellaneous, 1914.

No. 5.—Despatch from His Majesty's Minister at Brussels enclosing a copy of the Belgian Law of 26th May, 1914, respecting Belgian Nationality.

Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 6.—Correspondence respecting the European Crisis.

[Cd. 7467.] Price 9d., post free $11\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 7.—Notes exchanged with the Netherlands Minister on the subject of Oil Properties in Mexico.

[Cd. 7468.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 8.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting the Rupture of Diplomatic Relations with the German Government.

[Cd. 7445.] Price 1d., post free 1½d.

No. 9.—Despatches from His Majesty's Ambassador at Berlin respecting an Official

German Organisation for influencing the Press of other Countries.

[Cd. 7595.] Price ½d., post free 1d.

No. 10.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Vienna respecting the Rupture of

Diplomatic Relations with the Austro-Hungarian Government.

[Cd. 7596.]. Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 11.—Documents respecting the Negotiations preceding the War, published by the Russian Government.

[Cd. 7626]. Price 3d., post free 4d.

No. 12.—Diplomatic Correspondence in

-Diplomatic Correspondence respecting the War, published by the Belgian Government.

[Cd. 7627.] Price $4\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 6d.

No. 13.—Correspondence respecting Events leading to the Rupture of Relations with Turkey.

[Cd. 7628.] Price 9d., post free $11\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 14.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Constantinople, summarising events leading up to Rupture of Relations with Turkey, and Reply thereto.

[Cd. 7716.] Price $1\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 2d.

No. 15.—Diplomatic Correspondence respecting the War, published by the French Government.

[Cd. 7717.] Price 1d., post free 4d.

Miscellaneous, 1915.

No. 1.--Despatch to Sir Henry Howard containing Instructions respecting his Mission to the Vatican.

[Cd. 7736.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d. No. 2.—Despatch from His Majesty's Ambassador at Petrograd enclosing a Memorandum on the subject of the Temperance Measures adopted in Russia since the outbreak of the European War.

[Cd. 7738.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 3.—Letter of 31st July, 1914, from the President of the French Republic to the King respecting the European Crisis, and His Majesty's Reply of 1st August, 1914.

[Cd. 7812.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

No. 5.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Treatment of German Prisoners of War and Interned Civilians in the United Kingdom.

[Cd. 7815.] Price 1d., post free $1\frac{1}{2}d$. No. 6.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Government respecting the Rights of Belligerents.

[Cd. 7816.] Price 3d., post free 4d.

No. 7.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Treatment of Prisoners of War and Interned Civilians in the United Kingdom and Germany, respectively. [Cd. 7817.] Price $9\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1s.

No. 8.—Correspondence between His Majesty's Government and the United States Ambassador respecting the Release of Interned Civilians, and the exchange of Diplomatic and Consular Officers, and of certain classes of Naval and Military Officers, Prisoners of War, in the United Kingdom and Germany, respectively.

[Cd. 7857.] Price $7\frac{1}{2}d$., post free $9\frac{1}{2}d$.

No. 9.—Notes exchanged with the Chilean Minister respecting the sinking of the German

Cruiser Dresden in Chilean Territorial Waters.

[Cd. 7859.] Price $\frac{1}{2}d$., post free 1d.

APPENDIX

TO THE

REPORT OF THE COMMITTEE

ON

ALLEGED GERMAN OUTRAGES.

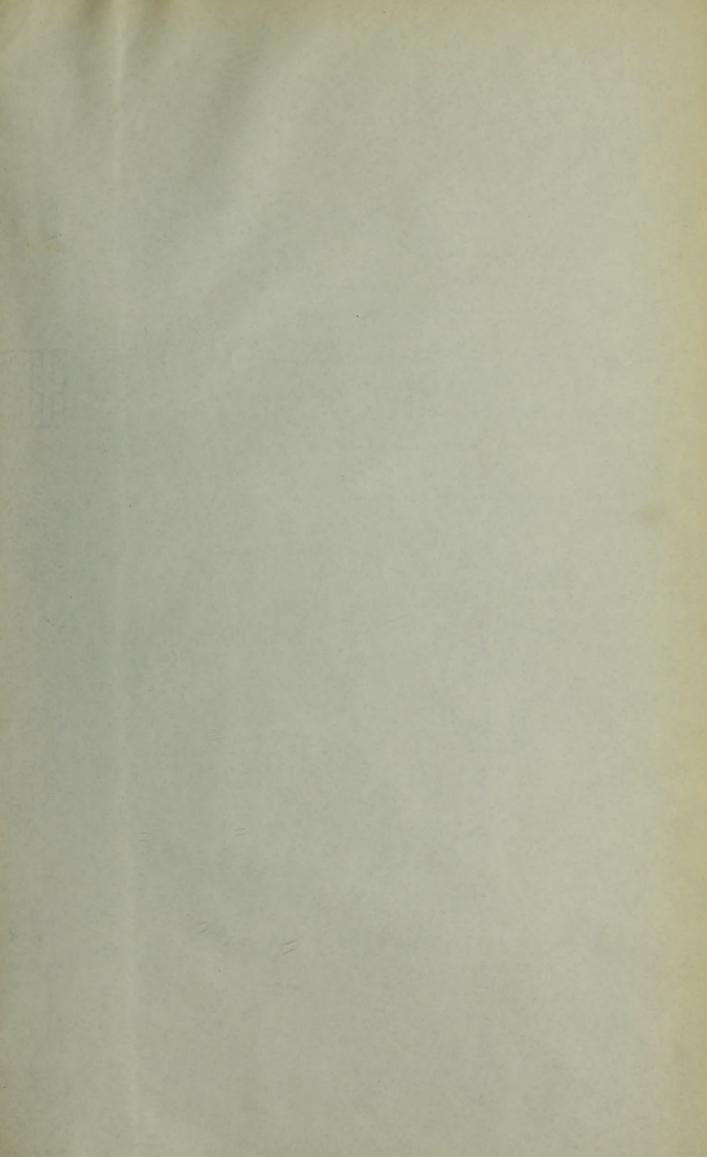
Presented to Parliament by Command of His Majesty.



LONDON:

PRINTED UNDER THE AUTHORITY OF HIS MAJESTY'S STATIONERY OFFICE BY EYRE AND SPOTTISWOODE, Ltd., East Harding Street, E.C., PRINTERS TO THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY.

To be purchased, either directly or through any Bookseller, from WYMAN AND SONS, Ltd., 29, Breams Buildings, Fetter Lane, E.C., and 28, Abingdon Street, S.W., and 54, St. Mary Street, Cardiff; or H.M. STATIONERY OFFICE (Scottish Branch), 23, Forth Street, Edinburgh; or E. PONSONBY, Ltd., 116, Grafton Street, Dublin; or from the Agencies in the British Colonies and Dependencies, the United States of America and other Foreign Countries of T. FISHER UNWIN, London, W.C.





PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

